



# SBAHLE : THE CHOSEN ONE

## Chapter 1

I knew this day would come but never thought it will be this soon and even worse to happen like this I struggle with my feminine side so much that the man who calls himself my father feels the need to change me Control or try and make me what he thinks is the right daughter So what if I'm a girl but I act like a guy What's wrong with that I grew up with boys and frankly i liked the way i turned out to be am I comfortable with who I am? fuck yes and I don't see nothing bloody wrong with me my perception about life is that Women are not required to be dainty wilting flowers and Men are not required to be Herculean pillars of strength Frankly I don't even care what you mean by "you act like a guy". To me that context it's just irrelevant

Throughout my life I have constantly set goals for myself both in the long- and short-term Plans of being successful Independent to enjoy the finer things in life and mostly to run away from home Free from my name my blood and my status .

yep plans are great because they helped me make decisions about what to do or not do in

order to help me achieve my goals but oh well Like any plan though unexpected changes can occur that either help or hinder your life goal achievement ... I looked at the two people that call themselves my parents as they talk and making me understand the worst decisions they just took for my life " my life "

I look down and bit my lower lip suppressive the anger I'm feeling right now i wanted to look up but that will be a huge sign of disrespect in my father's eyes I was perplexed for moment there i had them talking but my thought were to loud to hear a dahm thing

" please don't cry ... Please don't cry " I keep telling my already shaking body the lump on my trough my eyes burning and stinging by the tears that want to escape I did not believe that my parents are considering selling me to a another family in order for them to survive and keep there standards in the community funny enough on how they sold most of there cows in order for my two brother to go to varsity and when I'm about to finish school no cows were sold for me to continue my studies in university but my father has been doing lot of negotiating with other royal

house in order for my father to get his cows back .

Yet now he seat in his throne and he decided to tell me that he is so proud of a young women I turned out to be yah right as if I should believe that the man can not stand my guts from the way I dress the way I talk the way i carry my self he finds that I'm an embarrassment to the royal family tainting his image he said the hell I care its my life at the end of the day

we coexist in the same house because of this blood that runs inside of me that makes me the Golden child i try my level best to avoid him the sad truth is that i hate him too.

i understand that right now he want to get under my skin He want me to feel mad he want me to lash out about this matter . yes I'm very opinionated person my mouth is power not only my brains work over time in processing situation but when I speak I make sure my view point in head loud and clear but in this household a women voice is silenced ... I was still confused about all of what he saying to me but in this household a women voice is silenced ... I was still confused about all of what he saying to me is it happening now or is he telling me that I must

prepare my self for this ?

him: I know your Education means a lot to your mother.... " wait what ? I smiled as I felt a tingle of excited worming my bleeding heart is he about to say what I think he is about to say ? Has he reconsidered sending me to university?

" please lord let him say it please " I crossed my fingers and held my breath

he continued to give me praise that he is glad that I can cook and clean and handle all household chores ... Yayay what ever get to the point I said inside

I did not know what he was going with this but I guess its another way he was showing his appreciation off all the work I have done as girl child in this house i may have been an arrogant brat in his eyes who acts like a boy but i know the power of respect i chose to be civil around him and played buy the rules I hope my plan worked in manipulating and blind sighting him in order to get what I want " ooh God let it be"

My cheeks became wet my throat so dry I felt it crack I couldn't believe my ears when he said

"Ungasiphoxi emzini yezwa your in-law agreed to further your studies "

I looked up with my eyes red no sound in my mouth that I'm crying but tears falling down the pain came back I saw the devil in his eyes

I knew that being summoned to come home was either going to make me or break me I'm only 17th never had a boyfriend was locked up in boarding school that was more like a maximum prison for girls no social network no TV no social life just books and church and when I come back home I'm told that I will be sold to a man !. They don't even wait till I finish writing my matric exams that are in two months time and they dropped this bomb on me !!! .

I sniffed the pain was to much I'm strong yes but this was way to big for my shoulders I never expected what he said next I felt my soul leaving my body for few minutes and my throat was getting dry i could not breath and I felt like screaming so loud that my lungs bust out if I'm not mistaken this were his exact words

" Sibahle we have accepted the Mnguni cows for your hand in marriage ... "

He shifted in his seat as my eyes looked directly in his eyes ...

Me : ma !.... Why ? " It was a direct question

then pleading with her

I looked at my mother she was just looking like a zombie looking in to space I wish she could say something or maybe try and wake me up from this awful dream that I was in but why ? why would they throw me out to the dogs like that ... I'm turning 18 next month and I'm already engaged to be married ...worst part it's an arranged marriage ??? ... The waterfall gushed down I stood up held my mouth took a last look at him wiped my face with the back of my hand

Me : He who is silent and bows his head dies every time he does so. He who speaks aloud and walks with his head held high dies only once. – Is there anything else baba ? "

My stare did not leave his eyes he swallows hard is that sweat drops on his forehead the pig had fear written all over him they called it punishment to send me to the harshest school ever but they in fact in powdered me I Never let anyone tell me who i am what I must do I'm Princess Sibahle Bhengu and

Keeping my head up is a matter of honor and pride to me I know who I am and i will defend myself and walk my own path no matter which

routes others might force me on I know that the world has respect for confident people.

Him : no you may be excused " he said softly  
I turned away with my heart beating abnormally fast I stopped as I heard my mom soft voice

Her : "Sibahle Bhengu .. You are the chosen Queen never forget that "

I breath out loud as I rushed to my room to take off this hideous dress jumped into my jeans and vest put my cap on and walked out I had to think draw up a new plan all know is Good and evil darkness and light and failure and success are the dualities that make life so interesting and spicy. After dark there is nowhere else to go than straight towards the light. After failure there is nowhere to go but up.

I'm Princes Sibahle Bhengu .... Walk with me on my pursuit of Happiness



## Chapter 2

Sibahle ...

It's been few days after the negotiations if I was willing happy bride to be I would have said that everything went well and it was success but hell NO I'm not one thing I picked up about my so cold in-laws is that they are rich .. too rich in fact there cars the way they dressed there cologne and I don't want to talk about their accent it like they grew up overseas or something ... I was getting petrified just by sitting in front of them I'm definitely not fit in in that family the strange part is that we all know that Lobolo negotiations is black people thing but in my negotiation I had a white guy representing my husband " iyoooh thatha Sibahle " that got me laughing and made me forget the awkward moment I was in jotting to that day it made me realise that this shit is real I'm officially somebody wife I looked down and played with my fingers I may be brave and outspoken but deep down I'm terrified little girl I

walked around the yard just thinking about how my life would have been like if I was not royalty I suddenly had a rush back to memory lane  
“ keep your eyes on the clay pot my child let it move in you hand feel the rhythm feel the Ceramics is the art to scalp you must close your eyes and sing. ... art is love art is a song art is feeling of peace“ he said walking pass me after brushing my hair back with his hands I smiled hummed a song the loud band breaking of glasses and things falling down alarmed me made me jump as I rushed to the other room and found my father laying down I wasn't with my father when he died yes we might have been in the same place but he fell and died in another room . I wasn't there to observe what happened to see exactly how he fell or what object his head hit on the way down his last words he said to me ring in my ear I then forgot how to breathe I felt like was being pulled underwater I remember as it was yesterday when my mother cried for help when she struggled to lift a 12-year-old chubby girl up screaming and kicking on top her fathers dead body I felt like Someone has put a mask over my face I taste the sweetness of the oxygen like

tasting dry soil I felt my blood heating up i suddenly have a 107-degree fever my body is getting hot and cold at the same time

“ Bahle breath my baby “ I felt her hands on my shoulder she then turned me around and gave me a tight hug I could not help the tears that washed over my cheeks

" its going to be OK Bby " she said brushing my back I have been gone for 6 years and coming back home and looking at my father art gallery that my mother has turned into a green room made me relive that day when I last saw my father alive .

Me : “ it hurts so much maka’ Sbahle “

Her : “ I know baby I know ... “ she wiped the tears from my face I faked a smile and as she held my hand and we walk around the yard she held my hand tighter then normal ever since they dropped the bomb on me about me being someone’s arranged wife she has been acting very strange she scared she does not want to let go of me she feel like I’m the only thing that reminds her of my father . yes I might have kept her up all night last night with nightmares that still tormenting me when I’m in this place it happened 6 years ago but

I still relive it as if its happening today.

Her : his in a better place my baby and his looking down on us "

I frown and pulled my hand away from her

Me : njani ma ? "

Her :Sbahle please mntanami "

I looked at her this is one thing I have told and taught myself that I will never be like my mother she is too soft and fragile to me that just being weak . I huffed and looked away took a stone I threw it in the air out of frustration she sigh.

Her : I'm glad you home " I rolled my eyes because im not I hate being here and surrounded by memories that I'm trying to suppress

Me : stop patronising me ma "

Her : kodwa... "

Me : I don't want to hear it ma! " I screamed a bit this was my biggest problem my temper

Have you ever encountered someone who wears their anger on their sleeve? Or someone who gets mad too quickly or easily? That me I'm hot headed as I grew up it became worse mostly it's enger that I curry within Anger is a more powerful emotion than sadness through the lens of the hotheads Hence this is why i rather speak loudly

than cry when angered. I have perceive crying as exposing one's vulnerability or weakness

Unfortunately this has caused more harm than good to my mother life.

Me : “ I’m only 17 mom why you allowing this man to sell like I’m an item “

Mom: I'm sorry I did not know it will happen so soon ... but its our way of life my child if you of royal blood you do not marry for love but to build a kingdom a legacy and strengthen the two royal blood “

I looked at her and wondered if this woman really loves me because ever since he married this man she became mute

Her : i know i have not been the greatest parent ever but looking at the young women you turned out to be I’m so proud of you right ? “

She said that looking straight into my eyes I could not help but to see that the light in her eyes was stolen by the sadness in her heart

I could not help but to see that the light in her eyes was stolen by the sadness in her heart  
it all happened 6 years ago when I lost my hero and she lost the love of her life we walk around like zombies that hunger for one thing to be loved

and to be happy they say Happiness is an addiction and if you have experienced it then you are hooked Happiness is an addiction because our monkey mind convinces us that we are not okay if we don't get our fix of it .. My sadness turned me to be This super impulsive and irrational person yes when looking at my life I have figured that Our attempts to be happy are not the problem The problem is that we are not aware of a workable alternative to happiness.

Mom : " you are a women now and I know you can be... in fact you are stronger than I will ever be No one knows what you have been through or what your pretty little eyes have seen but I can reassure you whatever you have conquered it shines through your mind...courage and an ability to stand up for yourself "

She embrace me with a hug it moments like this that make me feel at peace funny how it never last . the sound of the car engine broke the slightest piece of happiness in my life.

"Sibahle ... I'm the only man in this house the last time i checked hambo khumula lowomhlola owuqokile !!" He road making my mother flinch I felt anger raging inside of me I looked at the man

that took away the only thing that makes a house to " a home " a family " to warm fuzzy feeling " he made it to a cold cave with no life

Mom : " hurry up Sbahle ... don't make your father angry "

I looked at my mother with frowned eyebrows scrambling like a hen about to lay an egg what power does this man have over her ?

Me : " he will never be my Father ... The sooner you get that in your head the better !! " she held her mouth

Him : uthin?!!! "

Mom pleaded with me not to challenge him the only thing I struggle to control is my temper and right now I wanted to scream brake something or kill someone ...

Mom : come Sisi let me help you to change " my mom pulled my hand but her husband called her I still do not see why wearing Pants In my fathers house is an issue I cliqued my tongue and walked to the house and made my way to the kitchen our house keeper was cooking she smiled at me but I was not in that mood the happy girl in me was taken the day I saw my father's lifeless body the smile in me was taken when my mother was

forced to marry my father's younger brother You may say that I'm royalty and this was my destiny my mother was Queen and she was never going to rule the kingdom alone she needed the head of the family a leader and by culture it done for the good of the family for the people... for the royal house . All that Gilts you see in this royal house is not Gold trust me I'm princess by blood nothing special about me my uncle is an abusive power hungry malicious monster ... he envied my father he wanted my father inheritance his wife his life and his family. Death made him get it all I then became his golden egg that will make him more powerful and wealthy no wonder I was sold to the highest bidder and it doesn't help that I took my mother beauty I looked at myself in the mirror and ran hands on my thick black long hair " Nkosazana your father is calling you " one of the help said I sign and put on my dress my long dress ugly dress I dragged my feet to the throne room and saw my mother sited on the grass mat next to the chair where he set with his pot bally sticking out I felt his smirk burning in my head as I sat down on the center of the room on the grass mat I hate coming to this room because I know



whatever he's going to say is going to piss me off even more damn I hate this man

“ thank you Princess for gracing us with your presence “ that sounded so sarcastic I cringed to him calling me Princess

“ chin up and smile sunshine soon this attitude of yours will be tamed when I give your hand away to your husband “

He laughed making my blood boil in the process I did not dare answer him I looked at my mother she was just looking down I wanted to jump up to him and beat him up but I knew better because mom pays for my arrogance When I talk back at him when I disrespect him my mother will pay the price he never lays a hand on his brother children but my mother will be kicked punched and slapped for my wrong doing... I suddenly I felt my body sinking my heart was beating on my trough he was busy talking

Him : yazi funny thing is I don't know how or when they found out about your existence but they have paid a fortune for you " so since the negotiations are over your mother here has asked me that we do memulo for you “

I looked at him oh God no I can not parade half

naked in front people I popped my eyes

Me : “ I got exams to write “ I’m not doing this hell no!

Him : well my child I was not asking you I’m telling you umemulo will be conducted after your exams so go pack so that the driver will take you back to school to prep for exams “ I looked at him with so much hatred written all over me

Me : “ I hope you study hard and pass your exams with distinction your in-laws are very educated and speak different English don’t think about embarrass me... uyezwa !!!! “

.

### **Chapter 3**

Sli\*\*\*

I pictured my reunion with Trey to be the best unforgettable day of my life in my head I picture slow motion runs to each other arms kissing and locking each in his bedroom making love and rekindling our love he will tell me he loves me and will pick up from where we left off will raise our kid together and start a family.

Yeh right dream on Slindile Fairy-tale never happens for people like me I was on his study and he was just shouting and pointing fingers at me calling me all sort of names for keeping the existence of his baby from him

Him : you robbed me three years of my daughters life ...three years slindile !!!! what were you thinking???

Me : I'm sorry "

Him : fuck saying that you Sorry !!!"

Me : " I tried so many times to call you "

Him : " and you never talk... were you even going to tell me about my baby if you grandfather did not drag you here ? "

Me : " of cause I was going to tell you ... "

He did the mocking laugh and that alone made the hair at the back of my neck stand who's this man in front of me he is not the boy I fell in love with he is now dominant with deep bold voice that will make any crowd stop talking he has this aura of commanding respect without saying nothing I felt very afraid

it was not helping that I felt like an ant in front of this big beast

Him : why ?" he said almost as whisper he may be

mad at me but when our eyes lock it ignites that spark we once had I breathe out loud and narrated a story about how I found out I was pregnant and how I tried to call him but could not find the right words to say

Him : “ Sli you know for a fact that I have no family ... and you keep the only link that I have to my blood line ? “

Me : “ Trey you had school ... I could not just drop a baby in your lap I had to consider all expect before I showed up with ... “

Him : “ Damit Sli !!... fuck that she is my child I would have done anything for her ... if I remember it correctly I was the one that fucked you so hard and you left with my seed that you were trying keep away from me ... “

Me : “ im so sorry “ I tried telling him about this destiny thing I was forced to do his temper went from zero to hundred I was a crying mess did he care at all no but he roughly shook me and made me look on his eyes

Him : " you know first hand how I feel about you and you turn around and hurt me like this? I wish I could give you my pain just for one moment. Not to hurt you but so that you could

finally understand how much you hurt me ....you found out about me and who I am but still chose to keep this secrete "

Me : Trey please believe me I had no control of this I have seen and done things that are unexplainable to the naked eye for us to meet it was destiny for us to part it was for us to find our own path sad part is that I was carrying your seed and the forces of life or universe made us drift my destiny and purpose was not fulfilled when I gave birth even queen mother saw this and told me as well when I came here for a women's conference "\_ he crunched down holding his mouth he does this a lot this days I guess his legs struggle to hold him up

Him : " ooh my God it was you .. "

I swallowed and walked close to him I told him about the airport incident and he just held his chest

Me : " I never stopped looking for you even hired a private investigator till I almost lost Nola when she told me who you are and where you are I had to listen to divinity ... "

Him :... Koko knew about my baby ?"

I just nodded he attempted to walk out but i held

his arm

Me : " please Trey not like this ... It was not by choose that we kept this from you there were other forces involves you are a man who believe in such things why you finding it hard to believe what I'm saying to you ...please this situation hurt me more then as it hurting you right now that why I decided to tell Zethelo about you showed her your pictures make her understand that one day you will reunite with her ... She's gifted child Trey she is her father's daughter "

He looked at me with his sparkling eyes oh God that look ...I wish I could say that in your eyes I see the light of passion; I can hear the songs of your heart for me. I cannot live without you because you belong to me. And I will never let you down because I love you so much. I will hold you tight because I'll always love you no matter what.

Him : days i could handle but night were the worse I try to not to miss you I try to let go but in the end you're always on my mind Sometimes I just wish you were here so I could tell you how much I need you and how hard every day has been without you but you were to much of coward to stay ... To keep in touch to allow the

fire to continue to burn you walk away from me  
sli..."

Me : I had to ... But I never stop loving you Trey  
please believe me I am giving you my words that I  
will never betray you for any reason. I am so much  
in love with that I can no longer think straight.....i  
know what i did was wrong but it was not my  
intension to hurt you ... " I tried to walk close to  
him but he stopped me

Me : " Please don't ..I don't want to hear it. You  
hurt me more than I deserve how can you be so  
cruel? I love you more than you deserve( he shook  
his head ) why am I such a fool? "

his look changed he became angry his eyes gave  
me shivers I felt my heart beating on the center of  
my chest he than looked at my hand that was still  
holding him

Him : I need to think ... Let go of me "

Me : but Trey " .The brittle bones beneath my  
chest cracked piercing my heart I looked at the  
man before me It was him who breathed new life  
into my lungs and it was him who would later  
destroy the life he had given " the waterfall  
gushed down

Him : hayi Silindile just shut it ... No amount of

sorry will undo what you did ... I just need to  
breath .. "

he clicked his tongue and walked out he was mad  
at me I could hold it any longer so I just let it all  
out

oh lord what have I done Nola found me crying on  
the corner of room with my head buried on my  
knees

Her : come love ..."

Me ; he hates me "

Her : his hurt give him time come sweet heart ..." I  
wiped my face and fixing my dress we walked to  
one of the guest bedrooms I was just walking  
Zombie Nola handed me pills and made me sleep  
after telling me that Trey took Zee and drove off I  
woke up it was the following morning with a  
banging headache I took long shower after  
dressing up I just set on my bed and recalled  
yesterdays event I wanted to leave this place but  
was to afraid ... I could not look Trey in the eye  
there was a nock on the door and i held my  
breath and before I could say come in Veli walk in  
she ran to me and hugged me

Veli : I knew it ... I just didn't know how to ask you  
about you and Ngonyama but I knew that Zee was



Mnguni I felt it when she touched me or when she told me about her dreams "

I just smiled with tears on my eyes

Her : ncoo sli please don't cry

Me : I'm sorry I lied to you "

Her : you had your reasons sli I fully understand ...

How are you ? "

I wiped my teas as she held my hand

Me : I feel so lost ... Hurt and I don't know how to speak to Trey he is so mad and the things he said to me ... Oh veli he hates me "

She shook her head

Her : all the years I've know Ngonyama he has shown me nothing but kindness he is a good man he may be hurt but he will come around... "

I just nodded Nola walk with Zee my smile keeper she ran to me and I hugged her so tight

" morning onion " I laughed with tears in my eyes I felt her tiny hands wiping my teas

Her : why you crying mom are you happy to see daddy too? " I just nodded

She just hugged me and told me about her evening with her father that alone wormed my heart I had no doubt that Trey will be a good father it only been one day with his daughter but

already Zee is bragging they must have had fun because after telling about her night she ran off leaving me with a wide smile on my face

Nola : I have never seen her this happy oh my " I felt a slight guilt that I was the reason why Zee is only founding out about his dad now I just looked down

Nola : how you holding up "

Like a person who's watching there heart slowly butchered I didn't have it in me to respond

Nola :well look on the bright side the worst is over " i looked at her and frowned

I looked at

Nola smiled with her phone and punched the air in excitement

Me: what ?"

Nola : your dress for the throne gala tonight is ready ... Will go pick it up later "

Me : I don't think I can show face "

Nola : tough luck because the queen mother wants you to join her for breakfast " she looked at her wrist watch " and if we do not leave this room will be late "

I pooped my eyes No

Veli smiled " I'll come with you. Trust me she's the

most worm hearted person I know " she hooked her arm over mine

Her : why am I even telling you this because you know her " she laughed as Nola hooked her arm on my other free arm

Nola ; yap that's true so come on "

I faked a smiled stood up as we walk out I meet up with Austin and Mzamo by the lobby we greeted them

Austin : oh morning lady's morning sly " I just shook my head and nudge Nola

Mzamo just nodded Trey walked in sweating he was wearing basketball shorts ..mmm shorts never looked good on any man like they do on him he had no top on my eyes ran down from his toned ebbs to the v- line on his short I'm staring oh God he can see that I'm drivelling over him it was not helping because Nola was mumbling ' mmm his sooooo hot "

Him : morning " I looked up our eyes locked and he had this morning glow his JBL headphones dangling on his neck

Me : hi "

" daddy " Zee screamed braking the awkward moment he picked her up and she giggle it was

beautiful site to watch he walked pass me talking with Zee in his arm oh how I wish he would just hold me

.  
.

## Chapter 4

Sbahle

A month later \*\*\*

We were all shipped to boarding school because to my Uncle we were considered busted child my father had four kids two boys and two girls Thandiwe 30 Nsika 25 ...Mlondi 21 and me my birthday is coming up and they decided to do memulo for me I'll be seeing my brother for the 1st time in 6 years I'm not sure about my older sister the family he married to are too cultural and ever since she married there she has not visited home for years only saw her on my father funeral she looked beautiful and even though her husband is old she looked happy I should be happy and looking forward to seeing my sibling

but to me its bitter sweet moment as much as leaving conditions at home got worse by the day my big brothers left for school and never returned back home They disowned them self from family and leaving me and mom behind I had to grow up very fast and i tried to protect our mother but there so much a child could do till the busted decided to send me to this prison I'm in I still play the day in my head when my mother cried tried to commit suicide when her in-laws ( my father side ) told her that its culture for a brother to marry his late brother's wife I have never experienced abused from my uncle all I know is that I see how oppressed my mother's life is... She is abused physically verbal And emotional ".don't worry about me my child I do what I have to do for you to survive ...this too shall pass "

She will say with a bruised face and faith smile. as much as my Uncle never laid a hand on me I know that he hates me ... and I could not shake the feeling that he had a hand in my father dearth What I knew was what the death certificate said: cause of death: Subdural Hematoma due to (or as a consequence of) traumatic closed head injury The death certificate also said that it took my

father only a few minutes to die while that same day he drank imported expensive whisky that his brother sent to him ...

" Sbahle come on stop doing this to yourself " that my roommate if I could talk under water I will say leave me alone she was telling me to open the door and banging the bathroom door I sigh and continued to hold my breath drowning myself on my bathtub has been my only stress releasing mechanism shit I miss my father my brothers I miss home or what it used to be ever since I returned back to school i have been feeling sick not health wise but emotionally I was dying I have anxiety fevers at night shivering thoughts through the day sleeping with night mares my study session web of emotion battles I will find myself sinking and it does not help that I'm a person who keeps to myself suddenly the world became too noisy There is no question that this is the way I will feel forever am I also subjected to leave and walk In my mother's shoes as well ? will history repeat itself through the lens of my arranged marriage ? my temperature started to changing my body heated up again there is no cure after the fever moments I'm done convincing myself

that I'm going to be ok because the fever is my world

" this too shall pass " my mother words ringed in my ear ...I wish there was a nicer way to say this but I don't always want to be alive right now I don't actively want to kill myself I don't have a plan I don't have check lists of warning signs of suicide I have a life to enjoy and I'm curious about the future but the fact remains I don't always feel strongly about being alive and sometimes on particularly bad days I truly want to die. For me the feeling of being under water of not breathing ...it like being carried over a waterfall — it is like living in the ocean. Not as sea creatures do but i wish to be one as water Some days are unremarkable floating under clear skies and smooth waters other days are tumultuous storms and I feel like I don't know how to survive but i'm always one with the water my body and mind becomes one with water its beautiful feeling to stay afloat i eventually get the feeling that one day inevitably there will be nowhere for me to go but down. but I don't want it to be soon For now I can and i want to keep my head above water. But i ask myself will I have control on other day is my

will to breath enough? I rose up from the water and breath out loud nostrils burning banging head chest hurting I gasped for air till my breathing became normal

I stepped out wrapped a towel around my wet body I unlock the bathroom door I found my roommate seating on the floor resting her head on the bathroom door she stood up

Her : Sbahle ?". I looked

" what's up with that look ?" She just hugged me I pushed her off

" Zim yini manje "

She sigh and rolled her eyes I'm a non - hugger I hate physical contact and trust me this has made me very awkward to society

I have realise that when a person hate being hugged the world can be a challenging place. You never know when someone you're meeting for a quick coffee study Buddy will approach you arms open wide coming in for an embrace i froze most of the time with my options that just become limited my mind will start flagging every expect of this and my body cringe i can awkwardly dodge the gesture by stick out my hand for a handshake or submit to faking a sneeze or caught



Her : I'm worried about you"

Me : I'm good Zim'khithi "

Her : you not... you doing it again !"

Me : can you just stop ..."

Her : no Sbahle ... Near-drowning is not healthy and it will increase chances of brain damage "

Me : it helps me think "

Her : you over doing babe you holding your breath far too long you're unable to breathe underwater for a significant period of time look how dilated your eyes are ? "

Ooh good not this again I appreciate the consent but it my life after all

Me : " I know what i'm doing ... stop bugging me I pushed her aside

Her : you know that During near-drowning your body is cut off from oxygen to the point where major body systems can begin to shut down from the lack of oxygen flow. "

Me : I know....Dr "

She breath out loud in frustration

" sbahle please talk to me or to someone you carry to much weight ever since you came back I don't recognise the person you are now "

Me :why you not in the dining hall ? "\_

Her : " ooh yini wethu why solokhu dodge the topic... You my best friend China and I will not seat and watch you take your life !!"

Me : " I'm ok babe yeva "

this friend of my here is loud we have been roommates for 5 Years now since grade 8\_she is Xhosa and I'm Zulu she is locked up in this prison like me her sentence is different from mine though she in here for being too forward let's just say she is a she dog never meet a 17 year old who has lost count in the man she has slept with... She fucks for fun and not for love on the other hand i don't even know how to kiss a guy but we get along pretty fine one thing I love about her is that she is a smart bitch ambitious and focus .

Me : are you getting me food or what ? "

Her : its not like you will eat it "

Me: just go Zim ... "

I just looked at her and she dragged her big ass out leaving me to finish lotioning my body I put on my PJ and took my books as was about to study Zim walked in

with our food I took meat and rostered potato from my plate and left the rest for her she loves food no doubt she will finish two plates

Her : so finally we writing our final paper tomorrow “

Me : yah " I said with a low voice

Zim" ooh come on love....at least now you going to varsity"

Me : and I wanted to skip the country or province you forgetting that I'll be somebody's wife which means I'm going to be stuck in his house God knows doing what...who knows maybe he will be demanding sex and baby's from me honestly I feel like dying "

Her : have you considered going for plan B... Kill him on your wedding night take his money and skip the country "

Me : " I'll go with plan A and just kill my stepfather in his sleep " we looked at each other and we bust out and laughed

.

.

weeks later ... to be continued

## Chapter 5

Trey \*\*\* (Narrated )

It's been a whole month and Trey still could not get over the fact that he has a child and she is a spitting image of him the woman he loves is the one that made him a father he spend weeks with Zee bonding and doing all things that a parent wish to do with a child he realised that Fathers are not born Men grow into fathers and fathering is a very important stage in their development. Trey took this serious he prayed for his daughter and went an extra mile to protect her he asked the lord to forgive him for all the wrongs he has done over the years treating women badly a girl child can change any man perspective on how he view women worth he will never wish his own daughter to go through what he did to the women in his life asking God to forgive him was his only hope that karma must not come knocking on his door .

Trey took pride in playing the dad part in Zee life as much as he hated that he never felt her kick while she was still in her mothers womb never heard her when she cried for the first time never saw her when she Took her first step or heard her first word she said it sadden him that he lost

Three years of her daughter's life worse part he is still alive and would have taken responsibility of his child.

That why he just wanted his days to revolve around Zee he loved the name that Sli gave his daughter she is definitely the fruit of his life Zithelo Zemvelo he is still puzzled that he has learned so much about taking care of child in a short period time bath time nap times play time talk / dance and laugh time oh not forgetting to watch cartoons with her he has learned about Zee elegies what she likes to wear he still struggled to her hair its big thick afro but very soft he likes to play with it and the rich red colour makes her even more beautiful he smiled thinking that The nature of impending fatherhood is that you are doing something that you're unqualified to do and then you become qualified while doing it.

Parting ways was the hardest part he had to do he had school and final exams to write to get his degree and run his company he now had purpose in life ..

he was back in the UK finishing up his exams his mind could not get destructed by anything now he knew that he has someone who looks up to

him now and he was a proud father he took out his phone and dialed Nola number

Her : hello "

Him : hi Nola ...may i please speak to Zithelo "

Nola rolled her eyes she was still mad at Trey for not forgiving Sli she spend weeks crying over him but the guy rather spend days with his daughter taking Zee to Disneyland was wow! but somehow a nail in the heart for sli since she was not asked to tag along and when his family introduced Zee to the encestores and changed her surname sli died a million dearth the only person they acknowledged in that royal house was Trey seed and sli felt like a surrogate mother depression hit her even more when Trey said that next year his taking Zee to leave with him .. Nola started hating the Mnguni's even more its true what they say that people with power believes that things must be done there way or the highway.

On the other hand Pam hates Sli and did not even hide it in her eyes Sli was older and was not suppose to get in sack with Trey in first place yet alone curry a baby by him Nola blames herself now for fighting and pestering Sli to tell Trey about Zee everything just went sideways after the

truth was revealed Nola now understood why Sli kept telling her that her relationship with Trey was complicated age difference her being a widow and now she a mother of his child ... Yes she loves him but if the Media get hold of sli past Trey's image and hers will be tainted.

Nola : wow ! ...you not even going to ask me on how I'm doing ?? "

Trey sigh this was hard he was never ready to coparent he is not even experience on how to juggle his life and being a single parent the family loves his daughter but Sli on the other hand they may pretend to like her but there red flags with him dating or pursuing a relationship with her he decided to place his feeling on hold for her as hard as it is he just don't want to complicate things. Besides he is soon to marry someone next month he can't hurt sli like that she was once a victims of cheating husband it's just too complicated for him now.

" let the dust set and make the right decision " Austin advised him and he doing just that now trey : I'm sorry about that ... How are ..." she did not allow him to finish

"  
—

Nola : "Zee your dad is on the line !!!!!" she screamed in Trey ear he just ran his hands on his face

" daddy ... " zee giggled on the receiver that alone melted his heart

" hay pumpkin ... How was your day " she giggle and told him about her day Play mate what she ate the cute cloths she has on she started going on about some cartoons characters got trey smiling from ear to ear

" when are you coming back daddy "

" soon pumpkin soon

" when are you coming back daddy "

" soon pumpkin soon "

" I love you daddy ... "

" I love you too "

Silence on both ends Trey looked at his phone and it was still counting

Trey : I love you so much " that got zee giggling again " bye daddy aunt says I must go bath promise to read me bedtime story "

" its a date princes OK bath will talk later " they kissed on the phone

There was shuffling going on and Nola answered Trey ; thank you please text me before she sleep "



Nola : I know Trey I will ... "

Him : thank you ... "

Her : Sli will be live on her page today '

Him: ooh "

Her : you should tune in "

Trey has never seen sli work she has had people say she is changing lives but never had chance to actually see it after saying goodbye to Nola he pulled out his laptop and type in a link he was shock by the numbers of followers she has comments were mind blowing a notification popped in sli was live he clicked on it and looked at how Polish and good looking she was high waist formal white slacks black bodysuit matching white coat black stilettos always made her tall and she looked gorgeous Trey found himself running his hands on the screen and she watched Sli talking and walking around the stage with mic he decide to increase the volume when she took off her coat and the crowd was standing up and clapping

.

.

Sli sermon\*\*\*\*

" we have that negative thought that destroy our courage ... dreams and ambitions we so scared to

open that curtain of believing in yourself and saying I can do it and I will ... i'm not intimidated by the fear of the unknown ... and we end up crawling to that dark corner of doubt we even go down on our knees and pray and say ooh God please give me strength .. please give courage to apply for that management position ... give me heart to lead ... give me an ability to work hard and get that fat pay cheque ... make me good enough for him to see my worth and marry me .....make me more pretty or handsome ... I will die poor what's the use in fighting ...

haybo Listen here one thing I have realized is that it all start with you ... You cannot believe in God until you believe in yourself” Let me explain why i say this after lots of contemplating this rings true for me. ( she laughed and shook her head )

When I first read this quote I brushed it off.

Certainly that couldn't be true and I didn't want to spend any more time thinking about it. However as the day went on that statement followed me. It showed up everywhere so I thought maybe I need to take a closer look at it

Let's unpack this starting right from the beginning. In Genesis it tells us that we were created in the

image of God. God breathed life into us. His breath flows inside of us. Therefore God is the source of life from within. He is inside of you around you — everywhere.

If this is the case when you reject yourself hate on yourself or do even worse you are doing the same to God because He is the source from within and your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit (1 Corinthians 6:19). Everything you are holding against yourself on a core level whether it is through words or actions you are also holding against God.

By questioning who we truly are we are questioning who God is.... Maybe you believe you were created by chance and if that were true that would also mean you don't have a unique purpose. That would leave you struggling in life not just physically but also emotionally and spiritually — which again would lead you to not truly believing in yourself. What is there to believe in if we run around like zombies without a purpose? We start to feel hopeless and a thought sneaks in that indicates that surely there can't be a God if that is how I feel because it doesn't feel good.

When we don't trust ourselves we also don't trust God. Our human self is restored through Christ yet we tend to not want to accept it on a deep spiritual level. From experience we tend to be suspicious about everything that may be good. Listen here If it sounds too good it probably is. Many of us myself included merely acknowledge the existence of God. But do we fully and wholeheartedly experience faith? There is a difference between knowledge and faith. ...Faith means to let go of what we think we can and should control but we are afraid to let go because we would lose ourselves and We can't risk that What we become familiar with we become comfortable with and even when it is not in our best interest it feels safe so we hold onto it. Trying to be in control of our lives means we don't trust Divine guidance I know I have been there I have questioned my existence my purpose...

As human beings we will never be perfect but with this understanding it makes it easier to accept and live our calling and purpose for a greater good. When you believe in yourself in an honoring way you are honoring what God has created and therefore God himself. The less you

believe in yourself the more separated you are spiritually from God.

With everything said my understanding is that the statement of "You can not believe in God until you believe in yourself" goes hand in hand with "You can not believe in yourself until you believe in God." One builds on top of the other. "

end of sermon people were screaming some were crying some shouting " amen " " we love you Sli" "We receive " God bless you" everyone one was on there feet the crowd Cheering as sli bowd and placed her hand together as if she is praying and said thank you she blew few kisses as she was ushered to the back stage

In the UK

Trey mouth was on the floor shock ... disbelief on what he just saw... he knew and felt that sli was ordained for greater things in life he felt that Sli was not .just an ordinary women she was highly favoured that why she was given a second chance after her near death experience

Trey : fuck !" it came out as a whisper he then started going through all the videos sli had posted in her YouTube page

.

## Chapter 6

Sbahle \*\*\*

I finished my exams and today was my last day in this prison so here I am getting out of prison after years inside. I collected my things take off my school uniform one last time and then a door opens and I'm expected to step out. There must be joy in this moment although joy tinged by fear and weighted in expectations my brain I processing the fact that What happens next? am i really free? Today I'm being released from jail I was not keen in going back hone I know my mom always makes my visit a spectacular by cooking my favorite meal and spending time with me I sigh as I looked at my driver standing outside the car " remember babe this is your freedom use it wisely think with your head do not allow emotions to crowd you " that Zim for you parting ways with my only best friend hurt more than ever I promised to stay I touch as soon as my parents by me a phone ... I'm officially alone i drag my suitcase and the passenger door opened of my car my mom stepped out and I held my mouth

Her : you thought I was going to miss you last day at school ?"

Me: maka Sbahle ?"

She smiled at me with tears in her eyes

Her : " may I hug you " I nodded as she engulfed me with a hug

Her : ooh sana lwami " this was the best day of my life to hang with my mother away from home the drive home was going to be long because she first wanted us to go shopping do our hair and catch up she also bought me a phone yet! I'm 18 years and its my first time owning a phone . spending time with Mon

this I can get used to for the first time in million years I could laugh with no worry in the world I was tired on our drive back home I placed my head on my moms lap as she brushed my hair back

" Me : mama how did you and farther meet ?

She looked at me in shock she was not expecting that question from me at all

her: why are you asking me story's from the past ?  
Mtunami"

I told her that i was curious to know if it was love that brought them together or if her marriage was arranged also .

One thing you should know about my mother is that she one of those beautify hour glass full figured women who normally keep to her self she is not too much of talker and has few if no friends at all I guess she enjoys her duties of being a house wife or in this case force to smile and wave it was shocking to see her outside the royal realms she hardly leaves the house it like she made her self a prisoner there or was made one by my uncle but I always wondered why. So today I was hopping that she might share some lite about her life . I looked at her with out blinking Her : ooh God ngizoqalaphi"

Mom always find joy in talking about my dad I know my mom loved my father better yet she still does it was love at first sight luckily for here I still don't understand the concept of Falling in love at first sight its one of those things you either believe in or don't. The concept of it is so fairytale like it's almost hard to believe it can actually happen in reality. But according to mom and the way she smiling right now ... Its looks like the mind plays tricks on you when you meet that special person subconscious plays a role and takes over ...its not a normal feeling at all she went on



to tell me that Love at first sight has nothing to do with good looks. If love were dependent on good looks then we would all fall in love every time we walked down the street and saw good looking Pearson By the time we'd get home we'd have fallen in love multiple times. The real secret behind why we fall in love at first sight is because something in the way this particular person happens to look has triggered a comparison in our subconscious mind to someone from our past who meant a lot to us. This is why when I fell in love with your father I could not believe it he was arranged to marry my sister and he saw me and well the rest is history she said and her eyes sparkled.

Me : how did you know he was the one "

Her : baby when it happen you just know that feeling in your gut that makes you feel like you could take flight from the high or vomit from the anxiety-induced nausea. You can't help but feel giddy every time they come a bit too close and you almost touch. Butterflies are a trademark sign that you are seriously feeling some things "

Me : Wow love is creepy "

She laughed

Her : its so beautiful I pray you experience it my baby and I wish you can tell me more about it I long to see tears of joy in your eyes then of pain " it's good to see her smile like this this question was more of putting a smile on her face but also feed me with curiosity of what love is she talked about growing up and a how she meet my father while I drifter from listen to her and actually thought why does my future have to turn out life this why can I marry the love of my life too ...We later arrived at home with my mom gently waking me up the yard was packed with few cars.

Me : what's going on ?"

Mom : ooh my God he went ahead and did it '

Me : did what maka Sbahle ? "

Her : plan your welcome hone party "

Me : WHAT!! He had something planned for me ???.

Her : ooh my God we are so late ... " she jumped out of the car and offers me her hand to hold

Her : come baby " she wanted to cry because she did not know about this and she is not sure how angry her husband is and right on queue he walked out with his whisky glass on his hand

Him : princess welcome home! " mom was

apologizing for coming late he just looks at her  
Him ; not now nkosikazi ... Ngenisa umtana  
ngaphakathi "

I dragged my feet and indeed it was kind of like a  
little party mostly relatives from my father's side  
no...no...no they want to hug me  
no...no...no they want to hug me "Nah that's not  
happening." I didn't feel comfortable I know I was  
surrounded by a lot of people in prison but being  
surrounded by people outside especially this  
people it made me sick it became a whole  
different atmosphere. Its my first day officially  
Outside of school and I found it hard to talk to  
people to this people in fact ... my anxiety went  
on full mode .. I faked throwing up and ran to the  
bathroom and locked my self there

.

.( few days later )

It few day before my birthday or should I say  
Memulo and I'm cooped up in one of the rondovel  
In my homestead I got two other girls with me  
Nwabisa and Dudu they also my cousin Dudu is a  
total snob my age Nwabisa is older them me she a  
qhikiza shy strict and reserved while Dudu Who  
introduced her self as didy is outspoken and

speaks English all the time i have been joined on the hip with them for Four days now and two days from now I will parade half naked for the whole village to see me I'm only tolerating this nonsense because its my mothers idea and she finds pride in African Zulu culture she still shocked let just say proud that I'm still pure .

An old lady has been appointed to guide us through out the ceremony I have come to understand that she is virgin tester or leads izintombi Zomhlanga in the valley she has agreed to mentor us about this event and the importance of this ceremony I leaned a lot about culture respect and being a women in particular basically Umemulo also known as the “coming of age is an important Zulu ritual that celebrates a young girl’s journey into womanhood The ceremony indicates that the young girl has transitioned from a child and into an adult woman who can now get married Traditionally umemulo was performed around the age of puberty and awarded to young girls who had respected their bodies but with evolving times and western influence on African culture the ceremony is now done when girls reach the age of 21 Well in my case this is done early

because the Mnguni have already asked for my hand in marriage mom thought it will be best that she do it now instead ...the ceremony is a way of showing appreciation to the young woman for respecting herself and her family and community along with following their teachings.

My stepfathers believe that this will help me shape me to be a better women and stop acting like a boy yah right... So today they slaughtering a goat i have it skin on my wrist ( isiphandla ) this ceremony is done to thank the God

Nomkhubulwane for guiding me to purity a cow will be slaughter tomorrow .

I Didn't know how this was so important but seeing my mother laugh and so proud of Me it melted my heart the only thing that got me down was when a group of old women came to the rondovel and started preparing me for marriage I was taught on how to be good bride and wife. I would much rather die than have such talk with this women I just looked down and listen that what was expected of me vele

The next morning its 4:00am Friday morning we at the river bathing the red clay from our body ( ibovu)

Didy : we have to do something with that ink on your back "

Me : its a tattoo so if you can wash it off feel free to do so"

Nwabisa : you father will Frick out does he even know about it "

I shook my head

Didy : this is going to be so fun I cant wait to see the look on there eyes "

We bust out and laugh one thing we have in common with this girls is the hate we have for our parents so you most probably wondering how I have a tattoo let's just say during my Rebellious stage I decided on painting my body on my back I have my father name written in chines going down on my spine its big and you can't hide it since it start from my neck down to the waist it was all Zim idea when I visited her for school holidays in Jo'burg few years back

Me : I'm somebody wife Nwabisa my father has no say over me now "

" are you ready for that " didy asked

Me : I don't think I will ever be ready ... "

Nwabisa : one think I have leaned in all of this is that you not in this thing alone the guys life is also

going to change he also is forced to marry you ...  
Remember girl its an arranged marriage both  
parties will hate each other For years use those  
years to make a name for yourself gone are those  
days when we have to leave like our mothers in  
such marriages "\_

I was dressing up i suddenly stop

Me : what do you mean? "

Her : you want to study right ... Be independent  
angithi ?"

I nodded

Her : I'll give you my a tip my sister got from your  
sister take charge stand your ground ..."

Me : I don't understand "

Her : I'm engaged has been like that for Years now  
My marriage was -sort of against my wishes. I just  
wanted to finish college first you know In our  
community girls get married between 18-21 and  
guys between 24-30. "

Me : hold up I'm marrying a younger guy not a old  
wrinkled man "

Didy laughed " that against our royal arranged  
marriage laws ooh hell no girl you marrying a  
prince most probably who will also be too pre -  
occupied to pay any attention to you so kahle

kahle wena you marriage his family "

Ooh god could this be ?

Gogo: ayboo enough with chit chat asambe  
before the sun rise up "

We set on foot with blanket covering over our  
heads and Nwabisa telling me about her arranged  
marriage

Nwabisa : so I was already 19 and my parents  
were freaking out. I agreed to engagement but  
not the wedding until I finished fifth year of dental  
college. I come home for Christmas vacation and  
my parents didn't let me go back. Like they  
physically restrained me. I threatened to tell my  
husband to be and his family that I was being  
forced to marry and drop out of school and for  
that I was beaten up badly my parents forcing me  
now to never go back to college. I texted with SO  
for a few months with no luck. The first time I saw  
him was at the engagement. Technically it was  
Zibizo ceremony which meant we were married  
legally in culture now but for us I treated it as  
engagement .. When I had lost all faith his mother  
came and took me the day after I'm more of there  
younger daughter than a wife to there son I still  
continued with school till today ..."



Me : ooh my God you so lucky "

She shook her head No

Her : I'm not he is coming back next year and my living environment may change but I'm glad I got a job line up for me now and I achieved my dream ..."

I looked at her and held her hand this was so touching yet I thought i was alone in this mess but some of my relatives are suffering just like I am.

Her : your sister said I must tell you my story and can only hope that you will use this situation to your advantage we Bhengu women we strong and I believe in you Sbahle you will not parish you will rise up

.

## Chapter 7

sli \*\*\*

i was Sitting on the couch close to the window in my bedroom waiting for him to arrive

I pulled my legs to my chest as his car parks he stepped out looking like something that just

walked out of the fashion magazine no doubt Trey is the most handsome man I have ever met he was wearing blue jeans white shirt rolled up on his arms white sneakers his hair was kept in place by a black bandana he had shades on .. I swallowed hard just looking at him he made me realise what I just lost . was it all worth it ... I keep playing could have been in my head Imagining the painful breakup it messy and noisy there is 3rd part involve that join us together . communication is lost and all we do is fight and argue I lost him when I left he has changed grown up exact i wiped the tear that escaped my eyes i just place my head on my knees I just wish that the The Earth could stopped spinning I wish to wake up in his arms just for once but the The Sun will never again rise in the east... The nights have become grueling longer then they ever seemed to be the pain in my chest it's so painful its like i've been cut open wounded and left vulnerable to the winds of change and uncertainty ... I lost the only man I long for I have lost a friend...love that was so beautiful i miss him so much he was the one person who filled up my lonely cup and makes this world a little more habitable.

I felt the hair on the back of my neck stand I felt his presence his in my bedroom his Cologne so powerful almost blocking my air supply my face was a mess I was not going to lift my head up anytime soon I can not allow him to see me like this no.

Him : I knew you were amazing from the moment I set my eyes on you I was just a boy going through lot of changes but you never gave up on me I tried to fight what i felt for you but the heart wants what it wants it was futile as love proved to be stronger. Thank you for not giving up on me then .... I'm still mad at you for choosing to go the journey alone ... I wish I was there when you discovered that you are pregnant the joy expectations preparations I would have enjoyed that but being the woman you are you yet put me first and did it all on your own I know being a single parent for the past years was not easy it has been a struggle but looking at Zee you managed to be the best mother ever for that i thank you! Thank you for sacrificing your beauty I know how you girls feel about your ' vanity" I smiled

Him : those beautiful clothes you struggled to put on that they wouldn't fit your changing body

shape those many sleepless night's ... Thank you for enduring through the pains and mood swings giving up your favorite meals to satisfy our baby's cravings ... Thank you for standing tall against the pain and many procedures you went through while giving birth .... i remember like it was yesterday when she hugged me with her tinny arms I was spellbound many things changed that moment ...

I felt like I never did before though hard to explain it was an amazing feeling! We can call it parenthood feeling until science catches up I've watched you turn into a mother quickly your motherly instinct gave me utmost confidence that our child was raised in correct manner and I could ask for any better women to make me a father I owe you my life ....I owe you so much that I will never repay it all...and today I come to you asking you to forgive me ...you hurt me Silindile by leaving and by keeping the baby news to your self i understand your reason now and I was just to angry to listen back then and for that I'm sorry

I come to you asking you to forgive me ...you hurt me Silindile by leaving and by keeping the baby news to your self i understand your reason now and I was just to angry to listen back then and for that I'm sorry most of the things I said to you were out of anger and i didn't mean it I hope you can find it on your heart to forgive me "

He was quite and I on the other hand was a crying mess its been three months since Trey came to know about Zee and through out that time we have had endless fight it was toxic and chaotic I have longed to hear him say this words to me ooh God I could not stop crying right now I felt his hands on my shoulder I raised my head up and our eyed locked

Him: I'm sorry "

He pulled me to hug and I just melted in his arms his heart beating fast then normal his heavy breathing ... I held on to him for my dear life as he brushed my back and said everything will be OK

Him: wish I could undo the pain you're feeling in your heart right now. I wish I had the power to just wash it away make it disappear.... Please forgive me mother of my child "

Me : I long forgiven you but it's to hear you say

this words to me that just make me cry its tears of joy mix with lot of emotions I'm also sorry .. " he cut me off

Him : hay I understand Silindile you have said sorry to me to last me my whole life "

I pulled out of his embraced and laughed he had that dashing smile of his face

Him : I missed that "

I looked at him and held my face and blushed he is the only man that brings out the shy girl in me

Him: for all the things you have been trough I'm sorry I made you cry ... "\_

He ran his hands on my face wiped my tears I know this look his giving me right now it the same look that made me fall in love with him

Him : you gave me a beautiful girl she is beautiful like you ... You have made me a proud father ...

Thank you " I smiled and looked down he lifted my chin our eyes locked and spark started to fly Ooh God his to close to me my vow was to always love him has just been renewed I feel closer to him our heart started to beat as one Not only did we resolving our issue with Trey but the chemistry between us has been lit i feel closer to him and more relaxed its like i have gotten something off

my shoulders OK the Zithelo issue is resolve thank God we can walk past that but its now leaves me wondering about us I need to know because I have been holding on to negative feelings and finally have the opportunity to express them. You know When you're more relaxed you might find that your sexual response flows more freely and right now I need Trey ... His look change which makes me ask my self is

It really the rainbow at the end of the storm. . . or the storm just began in my life

Him : I will always love you" he will always me ? what does he mean by that?

Me : I love you".

He had to know that I love him there is no right time or specific date you must say this three letter words I feel it In my gut and Honestly there's no way to know unless you know. I've said it once before and I meant it from top to bottom but i don't know why I feel scared to say it but when you know it really means something you go ahead and say it anyway

he kissed me on my forehead ran the back of his hands on my face look at me one more time before he stands up . he looked outside the

window and he was in deep thought I can not read him he had this wall over him I stand up as well i Want to hold him I'm to shot and being bear foot next to him makes me look even shorter Me: what's going on Trey ..." I finally ask with a mother of all lump on my trout ' Him : I'm getting married Silindile "

## Chapter 8

The day part 1

Sibahle \*\*\*\*

I was pretty shaken when they told me that we were going to sleep by the river on the eve of the ceremony but i guess their were pulling my leg because more girls joined us and they taught us the Zulu dance yoo it was so fun it was more of camping kind of thing I really enjoyed it there is something about culture that fascinated me a lot I wish I knew about this early .

In the mist of it all the singing clapping drum beat and dancing I was on my own world it like something took over me I never felt so alive Like I



am tonight a light flashed over the river and music died out my mom held her mouth

Me : kwenzakalani"

Her : your uncle has come to give your spear "

I frowned still confused my mom held my hand and we had to meet up with them in the middle of the river my mother's brother came with a spear I had to kneel they lit impempe and called out my mother clan name after that he poked the spear in front of me the women started lulating some

chanted in praise I smiled this was so overwhelming he then pinned couple of notes on my head and gave me a gift box to open when I get home.

I was still puzzled why all of this was done in the middle of the night and the middle of the river mom told me that it something to do with how she left her home that why the spear had to be handed to me by the river I knew that tensions were high and there was more to the story when my grandmother that I have just seen for the first time in my 18 years of existent hugged me as if her life depended on it mom was crying like crazy as if somebody died

which made me realise there is more skeleton in my family's closet both on my mother side and fathers side.

I exchange numbers with my grandmother and uncle I promised to keep in touch my inquisitive being need answers anyway my grandmother and uncle they left when it was close to dawn it left me feeling bitter sweet I wish they could stay for my ceremony

" take lot pics my sunshine and will chat and Skype " gogo said I laughed yoh this grandmother of mine is forward .

The activities became more fun when we were about to leave in the morning we were all naked ( all the girls ) and only covered with a blanket sang and dance around the fire before we jumped over it and we were told not to look back ( prevent bad omen from following us) so morning came so fast as expected you know when you having fun it always short lived we had to return home damn this girls love to dance and sing I did not know the songs but thanks God I'm good with dancing hay I got happy feet so here I was doing my thing till we finally approached the royal realms my stepfather welcomed me with a live goat with mpepho yo

tixo I'm officially one with the smoke now he said his thing and I was escorted to my room to dress up I had to wear isidwaba and lot of beads the colour of the day was yellow hideous

I know never the release I look good my small eyes and thick pouted lips stick out of the make up that Diddy forced me to put on

Diddy : yazi you such a work of art ... No wonder your mother name you Sibahle you are true beauty "

Me : nawe umuhle nje "

Nwabisa : she just a yellow bone paint her black ungabona inunu yodwa " we laughed

Mom: asambe Sibahle its time "

We were now in the ancestral rondavel listening to my uncle go on and on damn my knees were killing me now since I was kneeling down is he ever going to finish A cow was slaughtered that morning to congratulate me and thanking the ancestors for keeping me safe

He then took cow's bile and sprinkling it on the back of my hands fingers toes and the top of her head. This is believed to connect me with her ancestors and pleads with them to keep me safe and guide me he then step out leaving my mom

with my aunts

Mom : Sbahle take off your vest sweetheart "

Didy : oh oh moment truth"

Nwabisa : Dudu awuthule "

Mom: shesha Sisi you must hurry your guest are waiting esigcawini '

I slowly took of my top off here goes nothing ...

" yooh "

" mibhalo muni lo"

" tixo idimoni lodwa leli "

Mom: Sibahle Bhengu what on the love of Bhekumuzi have you got on your back "

Shit just hit the fan when mom start shouting using my father name in between

Me : I tattoo maka Sbahle "

Ma: I see that It a tattoo but what is it doing on your back "

I looked down

Ma : ooh Nkosi yami Sbahle izongibulala lendoda namuhla ..."

Nwabisa : we can try and cover it up with make up "

Didy : have you seen the sun outside ... You got to be Joking"

Me: do you ever shut up ?" Referred to Didy

Me : " ma I know its big but I love it its the only thing that reminds me of Dad its his name

Bhekumuzi Bhengu written in Chinese "

Her : ooh mtanami Tattoo pho ?" she laughed and turned me around and ran her hands on my back

Didy : its beautiful right ?"

Me & Nwabisa : awuthule !!!"

The whole house cracked up

My mom hugged me and took the layer of fat

taken from the cow's stomach ( imhlehlwe ) and

she covers it over my chest and back yo this thing is oily and big

One of the aunt : I hope umhlwehlwe nge uhlukani Sibahle "

Its believed that if umhlwehlwe brakes esigcawini a maiden is no longer a virgin

One of the gogo chuckle : ucwele umtwana uthe mfi ... Ngiyaziqhenya ngawe nkosazane uziphathile mtanami "

She put white clay on my forehead as sigh that I'm still pure oh might as well tell the whole world while at it jizz Zulu culture has no boundaries

Didy ; ooh brother there goes my make up "

I laughed this girl Jesus

Nwamisa : I'm proud of you my sister " we group

hug our attire were similar and we took lot pics and posted till we were lead out to the open space it looked like an Irena Yoo all this people came to my ceremony it was packed and i dance and sang I didn't even have to go around pointing my spear they ran to me and took the spear and dance (agiye) then put a certain amount of money only paper notes on my head

I must be a millionaire now with all the cash that pinned on my head I've done few cash out and off loading my cash when it got to much my spear was going around people and I smiled and clap hands Didy was busy wiping my face while Nwabisa stood with an umbrella next to me Didy : ooh father good who's that yummy guy with your spear " I looked up and saw Mr White guy walking around with this guy .. No Waite its a she but dmn she is fine

Nwabisa : fuck why did I get married early "

I looked at her and laughed

White guy : Princes we meet again "

I smiled and nodded

The stud: your husband say hi and please forgive us we not sure about your culture we got no cash

with us but we wrote you a cheque hope you don't mind "

Didy : not at all baby we don't "

I nudge her and I felt them pinning something on my head

White guy : see you later princess "

Nwabisa : our culture also says that if you have a spear in your hand you need to do the Zulu dance "

What??? this is what I got to see ? I have never laughed in my life like I just did right now yep its true white man can't dance at all and the stud with him did a nay nay mix with vosho the crowd was laughing and cheering on

Nwabisa : Holly shit they signed you a cheque for R100k

Me ; INI ??

.  
.

## Chapter 9

Trey \*\*\*

TREY just set down because he felt like his head

was spinning ever since he mentioned that he is getting married to Sli and she stated walking around the room she was wearing a denim bum short and white vest her weave was tied in a messy bun Trey looked at how tiny her feet are on white fluffy Carpet she was walking on Her : what ??”

The question was indirect question to herself Trey did not have any answers he knew that he just broke her fragile heart into tiny pieces that can never be mended there no turning back time even if Sli did not leave Trey’s fate will have still meant that he was suppose to marry a royal blood as much as Sli is his baby mother his first love his family would have never approved of them the last thing he wanted to do was to repeat history and do the same mistake his father did.

Sli was registering everything she just heard she than held her face and broke down and cried the last thing that Trey ever wanted to do was to make the mother of his child cry sli has cried enough he wish that he could be the one that will make her happy but in fact its like every time their path cross there is always a boundary walls preventing them from being together is it destiny



that they brake each others heart like this ? is it even normal for love to be so forbidden but yet to beautiful ?

She just cried even louder just thinking about what she went trough she did not believe that she just never experience love second ago and suddenly the tide just change her heart was bleeding she yet again Losing him to someone else it was shattering

Why couldn't they just be is This why love is such a lottery?. Rare is it that both party's feel exactly the same. Even if they try to figure things out that doesn't guarantee any success.

Her : I waited I sacrifice so much and this happens to me like this ??" The sadness subsided she became furious what was the point in believing in the upper power? what was the point of following destiny when it has to hurt her like this Unlike men who always want to be a woman's first lover women always desire to be a man's last lover with whom they settled down with . she has given him a child yes it was not planned but the baby has to count for something she never saw her self raising a child as a single parent or co-parenting with Trey was she to naïve and believed that happy ending

will come through for her if she persevered through all the instructions provided ... she waited for so long to be in this one room with Trey and talk like old times without fighting but she never pictured it to be like this only to hand over him over to his final and future lover she felt so borrowed or 'used' by destiny

Trey : Silindile " she felt the air way shutting down she held her chest

She was more frustrated at the fact that they wasted their time preparing him for commitment which never belonged to her . she was scorned woman

Her : what there to say Trevor hhe ? haven't you hurt me enough ? why does loving you hurt so much !!!"

he breath out loud and held his head facing down it was complicated fucked up situation

her : " do you love her ? "

him : " Sli don't do this to yourself ? "

her : " just answers me !! "

him : " no ... I don't even know her its an arranged marriage "

her : what?"

him : " royalty "

her : “ oh my God ... what am I going to tell my daughter Trey ? she just found you and already she is asking too many question’s about us “  
Trey looked down he never thought that far all along he did what he had to do because he was forced to do so now there is child involve his child considering separation with Sli brought fear of the unknown . How will this affect his Princess Will she slip to emotional depression ? Will she hate him for putting her through this mess? Is this going to scare her off marriage and commitment for the rest of her life? Will the women his arranged to marry be nice towards his princess he held his head he was not sure about everything ... but he remember the vow he made to his people to his family

him : “ it a condition in my life that I need to uphold “

sli : “ why Trey “

him : “ it is what it is Silindili I wanted to tell you my self the truth then you hearing from someone else I'm sorry ok ... but you the one that left me have you ever once thought that when you come back I would not be crying over you or waiting for you ? I got duties to do and kingdom to run I don't

expect for you to understand but I will appreciate if is for you stop blaming me for a condition I have no control over “

Sli : Trey you are arranged to marry a women you don't love ...and you expect me to be happy for you .... You know very well how I feel about you ...!!! “

She was shouting and Trey hated that the Alpha inside of him commands respect and this what she is doing was pissing him off

Him : I'm in the same room as you are you will refrain raising you voice at me uyezwa!! “

His voice was commanding that alone got Sli on a submission mode

Him : as I was saying ... “ she cut him of and that angered him even more

Her : “ did you think of what this will do to Zee”

Him : “ bull shit silindile why you using my child to fight you battles!!!! “

Her : So when you came here to tell me this what did you expect ? for me to be happy ... to say congratulation ? “

him : haybo I told never raise your voice at me !! “  
he roarer sli looked down in able to control her tears

Trey looked at her he was angry but some how It killed him to see Sli crying like this she was broken to no extent all the years he has know sli she has watch her put on a coat of strength sli was more like an eggs in his eyes tough on the outside but soft on the inside. Initially she seem rather unapproachable and cold but as you get to know her you discover that she has a warm side too. Trey understood this Sli may stand in front of millions and motivate and heal others but her own wounds and bruises are bleeding out and not attended its true that People who are outwardly tough are easily mistaken as rocks. They are respected for their strength and confidence but honest fact is that there masters of the disguise of there true pain

Him : “ im sorry ok ... my intention was not to hurt you but to come clean to you as a mother of my child i know the sacrifice you made for me and for Zithelo you put you life on hold and I hate that im the cause of that ... I wish I can tell you that this is a bad dream you will wake up from but reality is that ... this time tomorrow I need to be with my wife ... “

Sli felt defeated as she sank on the bed she had

no fight in her Trey made his way and set next to her parting with the only women who ever held his heart was the most difficult thing he has to do him : What I'm trying to say is that just because someone gets married doesn't mean they married the love of their life. You will always be the true love of my life

### **Sponsored**

What's most important is that you don't allow it to make you feel bad about yourself or prevent you from finding happiness Your perception is your reality ... please Sli don't let me hold you back "

As Trey ran his hands on his face he felt the rush to hold her and so he did pull her for a hug  
Sl slide down of the bed and stood in front of Trey if this is the last time he going to be with him as a single man she might as well make it memorable  
Her : what about me Trey ...ngenzenjani?" he stopped and looked at her she was in between his legs she lifted her top and took it off  
Trey : sli... Please "\_his eyes were meet with her lacy white bra  
He swallowed he knew that he could not stop the edge inside of him

him: I'm really sorry " he said and he pulled her close she placed her forehead on his there eyes locked they lips touched she held her breath as she felt the worm of his touch on her body ...

.

.

[not narrated ]

Sli \*\*\*

Nothing else in the world mattered then for me to be in his arms again call me stupid call me naïve horny bitchy I don't care I have longed to be with him for years I dreamt about him giving me multiple orgasm and right now I want to hold him feel him just for the last time

My heart felt like it would jump out of my chest. When he lifted me up My soul felt too big for my skin.

He lay me down on the bed and I grabbed his chest. Holding him was like riding a bike. It was as if nothing had changed as if the last few years we spent separated didn't exist

The intensity of our togetherness then and there was enough to make up for all lost time.

The moment our lips locked felt like our first kiss he tasted so good – My alluring forbidden fruitful

taste of his lips A succulent and sweet taste that  
Lies within those soft lips

But still why must I distance my self to him ? must  
i distance myself to this I don't think I can his  
going down on me he making me touch all the  
planets in the universe I can't hold it I scream his  
name I push his head deep in between my legs  
this feeling I have right now

its beyond my grasp its so alluring forbidden but  
yet so addictive No matter how hard I fight it I  
splash my juices he suck me dry and make me  
taste my self in his lips his lips so forever tender  
and sweet From the very first taste of That first  
stolen kiss I became addicted. This feeling was  
followed by first touch in my most delicate places  
I don't know if his too big he can not feet I flinch  
he cradle me under his arms he planted bite on  
my neck as the growled like a bull on my ear and I  
let out a moan as my walls stretch to  
accommodate him

Him : “ you waited “

I bite my lip and nodded his eyes we barely visible  
his voice husky and way too deep Every muscle in  
my body eased into repose. Every inch of him  
surrendered to the vulnerability inside of me.



Memories mostly good flooded my mind with his every thrust –

It was like a melody I sang on my conscious mind crying inside as he

thrust in ~~~~it's been so long~~~

thrust out~~~ you'll have to go soon~~~

thrust in~~~ I remember what your love felt like~~~~

Thrust out~~~ wait come back please do not go I need more of you~~

Touching him felt like pure poison. I knew he was eventually going to leave but all I wanted to do was make our moments last. He was the illicit love and I the naive wanderer willing to do anything just to get my hands on him before he became somebody else property this was my dream to be in his arms

We spent the rest of the night holding each other tossing me on top him on top on the floor on the shower it was explosive ...

I woke up with tears in my eyes unable to contain my longing for him. His side of the bed was warm his Cologne lingered I felt emptier than I've ever felt before I thought being with him would reignite something in me. I thought fooling

around with my past would help catapult me forward into the future. . . what future do I have without him

## Chapter 10

Trey \*\*"

I stood on the shower and water washed over me. I was at Sbu and Pam's house here in Durban I'm not sure if I feel shame or what? I just spend the night with my baby mama I not only just slept with her once or twice I spend the whole night with her to top it up on the eve of my bloody engagement party

damit Trey you are fuckin married man what really come over you ? I ask myself Yes I love Sli no doubt but I feel like I took advantage of her .... of the situation in fact ... was sex necessary ?

Jesus but I must admit

After all that was said and done I just fond there's nothing sexier than what you can't have so when sli initiated breakup sex I obliged. It's supposed to be the best sex right? Besides the damage is already done so what's the harm? I closed the tap

and looked at myself in the mirror  
" it was just break up sex Trey this things happens  
get over it " I convinced myself I walked out of the  
bathroom time was not on my side and I was  
ignoring calls from my grandmother Austin and  
Mbali ... not to mention mama shit they all waiting  
for me at the Bhengu homestead and I'm here  
cleaning the guilt and shame of sleeping with my  
baby mama I quickly dressed up and took my car  
keys and phone and rushed out I turned music on  
but fuck my thoughts were so loud I felt like I was  
possessed every time I closed my eyes I saw Sli  
face biting her lip her Mouth slightly open her  
lustful look she made when I go deep on her  
" get out of my head " I banged the steering  
wheel " she was tormenting me no doubt I  
recalled looking at her for the last time before I  
left the room with no goodbye note of goodbye  
kiss all I could see was pain in her heart she is the  
person with less power in this break up she is  
heartbroken and really wants to get back together  
while the i with more power doesn't... I can but I  
just can't yes sex was a bliss but I feel shame and  
guilt Sli is the mother of my baby not piece of  
meat that I can snack on she means more to me

than that

"Fuck " I cursed out loud Romantic relationships are essentially addictive...so when an attachment is severed the natural reaction is one of withdrawal obsession craving and pain why did I have to complicate this with sex

Me: damit Sli ..." \_

I was so sure and also told myself that i will never cheat on my wife no women deserve such heart arch but fuck this breakup sex just confuse me i got mix feelings now I'm not sure if i have started to feel loved-up again or just remember how good she was in bed and suddenly the reasons for breaking up don't seem to make quite so much sense anymore but Whether i decide to get back together with her or just end up in that horrible "we're exes who are still hung up on each other but are still having sex" area which i pray not to be like that ooh God please I just have to try not to get into that ... stuck in that loved-up glow fever its not worth it or healthy my phone connected to bluetooth almost making me pee myself

" ukuphi ?"

I breath out loud it was only Zoe

" aah ..."

" come on Trey uGogo is explaining why the groom is absent kuzibizo zomkakhe ... I know this is not an ideal situation for you but mfethu think about this girl you humiliating "

Me : I'm on my way Zoe I just had a flat tire "

" oh brother please just get here now "

She dropped the call and I speed off shit way to go  
Trey you just made yourself an ass to your in-law.

Two and half hours late ....

" finally you made it "

I shook my head fixed my shirt

Me : how do I look "

Mbali : like you someone's husband

Austin : this people made us do Zulu dance "

Me : you gave her her money right ? "

Mbali : dude did you hear what we just said we freakin dance in front of a crowd and we Trending now " I inwardly rolled my eyes at Mbali I'm so nervures I mean I'll be meeting my wife for the first time tradition says we must stand outside till " amaqhikiza " gets us

Me : I hope she likes her dress"

Austin : she is beautiful bro . . . grandma got taste trust me even if she rocks out of here with a sack

on she will still be gorgeous “

Mbali : I still think she plays for my team ”

Me :what ?... ” \_

Austin : she got this twisted thing on her head  
that princess is a stud ”

I chuckled ... And asked about koko they told Me  
that she in the tent with the VIP guest she with  
Mama I breath out loud

Austin : looks like there done handing out gift “

Me : “ what ? “

Mbali pointed and I saw commotion on the  
entrance my heart was beating on my throat

Me : “ I wish you are here “

Her : “ I know baby I just pray to get better so I  
can see that gem you marrying “

me : “ who told you she beautiful ? “

Her : “ koko could not stop bragging “

I laughed I was chatting to Pam who was pissed  
that she could not come she was not fit to fly she  
was not fit to fly she has been very sick this day  
and Dr recommended bed rest for her I looked up  
when I heard singing from girl

Me : wow “

Austin : I guess this is an invite inside ”

Mbali : about time I'm starving

Sbahle \*\*\*

my family have made this a norm to do things behind my back here I was all happy and free thinking that it's my big day my birthday / Memulo And dukuduku ...mom came like a tornado to my table “ Go hide at the rondavel Sbahle your in-law balethe izibizo “ ... I was shocked and angry why was I not told about this

Ma: look at your face now and ask me why I never told you "

“ but angikadli ma “

Her : just Go sibahle ! “

I felt like screaming so here I was in my room being told that today was going to be my memulo infused with izibizo ceremony which means that Grooms people will need to award my family with gifts and I need to do umbondo in a days time from now which is more or less the same thing issue gifts and grocery to my in-laws not as if they need it from what I pickup my in-laws are loaded ... we just follow ing culture and customs nje

Didy : “ looks like you having a summer wedding “

Oh I forgot to inform you that the white and traditional wedding is in mid December am I

happy about finding about all of this today as in few hours ago oh hell no ! on the day of my Memulo oh hell no! it like my family is deliberately pissing me off .

Nwabisa : “ get off the window your in –laws are coming here “

I was just wrapped on my bathrobe and I was tired mind you i never slept for the past few days two beautiful women walked in greeted us

“ ninjani ... “ asked the one with nit afro she has curves for days and dimples wow beautiful we greeted them back

“ we sister of your Husband and we were sent to dress you up ... “ well it tradition that Groom comes with gift and my outfit they must dress me up from head to toe and judging from the bags they came with they had everything I picked up that the girl with afro her name is Veli and the other with Pink hair coloured is Nokuzola but they called her Zoe her personality was welcoming and she loves joking and laughing

They called in a girl to do my makeup and nails while they set and chat with me they were pretty friendly Zoe loves her champagne because the glass did not leave her hand



and I got to understand the family I'm married into its located in the Ngonyama village based in west part of Swaziland my husband to be is king his name is Mvelo Trevor Mnguni lawyer by profession CEO of his law firm and other major companies including hotels malls farms ...

Zoe : " so what you want to study ? "

I have not thought that far all I know is that I'm good with numbers

Didy : " she is not afraid to speak her mind and very good judge of corrector so I think being a Judge will be great career path for her "

I looked at her this girl never shut up

Veli: " well I like how you think Dudu it will be great working hand in hand with Ngonyama " that the name they call my husband i kinda like it too it carries so much power

Zoe : " true running the kingdom and empire .. good thinking " they high five with Didy I just laughed

The lady who was doing my makeup she packed up they things and smiled as she looked at me I finally had to put on my attire it was nothing Fancy just traditional Swati print Long umbrella skirt white bobtube elegant top with pearls details

I also had this big over the shoulder beads a head scarf that match the skirt and a matching cloth to put over my shoulders the dominant colour was red

" I'm not wearing that " I pointed at red high heels that Zoe tried to put on my feet

She Giggled

Zoe : " I told you Veli that she will not wear this shoes "

They laughed

Zoe : " I hope you don't mind wearing takkies " I smiled when I saw white all star chuck taylor

Zoe : I love you ink ... What does it mean ? " she was referring to my tattoo

Me : its my late father name "

She nodded

Me : and your 's " she had big tattoo of angel wings on her back it was one of manny that she had she said ink painting is therapeutic to her you see i'm not alone got people who think like me

Her : its represent my baby girl lost her before I could hold her "

Me : im sorry "

Her : it OK ...umuhle "

I looked down " thank you "

We heard girls singing

Zoe : wow right on queue we done

Veli : it's about time ... Come it's time to meet you  
hubby "

Didy : “ ooh my God is that him ? “

I suddenly felt my knees shaking oh God No !

.  
.

## Chapter 11

Sibahle \*\*\*

I walked out looking down and every one was  
creaming my name women ululate Man praising  
me with my clan name I zintombi singing

“ Woyisholo wena! Woyisholo wena!

(Ukuthi why ubuntombi ungasenabo!)

Baphi omama bey'ntombi iy'ntombi ma\_Africa!

Khuzani khuzani olafa elakithi sil'bhekile!

Baphi omama bey'ntombi iy'ntombi ma\_Africa!

Wololo wololo wololo wentombi olafa elakini  
lik'bhekile!

Woy'sholo wena woyisholo wena ukuthi why  
ubuntombi ungasenabo!!

Uyoy'sholo wena!

Inkomo kababa wena engabe wayiqhuba

washonisa ngaphi!

Engabe way'qhuba liphuma ilanga engabe

way'qhuba lishon'ilanga!

Uyoy'sholo wena!

Inkomo kababa wena way'qhuba way'shonisa

ngaphi!

Engabe way'qhubele empumalanga noma

way'qhubel'entshonalanga!

Uyoy'sholo wena! Igezile yathitshilo izofiki

inganono! “

My ears were buzzing my heart beating out of my mouth this walk was very long my Knees were shaking

Zoe : “ breath sisi “

Didy : “ you crushing my hand girl “

Did I listen no I was panicking I thought about what I'm forced in too Marriage at 18th ? I

haven't enjoyed life I haven't seen the world what going to happened to me what if this man abuse me or treat me like how my uncle treat my mother I felt a wave of anger no this right here was fear I was not the smart brave girl I was terrified girl who wised she was given time to

grow broke few heart learn from few mistake  
before expected to grow up to soon to be a wife  
... a Queen I wanted to run way I wanted to  
escape the noise was too much they really giving  
me away oh how I wish my father was still alive at  
this instant I hated everyone who called them  
selves my family no body stood up or fought for  
me every body thought that this was a good  
arrangement and it will benefit the two families I  
must be grateful that my uncle has negotiated  
with a good wealthy family . I do not think my  
feelings were conceded on this marriage  
arrangement at all .

Zoe : “ come seat down love “

There was grass mat on the floor I set down did  
not lift my head there was lot of movement in  
front of me different shoes was the only thing I  
could see I could hear camera flicking veli was  
talking and she was placing things in frond of me  
designer cloths boxes of shoes bags jewellery  
there was blanket put over my shoulders another  
placed on my legs I was suffocation ... women  
were busy with ululating only face I wish to see  
was my mothers right now the singing started  
again I'm guessing there done it was to noisy but

that did not stop me from hearing my heart thumping on my trout I was still left with a mini blanket over my shoulder while our servants took my gifts from the floor to be honest the gift giving was a blur to me I saw lot of things being placed in front of me but my ears and eyes were not there

which did not slightly surprise me because with arranged marriages you never have a fairy tale wadding you do not plan you do not have an opinion everything is not illustrated but planned for you

my body was there but my head was miles away it was just a nightmare . they call it an engagement party but to me it felt like my funeral I sat on a grass mat for hours facing down because with zulu culture its not appropriate to look at your in laws in the eyes most of my close relatives and in-laws Kept admiring my beauty and how I'm going to be the perfect " MAKOTI " they said I just smiled as they kneeled down and whispered in my ear.

I could hear my Uncle laughing like a clown I wish I could stand up from this mat and take off this doke and run to him and stab him while I was lost

in thought in a plot on how to kill my father  
I felt a lone tear escape shit just got real I'm  
officially a Mnguni wife .

I was brought back to reality by there cheer that  
shook the room raising my head will be conceded  
disrespect so I looked at the floor I could feel that  
my legs were numb now I have been sitting in the  
same position for almost an hour now

Nwabisa :” do you want stretch your legs “

She was seating next to me I guess she saw how  
uncomfortable I was

Me : “ please ... “

Her : “asambe “ she stood up

Me : “ I think my legs are asleep now “

She giggled and helped me to get up I slowly  
limped away from the eye that were looking at  
me and the irritating camera snapping the minute  
I was in the rondavel I breath out loud

Her : “ I knew that you were struggling to breath  
sit right here I will get you food “

Me : is that even allowed ? “

Her : “ I don't care ... you were uncomfortable  
back there besides the gift offering ceremony is  
over so you my cuz you played your part “

Me : “ thank you “ I was about to take my blanket

off

She stopped by the door “ make sure that you cover yourself up if someone nocks or come in especially your in-laws ... “

Me : “really “

Her : “ it symbol of you being a young wife ... “ I huffed as she walked out .

Later on I was resting on the bed with a plate of food on my hand eating Nwabisa was rubbing my legs Dudu was busy telling us how good she looks on all of the pic taken another girl was with us and she was Friends of Dudu she was telling me how beautiful my Husband is I brush that thought off Dudu : “ ya mganai yo Mzala muhle mina I think the white guy has a thing for me ... imagine getting married to a white guy “

Ok now im shocked did my snob cousin speak Zulu right now

Nwabisa : “ yoh nikhuluma umageba uma senikhuluma ngamadoda “

Dudu : “ aysuka ... you two are taken some of us we still need to show face to get inkomo zababa” I laughed

“ mmmm girl he is hot “ she was so irritating with this I was to tired to pay any attention to her loud



mouths so I pretended to not hear a thing  
I was about to dose off the way I was so tired  
when we heard a knock on the door

Nwabisa : “ Sukuma .. “

We all scrambled up Dudu took my plate I quickly  
jumped down took my blanket covered my  
shoulders looked down

“ Sanibonani Zintombi “ she greeted

“ yebo ma “ the girls answered

“ May I have a word with Sibahle please “ she  
asked I breath out loud at least it not my arranged  
married to be hubby I did not look up but I  
responded she requested in fact she commanded  
the girls in the room to step out .

“ yebo mama” they said and walked out nerves  
are killing me right now she was wearing a long  
skit red and black sort of a xhosa attire with black  
stiletto hills she sounded very polite well  
mannered and her voice was soft she told Me she  
is Makhumalo and she is happy to finally meet me

she told Me she is Makhumalo and she is happy to  
finally meet me she advised me that my husband  
to be will come in to see me

Her : “ ngiyabuya ngisayomulanda “ I heard her

clicking sound of her heels as she walked out I lifted my head to check the coast if it was clear yep she was gone I decided to change my seating position because I could feel my leg falling asleep on me I lifted this heavy blanket away from my shoulders I stood up and after some minute when I realized that this so called husband to be is not coming in I went to the window to take a pick on what was happening outside it was still buzzing as if it's the actual wedding .

I could not believe my eyes when I saw him I noticed him because the Makhumalo lady pulled him aside from the crowd to talk to him he was wearing a shirt that had the same Swati prints as my skirts white pants he was tall looked coloured had long dreadlocks he was buffed up showed that his friends with the gym pink lips sharp nose he had a straight look and only side smile he was intimidating no doubt ohh God ... he was handsome shame I must admit he looked young maybe in his early 20ths I started crying I wish I could run away and never come back from home ... I was not ready for this not now not ever this guy terrified me I noticed that he was walking towards my room I quickly jumped back to my

mat covered my self and sobbed in silence . I could feel his presence as he came closed " aaah hi " his voice alone made the hair on the back of my neck stand it was bold and deep I tried to find words to say but there failed me so I decided to nod

Him: zimbule gikubone ( reveal your self so I can see you)

I was very reluctant to do so because I'm sure by now my eyes are red because I was crying I slowly lifted my head

Him: my name is Mvelo and you are ?"

I sad in almost a whisper

Me : I'm Sibahle ... " I stopped my self for continuing I did not know if I should add "im Sibahle baba or I'm Sibahle Ngonyama "

Him: ok its nice too meet you ... you are truly beautiful " my eyes were still fixed on his shoes as much as my head was lifted I was amazed on how his voice filled my ear like the sound of base gutter he smelled very good and I could notice by the Italian shoes he had on that he was all about money . there was silence in the room for a moment so I decided to take pick at him our eyes met hold up his eyes.... i don't know there are

different shades unique colour I have never seen such exotic looking eyes this man is oh my god I hate to admit it HOT he ooze confidence and was that a smile i saw his skin so polished he bit his inner cheek ooh Father God that so Hot I quickly looked away I could not believe that this man had good futures his eyes were big and he had thick eyebrows I stated to blush and I wish he could just leave I must not feel like this I should not ... its arranged Sbahle I convince my self .

He cleared his trough oh shit I looked at him was I suppose to do that oh God I just disrespected a king

maybe I should apologize I know how traditional royal people are .

Me : Im sorry “

Him : for ? “ he was speaking really close to me no he is actually crouched in front of me

Me : I was not suppose to look at you . “

Him: how will you know the person that you marrying if you do not look at him ? “

Wow I did not know if he was being sarcastic or maybe just making a funny remark

That was my queue to just keep quite before my mouth says something that will put me in hot

waters he cleared his trough I felt his hands on my chin as he lifted my face to look him our eyes locked I felt my stomach doing back flips I held my breath thank god to my small eyes I could look down without him noticing that I'm not looking at him

Him : you have every right to be afraid of change You may feel very secure in the pond that you are in but if you never venture out of it you will never know that there is such a thing as an ocean a sea. All I see in your eyes is a person who over think every expect that you have encountered Projecting certain assumptions into certain situations can be disastrous it'll lead you towards developing a defensive front or counter-attacking when no concern may even be warrantee your pretty little eyes tell me that you are your own worst enemy. This may come as a bit of a shock and I hope it does. But you are more powerful than you possibly realize and your potential is limited by only one factor:"

I finally found courage to look at him

Him : never be an enemy to you self not every one is guning for you "

He stood up

Him : “ you have such beautiful eyes and there are a window to your pain just like a mermaid has no tears and yet she suffers so much more but her beauty will not make us see her fears and pain ”

Him : “nice to meet you my wife ” he said to me I nodded and I felt his presents fade as he walked out he left me there thinking what just happened who the hell did I marry he just saw through me my walls were immediately knock down ... what just happened ?

- .
- .

## Chapter 12

Sli \*\*\*

I got up from the bed changed sheets put on new linen made my way to my bathroom took long bath jumped out minutes later and wrapped towel around my body I took a look at myself in the mirror and notice that Trevor has left a trail of love bites on my neck I had this moment of touching myself and thinking about yesterday's event I immediately had a change of mood when I

realised what today is I clicked my tongue and walked out I jumped into my skinny jean and lose shirt dragged my sleepers with a load of laundry on my hand I found Nola on the high chair fixated on her tab when she saw me she put the tab face down ooh she probably looking at Trey pic of the ceremony

Me : unjani "

Her : hi ... " I made my way to the laundry room dump everything on the Washing machine poured soap and tuned it on when I turned around Nola was by the door

Her : are you OK .. "

Me : mmmm where is Zee "

Her : took her to mkhulu last night because her father's car was still on driveway when we came back from the mall I thought you two needed more time to talk "

Me : mmm'

Her : sli are you OK..."

Me : yep im ok ... " I faked a smile

I took an apple and walked out

Her : Silindile Trey slept over last night and today his getting married I know you not ok babe "

Me : Nola I'm fine ..."

Her : Sli you slept with him ... Please talk to me how are you how are you feeling let me in Sli we walked this road together "

Me : " Nola stop pushing please I don't feel like talking about Trey "

Her : " for how long are you going to run hide your feeling your heart you experience heart break and I want to be there for you ... so get out "

Me : and say what?? that yet again another man was able to walk over me and left me high and dry ! that I waited for this day to come and he basically fucked me and left me in my bed ? what must I say that I was stupid to follow fate and destiny just to be served with " I'm arranged to marry someone else " ... you know what Nola I don't need you pity your shoulder to cry on " your it ok to cry" bullshit ... and that look of pity you giving me now "

Her : "it's not pity ... I told your for years to find him and tell him the truth if only you found him earlier ... we would have been speaking another language now !! demit sli you don't listen

Me : " so its my fault that he dumped me ? "  
She just looked at me



Me : “ wow nola ... just wow ! “

Her : “ I know you love him Sli and I still think sleeping with him was wrong move ... you can not have closure of letting go if you just become intermit with a person you love “

I looked at her she will never understand I see it in her eyes that she wants to tell me to move on Nola is feminist she believes that women don't need a man to be happy she is right to a certain extent truth be told I don't need Trey to make me happy but I need his to complete me

Me : “ look Nola as much as you think you understand what I'm going through you don't “

Her :sli “ I just walked up to my room one thing Nola has never experienced is to love she 25 years old but she has never loved or has ever been in relationship and she can not give me advisee about matters concerning the heart.

You know to love wholeheartedly it will always raises the question of how do you move on with your life after losing the one you love the person you thought you might grow old with?

It doesn't matter how famous I may be right now but i will still feel the hurt regret and despair at seeing the person i still love marry and have

children with someone else it's a bitter pill to swallow. I have been through many extremely painful things. Many But nothing was as painful as a broken heart. I felt beyond lost.

But today I was not going to break down not in front of no one I'm good at putting this face that I'm OK while I'm hurting inside. Did that with my first marriage allowed a man to walk all over me abused me physically and emotional but stepped out of the house the following day with makeup on and smiled to the world as if I'm in happily ever after marriage

I put on my kicks fix my weave tool my car Keys and phone

Me: I'll go get Zee “

Nola breath in and out loudly feeling defeated as I walked out the memories of trey inside me soaked my panty liner I pressed my thighs together the thought of last night lingers in my head Trey Is the second guy I ever sleep with even my dead husband never feed all my sexual desires like how Zee dad did driving became difficult that I packed aside and held my face " dahm you Trey " I wiped my tears I stepped outside my car. I had to think on what I must do God knows I can leave

Trey maybe go to another country I have done that before but now I Got Zee the glue between me and him how can I move on when he will be in my life forever . this alone infuriated me a bit his wife will be in the picture visitation right will apply joined custody my child will be bouncing from county to country no stable life because her parents are separated .

this was never the life I envision for my child God why is my happiness feel so borrowed ... it like I'm given to only return it back because it was never mine to keep

Those of us who have loved and lost are told to 'move on'. Yes we must do just that but it takes time and a lot of healing. We are brought up with the belief and are told repeatedly that there is the one special person out there for us. If we believe we had found them and then lost them what does that make of all the assurances we were given Also we ask what does that say about ourselves that we couldn't even hang on to the one true love in our lives?

After spending an hour in the middle of nowhere I did that last break down wailed as I felt my heart breaking in million pieces with that last big cry i

realize that things weren't meant to be with Trey and it'll all be OK eventually i may never fully get a sense of closure about why it ended like this and why I had a visions and dreams telling me to hold on to him but at least i have some clarity at this point... His married happiness is not for everyone I guess

I finally start my car and drove to nearest chemist " my I get a morning after pill "

Oh yes I'm not repeating another Zee situation not this time around I learned my lesson after taking my dose I took a drive to the beach and set on the bench and looked at the waves I'm tempted to check Trey social media but that alone will drive me crazy its time I put my big girl panty's on and leak my wounds.

.  
.

Trey \*\*\*

We were too tired to fly back home so we book guest house not far from the Bhengu homestead we left the Bhengu house very late and I was happy to finally put a face to my wife she is beautiful I must say her thick pouted lips small chinese eyes high cheekbones She looks like a

sweet little lamb from afar, She looks like a sweet little lamb from afar but when you get close you find out she skinned and ate the damn thing just to use it as a coat. She's a beast feisty fearless and does not break easily she the most toughest cookie I have ever seen she's vivacious stand her ground she may find hard to look me in the eyes as a sign of respect but I see the drive and ambition in her Fear played a huge part in her life she carries too much sorrow of her past and also of her current situation she has been caged for years that she forgot her true potential her wings are colourful as her personality but she fears the unknown am I in love with her ? no fam but i'm intrigued she no push over and that alone makes me want to step up to the challenge she will bring .

Looking at her she reminds me so much of my sister she looks down like a snake but when she rise she will strike and it will hurt I shook my head and laughed .

I kept holding on to my can of beer I could not drink i'm still trying to calm down from the high and low of being an official married man and I'm happy to say that the ceremony was beautiful I

looked at my loud friends and smiled Zoe Austin and Mbali were drinking to them this was another party to get sloshed and fool around but to me this was my life changing day ...

I stepped out of the room to think but found koko sitting on the balcony fanning herself

Her : kuyashisa kulendawo and nani ninomusindo " it was close to midnight

The stars were clear but the weather made it feel like there is sun up in the sky KZN is very warm especially in summer nights feel like days as well

Me ; there is an air-conditioning inside "

Her ;\_hayi suka I rather enjoy this breeze "

I nodded

Her : thank you my son"\_

I looked at her

her : I know getting married at 22 years was not part of your plan "

Me : " or being a king " she laughed and continued to fan herself

her: you know i never chose her for you "

me : "what ? ... I don't understand "

her : you two were arranged to marry while she was still a fetus in her mother womb"

Me : what ? "

" when the war started and we lost everyone I ran to the caves but Khwezi located me and I ran again the only way to survive was to exiled from home so I ran south she did not stop hunting me down she wanted me dead because I was the only person who has seen the vision of the new kingdom where you will rule ... the prophecy was said long time ago about you and the death of royal blood but no one believed that a women will spill the royal blood leaving no one to survive " I looked at her KOKO hates talking about the past she said that it too painful for her to replay it in her head she said that she has see people get killed in the most cruel manner she hates that she survived to tell the tale of what happened to our family .

Her :weeks turned months in hiding and running I had no food no clothes and nothing to drink I scavenged eating anything that moved to keep my strength by then I had no clue that Knosiyesizwe survived or not all I knew is that every white lion that roamed the land was short dead I had no one I was alone I hide ... ran ...hide... ran till one day I just gave up I was in foreign lands and I was starving haven't eaten for days and I could not

keep my eyes open I remember trying to get up but it was a mission and light went dark for me I woke up on an unfamiliar surrounding but the warm smile of Nontombi reassure me that I'm safe I stayed for two years with them and they were good people and I felt like I belonged but the Mnguni fallen kings came to me in a dream and told me to return home as Queen it was my duties to go back home to my people leaving this place was hard because I had no clue what await me back home when I hugged Nontombi on my day of departure I felt and sense a soul inside of her but she also had dark cloud over her and the unborn baby “

Me : “ no ! koko uthini ? “

She nodded

Bhekumuzi Bhengu rescued me hide me in his home for years he was king and he knew about the Massacre of the Innocents that was happening in the far East in our land he told me that he had a dream about me and him finding me was not buy luck but the Bhengu ancestors lead him to where I was “

I was lost I felt like my knees were shaking

Her : Before I left He told me when she turns 18 I



must come and get her she the only leaving royal blood that carries the strength of the Oshun “

Me : “ ooh GOD ! ... she is one of gogo Ndoni’s descended .. “

Her : her destiny lays in my hand I didn't know what he meant about that till you came back home and the dreams started ”

Me : so the Bhengu help you ”

She nodded

Her : not only me but you and your sister spiritually I’m connect with you if khwezi captured me she was going conjured my spirit to locate you you would have died without fulfilling your purpose ... You are the last descendent of the lion blood ...and you need Sibahle she is the last leaving river orisha or goddess your blood and hers will need to infuse again like Ndoni and Somdali did “

I nodded

Her : I know you love Sli .. She is the mother of your child but will never survive the lion throne ... ”

Me: but she also said something about destiny that kept her away from me it was supposed to be four years but her grandfather forced her come ”

She stood up and looked at me

Her : blood moon will rise again in a months times remember what the fallen kings told you about the moon ? "

Me : " blood moon means huvest time when king is born "

She shook her head " not that ... what else "

Me : blood moon will bring purity fertility love and sensuality for a king to be born "

I looked at her and popped my eyes

Her : mmmm looks like destiny is broken and not fulfilled that why a mate can never seat in the throne trust me I know I was never a chosen one but your grandfather' mate ... the throne is to powerful for me to handle that why I almost died. . . it was never my place "

Me : " koko are you trying to say "

Her : OMnguni banolaka Mvelo ... It's time you understood the importance yeziyalo zedloti ... "

## Chapter 13

Sbahle \*\*\*

Sleeping with Zim was mission this girl kicks and snores yes my friend showed up last night and I was so happy we talked till late and they clicked with Didy I was disappointed that non of my siblings came but oh well the only thing that made us family was dad I guess to them I'm just another long distance relative ...

Apparently being Mvelo fiancé got me trending I hate the public eye and now I got people following me on social media some people are hating on me some are just too nice and fake I guess that my new life .

I woke up early because of my sleeping conditions I did my hygiene process and made my way out of the bedroom. The house was quite thanks God. I was not looking forward in smiling and greeting the only Good thing that this man ever done was to build his other house away from my fathers that where he spend most of his time .

I was to lazy and tied to watch TV so I played music and my father Jimy Dlundlu cd started playing I smiled to my self as I thought about the

good time i had with my father I was on the couch going through my pics at shame I looked hot yesterday i still can't believe it me.

I must have fallen asleep because I found my self being hit by a cold breeze I rubbed my shoulders I was in my fathers art gallery I walked around touching his paintings admiring u stopped when saw one painting that looked like me I had braids on my face looked sad Mvelo was behind me and his back was facing me he was hugging someone I could only see her arms and hands Mvelo broad shoulders were hiding her face the painting was dark and spoke volumes ...I ran my hands on it the girl in the picture looked like me but was so sad  
Him : sana lwami ... "

I turned and looked behind me

Me : baba Ka Sbahle "

Him : you are a women now a wife "

Me : I'm not ready baba I'm so scared "

Him: "im proud of the young women you turned out to be "

I started crying

Him : its OK baby I'm always with you ..."

Me : he sold me baba ungidayisile for his riches baba Ka Sbahle ... "

He held my face

Him : ...Mnguni is good man ... He was chosen for you trust him and stop this hate you have over my brother its weighing down on you "

Me : kodwa baba"

He shook his head

Him : don't be your own enemy and carry other peoples burden live for Sbahle now uyinkosazane yaka Bhengu and soon to be indlovukazi yaka Mnguni "

Me : I'm scared baba " \_

Him : because you confined by the walls you have build around yourself Mntanami I understand and trust me it totally makes sense why you did it but it's not always worth it. If you allow yourself to let loose and trust yourself and others you'll find some of the deeper parts of yourself."

Me : I don't know how to love baba Ka Sbahle "

Him : follow your heart stop listening to your stubborn head..."

I smiled and looked down

Him : I'm proud of you my child you are so blessed... one day you will realise that ...I love you so much "

Me : unгахambi ngiyakucela "

Him : angiyindawo ... " He pulled me into a hug and I felt so warm I heard someone calling my name ... " Sbahle Mani " I opened my eyes it was Didy she was standing in front of me

Me : yini ?"

Her: just wake up will you ?"

Me : did you have to scream that loud kodwa ? "

She rolled her eyes and pulled me by the hand I hate that look she is up to something

She dragged me up the stairs

Me: where we going ?

Her : Come and see " she took me to the second floor she opened the balcony sliding door we stood there and looking outside

Me : so what am I looking at vele ? " i saw cars parked by the royal BnB with few guys sitting there " \_:

Zim : jonga mtasi he's here" she had a bowl of food in her hand this girl and food kodwa

Me : bani ?"

zim : your future bae"

My mouth just dropped what the fuck is he doing here ?

Didy: looks like they did not leave he is so cute look at him ? "

Me: uphi ? I see lot of people"

Didy : well he is somewhere in the mix

She giggled and I playfully hit her

Me : so why so many cars ? what happening ? Are they having a party "

zim : its looks like it's you engagement after party and he bought the most cutest guys ever ... Ooh mtasi I so love you right now "

She laughed . I did not find that amusing at all how could she say such a thing

Zim: hawu kutheni sisi ? why now with that face? I sat down

Me : why do I have to marry that guy why me out off all the royal girls in this country he chose me ?" \_

Didy : why not you did you see how hot you are you too look so good together lalela ... Stop this pity party you playing because umguni usekuthathile "

I looked at her and we laughed Dudu might be very odd but she always makes me laugh and make feel super ok

Zim : so lets freshen up and go to the mall and buy ice cream "

Didy : as all as you buying "

Zim: money ithi tata kumi dali "

We bust out and laughed

Me : where is Nwabisa ?

Didy : i don't know but she left her car maybe uka gogo"

I rolled my eyes and I went to take a shower while Dudu and Zim stood by the balcony this two bayawathanda amadoda they can't even see whose there but there amused by the fancy car's and how good the guys looked "\_

After I took a shower an lotion my self I gathered my strength to do my hair well I got long hair but mom decide I put a weave on its long black thick and curly have no clue what to do with it I just let it be decided to wear black skirt with slit on the side black and white long sleeve top black kicks i knew the girls will take forever to finish so I went to the kitchen and made my self a sandwich . . I wanted to get out of here the house was suffocating me and this hair was irritating I could not shake the dream I head it felt so real the pain and hurt I wonder if I will love Mvelo and he will turn around and brake my heart by being with another women or does he has another women already the fucked up thing about arranged



marriage is that there is no transparency ... So I may be getting my self into drama and heartache nje ... I sigh

Dudu : OK asambe "

Me : yoo you look too fashionable to be seen with me in public " she just looked at me

Zim showed up talking to her phone and when she looked at me

Zim: got an emergency to attend too will talk later"\_ she dropped the call

Zim: uqokeni ?"

Oh God not this again

Me : I'm not changing already I'm forced to wear a skirt because my in-laws are still in town so zip it nje "

Didy : sisi wami il teach you few things about fashion

I just gave her a bored look

Didy :

1st – never leave the house like you going ema” simini “

2nd – never wear clothes just to cover your body

3rd –you must learn dress an make a statement – usleye sisi !!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

Zim : yes girl " they high five

Me : I don't care angilahli angicoshi ... Besides my husband use Khethile khethile ..."

Zim : I feel sorry for this man kodwa "

We all laughed

Me : can we go before I change my mind "

I went to a garage and started the car the girls forced me to put shades on but I just used them to move my hair from my face

I love my moms car. It big manly black and so sexy its always a pleasure to drive bmwX6 SUV it just makes me look and feel powerful .

Dudu : hawu come on girl stop doing that to your hair "

Me : aish awume dudu iyashisa lento " I was scratching my head like a mad women and this hair was so irritating we drove off lucky the guards did not give us any hustle the old royal house across the road looked like they still enjoying left over food and booze from yesterday

Dudu : mtasi lets take a shot left ngaka nxumalo

Me : no ways "

Him : come on Sisi just to take a pick kuma guys alaphaya"

Me : guys I'm not going by Nxumalo BnB ... No!"

Zim : come on friend ... Its crowded and nobody

will notice us"

Well if they don't know when I say no is no today they will know I drove to the mall I looking at my friends all grumpy and I just laughed I finally packed at the mall

Zim : uyabhora shame Mgani "

Me : you promised me ice creams " I jumped out of the car with the car Keys I almost fainted when I bumped into some one...it a chest .... No ... Not that smell... his cologne

Can it be my husband ... No I left him behind ... I was to nervous to raise my head shit do I even look decent to be in public ? Ooh crap my had scarf ... And the bloody Blunkett ... Why did I leave the house I could hear my heart beat no no it his he is standing right in front of me I stepped back looking down it sign of respect right maybe just maybe he will not make a big deal out of my behavior his hands were on his pocket he was warring black jeans black top hold up his walking on foot ...I looked up I noticed that this was no top but muscle t-shirt his hair was lose thick and full of life he smiling and I could see a trace of dimples I looked in his eyes and I got lost I'm not sure if there hazel mix with grey and light

brown colour they hypnotizing I felt dizzy by looking at him it was not helping that his thick eyebrows with eyelashes that could cover you from the rain was also on show he had big eyes looked a bit lazy to open them today his smile widen and i could see heaven oh God is there anything wrong with lomuntu he has the most beautiful smile i ever seen his teeth white and his dimples complimented him .

Him : hi "

Me : hello

..

## **Chapter 14**

Mvelo /Trevor

Trey \*\*\*\*

I looked on social media and notice that my soon to be wife got followers now her life is going to be turned upside down some were hating on her and some loving her pics of Umemulo ceremony she got beautiful body I must admit ... I looked her wearing isidwaba and lot of beads that was

suppose to hide her breast but i could tell she had perfect cups

I smiled and looked at her other pics yep

I'm kind of stoking her I must say she's too boyish

I like that she does not do the smile thing that

girls do when they take pic take numerous pics

just to have that perfect one she will post my girl

here does the opposite

she just do a lot of crazy and funny face got me

laughing to my self I noticed that she's also not

that much of a phone user because she is hardly

on line and never talks ... Its like she is living under

a rock. I look at her number again and stop my

self from dialing it was already after mid night and

she got me wishing to here her voice ..

I just wish I could just have a few minute

conversation with her she is too shy and believes

in the laws of our tradition I wish she can be free

around me judging from this pics i see I can tell

she's funny and a breath of fresh air she is

different from the girls I have been with she is a

beautiful tomboyish kind of girl no wander Zoe

likes her she more of her type.

I'm eager to know her on personal level . I don't

know when sleep came but I was woken up by

loud laughter

I kissed my peaceful sleep goodbye as I waited for my door to open and boom the door swung open and Menzi and Nkonzo walked in

Menzi jumped me in my bed and hugged me is this guy crying ? For crying out loud?

Him :congratulations my boy .."

Me : what are you guys doing here "

Nkonzo : to light a cigar and say congratulations for getting the girl "

Me : what " he also hugged me

" don't light up a cigar to new Dad's the man just got engaged all ready you foresee a baby in his life " Bright walked in I dropped my mouth now that's the guy I got to jump and hug

Me : I thought you in Miami "

" and miss this.... fuck Miami " he said his even taller than me now

Menzi : I can't believe we race here "

Nkonzo : and I worn ... Ngicela ibhodlela lami "

Menzi : you basically cheated you riding a bike it doesn't count '

Nkonzo : you said who ever get here last izoncolisa itafula bike or car so pay up ""

Menzi : Bright you heard the man sorry "

Bright : how did you expect i race guys you forgot that i was in wheelchair for year because of car accident how do you expect I race without fear " I laughed seeings this guys in one room made me grateful of the company that i keep even though I know Mbali is behind it all she said it in passing last night and looks like she made it happened Honest fact I was shocked and excited last time we gathered like this was on my birthday last year and we partied for a month ... And that Got me in deep waters with my Uncle after...

Mbali bought breakfast and told me that Austin Gogo and mama are at the royal house something to do with a meeting regarding the ceremony to be held in few days time koki says its waist of money and want the Bhengu to agree to infuse that with the royal wedding I have no say in this stuff so I truest her and mama.

Menzi : she is hot bro "

They were looking at Sbahle pic on my phone

Nkonzo : and looks like the Memulo pics are in the net now ...she's got followers "\_

Bright : nami I want an arranged wife bro. I would not mind waking up next to lips like that every morning "\_

Menzi : you know what they say about women with thick lips ... They swallow it whole "

Bright : ooh brother that just gave me Bonner "

Me : Bright kuzonyiwa you can't be holding my phone and talking shit about my wife fuck off bring back my phone "

Bright : you know you got a women right there that will make you want to do sex tape with her and give it to your friends just to show off "

They all bust out and laugh

Zoe : OK boys enough about the Mrs Mnguni ....

Really is that how you see her just a sex object "

Zoe walked in wearing white track pants and vest

Menzi : mpintsi yami "

They hugged and she greeted every one else

Bright nudge me " who is she ..."

Me : my little sister don't touch her husband shoots first and ask question later "

Bright : I don't care ... I don't mind taking a bullet for such beauty "

Zoe waved her ring at him

Zoe : find your own ..." She took mbali plate and walked back to her room "

Mbali : Trey I told you I will make it happens step out and pay me my money \_I heard car tires



spinning and lot of whistling

Me : fuck no "

I ran out and yep it was the one and only my brother in law Sbu spinning his Red Gti "

Him : Pretty boy " he said jumping out of his car it true what they say you may rehabilitate a guy but you can't take the gangster our of him he looked like your typical tsotsi boy from elokshini

Me : I hate that name "

Him : I know" we bro hugged and he wished me congratulation

Him : told this fools I'm going to the Bay to skinny deep and they followed me hope you don't mind "

It was Two other car I heard Zoe scream OK its Langa Zoe husband and his brother Banz

The Dlamini boys with big cars damn really we took the chill session outside This guys were loud and now I fear what my in-laws will say about the company I keep .

Zoe and Langa decided to go to the beach

Sbu car was pumping loud deep house music cooler box and booze everywhere its not even 14:00 and already it part for days ..

I sent a text to Austin that he must take koko and

Mama to the hotel showed him a pic of situations and he agreed ...

I jumped into a shower later on took quick bath. I decide to were black cargo pants and muscle T-shirt while I was looking for my socks my phone ringing

" sir inkosazana iyaphuma manje "

I had bribed one of the Bhengu Guards to update me with any move that Sbahle will take I was not planning on leaving this place without engaging with her

Me : uthi uyaphi ? "

Him ; ezitolo ... " Shit! I ran out and stood by the road when i notice that her car was not driving this side I ran back to the yard

Me : shit "

Bright : smoko "

Me : iFro just left her house ... "

I jumped into Sbu car that was playing music and bright jumped in

Menzi : and then ?

Me : I coming back "\_ spread off

Bright : is she driving that beast "

Me : I guess so becaouse number plate is personalised as Ma Bhengu "

She changed lane and pass other car wow this  
Lady drives crazy

Him : I like her already "

I gave him a look

Him : what I like her for you ... She is my friends  
wife after all " I followed her and she drove  
straight to the mall she packed and I packed  
behind her i brushed my face with my hands and  
stepped out when I was about to knock on her car  
window she stepped out she looked so cute on  
her outfit she is showing a bit of skin as well she  
was laughing and bumped into my chest i just  
dropped my mouth open I taught I was imaging  
thing but my expression was much better then  
the girls with her they were totally drooling

Girl 1: ohhh my God his so hot ! " :

Girl2 shooooooooooooooooooooo!!! Don't spoil the  
moment "

I could hear them as the spoke but the  
intoxicating smile and beautiful girl before me  
who looks flawless with no make up

Girl 1: ohhh my God his so hot ! " :

Girl2 shooooooooooooooooooooo!!! Don't spoil the  
moment "

I could hear them as the spoke but the

intoxicating smile and beautiful girl before me who looks flawless with no make up she smell of fruit you know that girly smell Chanell no 5 perfume she was looking down she noticed my feet since I ran out of the house with no shoes on she slowly rose her head it was the most sexiest thing to look at slow motion it felt like I was looking at her for the fist time hold up I was infect she literally took my breath ways her mesmerizing beauty she has small eyes with thick lashes that made it look so exotic her pink pouted lips so juicy My words could not describe this angel in front of me she finally looked at me and for the fist time i saw how her eyes looked like there were the most sexiest thing ever seen I think I'm addicted to them I looked at her as she moved the hair from her face she did the frown with her mouth and that alone made me smile she stepped back from me and I finally breath in and out and found courage to say

“ hi “

Her : “ hello “

Ok that how her voice sounds like it a bit husky and very soft she looked down and blushed she too beautiful My Queen the women I will pledge

my inter life too I could not have ask for any better way to meet her this felt like me meeting her for the fist time

Me : how are you Sbahle “

She could not look at me she wanted the ground to swallow her I was not moving from here till we can finally engage on a topic or something

Her : “ ngiyaphila “

She bit her lower lip

Me : so you not going to ask me how I’m doing ? “

Her : “ oh ! im sorry ... how are you doing ... ? “

Me : “ nami ngiyaphila ... “

I stood there trying to think what to say next I studied her body language and respect her personal boundaries there is no reason to come off as creepy but I so wish that her small eyes can just look at me one more time . The most important thing I can do is to be respectful and follow her lead now Walking up to a girl you’ve never spoken to before is like taking a dip in an icy water It makes you nervous. But as a guy knowing how to approach a girl is one of the most important things to know in the dating world but I'm fuckin married to this girl so one way or the other we need talk

Girl 1:wow look who's blushing that must be a good sign "\_

Sbahle looked at her bored yep my wife got attitude

Girl 1 : hi my name is Dudu but you can call me Didy "

She extended her hand for a hand shake

Me :ooh hi " shook the hand briefly

Didy : wow your hands you have a tight grip do you work out ?"

I looked at this girl almost clicking my tongue and wish she could just stop with his nonsense

Sbahle :Didy please ...." \_

Me : nop I woke up like this " I said dismissing her I looked at Sbahle and side smiled she blushed and looked away

" I'm Zimkhithi "

Me : oh OK" I was getting bored can't I get just one moment with Sbahle without this fly I'm sure my face was evidence that I'm annoyed

Bright came to my rescue the minute they recognized him they went gaga on him

Zim girl " ooh my God Dj Bright "

Him : in the flash Nana " the screamed

And walked to him I breath out loud as in sigh of

relief

I hate girls who are forward and they were making Sbahle uncomfortable

I folded my hands and looked at her

Me : so ... I kinda of follow you here ...and I must say you drive like you running from cops or something "

She lifted her head to look at me OK I love how her face looks right now

Her : I do not ..."

She laughed I felt butterfly's in my stomach at least we getting to that chat now

Me : I don't know ... I even forgot to put on my shoes running after you "

She giggled wow she really has a beautiful set of teeth and that one big smile for minute there you could not tell she had small pouted lips

Me : wow she smile well I guess my work is done here "

She shook her head  
and our eyes locked

Bright : guys you will meet us inside "

zim and didy walked with him and Sbahle looked at there direction

I stood by her car resting my back on it i looked at

her

Me : well that out of the way so uyaphi mkami with this two ?" She did the face and I found myself laughing ...

.

.

To be continued

## Chapter 15

Sbahle

.

So here I was standing next to my so called husband who forgot his shoes while running after me konje why is he running after me vele ? Also I was not sure what he meant about why I'm here or why his calling me " mkami " aint we jumping a gun a bit he is too casual about us and this arranged thing we in while I debate on how must i put my guard down I have never had a one on one session with a guy before

I see his mouth moving his talking and laughing I pretend as if I'm listening I still do know what



expected of me

where do we start with this chat his in forcing what must I really do ? he all ready laughed at me when I give him my confused face well I have no control of that it just in my nature nje I do this faces when I laugh confused thinking or just being silly I hate it when people look at me and tell me how beautiful I am so I prevent such comments by pulling a face. His starring again and I don't know what his look is doing to me but I end up looking down Mvelo is young but he carries an aura of a grown man I'm not sure if its because of his tittle of being a king or what ? Or maybe there is more to that I'm not peaking up his very traditional this beads on his Wrist and sea shells.

Him : you drifting away again ... Why you traping your self in your own head I'm right here why don't you ask me anything so we can get this ball rolling "

I'm tongue tight right now shit I hate this

Me : may I please seat down " I finally say we have been standing next to my mothers car for a while now I feel like I will should strike a conversations with him should be seated I'm already disrespecting him for standing and looking

him in his exotic eyes.

Him : sure ... I'm really sorry you want to sit in the car or should we go inside "

I look at his feet and he bust out and laugh throwing his head back his top is lifted and I see his Ck briefs and this V-line on his lower waist his really muscling I found my self feeling uncomfortable.

Him : you can see I have no shoes on can we at least seat in the car I'll order something to eat or drink or better yet will go to drive trough "

I nodded I opened the car but he stood in front of the door jizz what now ?

Him : let's use my car please "

OK its officially he controlling I nodded and he open the passenger door for me of his car and I looked at him closely as he ran to the drivers side yoo muhle yena sexy buffed up and too arrogant yaah I notice the way he dismissed Didy and Zim he was rude yebo there are annoying but let me be the one to put them in there place not him I felt his hand on my thighs oh no he didn't

Him :been calling you ..."

I looked at hand on my thigh and at him.

He removed his hand shook his head wow his

annoyed he even has one eyebrow raised cute but I could tell his pissed

Him : Sibahle again I'm right here can you at least try to talk to me then to that little person in your head "

Did he just indirectly call me a psychopath ?

Him ; OK maybe its me I'm doing something wrong ... yini am I boring you ?"

I looked down if I disrespect him now who knows what he will do now ooh god help me now I rose my head and looked at him and smiled

Me : I have never done this ... Mnguni I'm really sorry you being here next to me is a bit uncomfortable "

Him : wow say that again " he was smiling from ear to ear hold up what did I do ?

I pulled my upper lip up and he laughed

Me : uxolo angisiswanga uthi uMnguni angiphindeni "

He brushed his well streamed bead

Him : my brother in-law once telled me that being called by yo clan name or surname by a women is just a beautiful feeling ... I like it "

I breath out loud ooh that silly of me

Him : and Sbahle try to relax I don't bite and I'm

not clued up about tradition and laws of arranged marriage right now I'm just a guy trying to talk to a woman I'm arranged to spend my life with so please don't be afraid to be your self "

I nodded its either his genuine about with this or its a trap I'm just going to keep my guard up for now till I know for sure

Him :Two Chicken grilled foldover 2 big Mac with extra cheese ..." He was ordering for the two of us did he ask me what I want to eat No ! He only asked if I'm allergic to anything next thing we in drive through ordering for me haybo will I ever have a say in this relationship?

Him : I hope you don't mind I orders for you "

Me : its OK " fuck yeah I mind ...but I can't even pin point anything that I don't like in here I will let this slide for now .. Just because he ordered my favorite food .

We drove out a parked at the bay looking at the sea I felt very calm I could breath the feeling I have right now its so amazing I don't know why I have this strange relationship with water

He looked at me smiled

Him : come " I opened the door an we set on the car bonnet the sea breeze got me closing my eyes

and taking it all in I felt like hamming a song I felt so alive .

Him : so tell me who's Sbahle "

I laughed this time around I was not faking at all I was relaxed

Me : that a direct question "

Him : shoot me for wanting to know about my Queen " the awkwardness that we had few minutes back was gone. I found my self relaxed as ever "Guess it's time for 20 questions" i joked and he laughed as well conversation was flowing even forgot that I'm arranged to marry him

What was he doing charming me by asking about my future gaols my friends my interests what I did for fun? Telling me funny stories about his life in the UK? I had always maintained that I would prefer any other country to the UK. It was too far from everyone I knew too familiar and alien all at once. But after eating a ton of food with him it did not seem so inconceivable. This was going seriously sideways. I was actually enjoying myself.

Him : my home is in the Ngonyama village but would spend most of my time in the UK so since you wish to study Law how about you attend the best university in the UK "

I did take Zoe advise and thought of studying Law even did a survey on my self trying to check if it the right career path to my shock it was But to decide the rest of my life should unfold I cab not say yes to anything now o can make life changing decision based on one meeting i just had with my future husband it will seemed unfair to me beside I was the one who would have to leave my home my family and everyone I knew. I was the one who would have to change cities countries and hemispheres.

Me : I don't know ..."

Him : you first need to see my home And you can make a decision there after how is that ? " \_

I just nodded

The day was interrupted by my phone ringing it was Nwabisa my heart skip a bit Nwabisa is straight as an an arrow and act like our mother

Her : ukuphi ? "

She mad she I shouting

Me : I'm in the mall "

Her : get your ass here your father wants talk to you"

Me : his not my father !"

Her : this not the time to argue get here now!!"

She dropped the phone on me I sigh and looked  
Mveli he had a concern look

Him : are you ok "

Me: yes I am ... I'm sorry but a have to go "

Him : come let's go wash you feet ' I had to take  
off my shoes as well so we can walk on the sea  
sure the feeling of his hands washing my feet felt  
so soft he took of his T-shirt and wiped my feet his  
body is sculptured ooh his chest big and broad he  
has tattoo of lion head on his left shoulder

Him : you like it ? " I smiled and nodded

I can't believe I just touched his shoulder

Me : why a lion heard "

Him : its represent the beat inside of me "

I was confused about his response but something  
in me told me his one with lion it was in his way  
he looked at me right now I just melted

Him : this feels like a Cinderella story when the  
clock strike midnight you have to go hone "

Me : the only twisted part is that I'm not leaving  
my shoes behind "

He laughed and we walked back to the car I asked  
him to drive he asked why and told him got mad  
love for sport cars

Him : you sure you not Zoe twin sister "

I laughed

Him : you two are so alike "

Me : funny because she said that as well "

We laughed I like Zoe too she just the kind if person I will hang out with driving a Gti with this horse power I was tempted to speed off

Him : I'm too young to die and we still need to make babes slow down please" I laughed and speed off the minute I parked he jumped out catching his breath

Me : you ok "

He just waved a hand at me holding on his knees i texted Didy that I'm in parking

Him : may I please see you tomorrow "

I looked down and nodded. What started as bed day turned out to be lot of fun we hugged OK that awkward moment came again

Didy : zim is drunk and I think bright fuck her the toilet so nje I'm pissed "

Bright : you know we could have had three some "

Didy gave him a finger

Bright : love you too Nana I will marry you you watch and See "

Zim : what ?"

Bright : you'll be me side snack "



Me : Zimkhithi asambe thank you light ... For hanging with them"

Bright : its Dj bright everybody knows me "

I rolled my eyes " well I don't but thank you any way "

Mvelo bust out and laughed w

Bright : you know you to deserve each other " \_I gave him the face like what ever we all got in the car Mvelo placed his elbows on my window his too close I could feel his breath on my face

Mvelo : thanks for today "

I just smiled " thank you too "

Him : safety first " \_he pulled the seatbelt and strap me all along I was holding my breath

Him : I'll call you later pick up ok "

I nodded he step back after saying goodbye and i drove off he just stood there looking at me drive away"

Didy must be really pissed she never keeps quite this long we found Nwabisa on the gate walking up and down " nivelaphi ?" She jumped in the car she was shouting and I was so tired for her drama when we walked inside the house we found my Aunts and my Mon on the sitting room "

Nwabisa : siyaxolisa ukubuya ngalesisikhathi we

misplace the car keys ..."

Mom laughed way to go Nwabisa that was not convincing and why is she saying we unless she wanted to use us as her decoy as well

.

.

to be continued ...

.

## Chapter 16

Sbahle \*\*\*

I just enters my room after telling Zim how disappointed I am with her and she was not drunk just tipsy she told me that she did not sleep with the Dj but they bamboozled around trying to make Didy jealous Because she was playing hard to get and the Dj really liked her I wanted to believe that so much but my friends track record with man is giving me doubt to this statement I took off my shoes I set on my bed and touched my foot and toes

" do you even use this to walk with "

" why do you say that ? "

" you got beautiful soft feet and Legs " he ran his hands on my leg

I smiled replaying that moment in my head I looked at my toes and smiled I still can not shake the fact that I had half naked man crouching before me wiping my feet with his t-shirt wow that something you only see in movies was I flattered oh fuck yes I felt like the princess that I really man .

There was something about his Tattoo that captivated me that tattoo kind of spoke to me in some kind of way I found myself touching it it made me see a glimpse of who Mvelo is I smiled thinking about today the way he paid attention to my every move kind moved me is some kind of way .

" mmmm my baby is smiling to herself .. Should I be worried " mom said standing by my bedroom door

Me : you so dramatic maka Sbahle "

Her : if you say so ... Come help me with supper "

I frowned

Her : woza and stop pulling your face at me "

I put on my sleepers and followed her

Her: baby today we had a long meeting with the

Mnguni "

I continued to grate carrots as she spoke

Her : Dlomvukazi says that the wedding is mid December "

I looked at her that in like two / three weeks from now

Her : I'm worried baby "

Me : mama that too soon "

Her : they is a lot you still do not know about being a wife or even being a Queen baby how am I going to teach you all of this thing in short period ? " she stooped what she was doing and set down

My mother worried that she had brought me up too leniently. She had encouraged me to study abroad travel and live a life different from hers. She hoped it wouldn't backfire now. She was asking me to consider the conventional institution of marriage topped off with the traditional customs of the arranged marriage.

My mother pointed out that she knows that the Ndlovukazi is a good women she prays that her grandson took after her she told me she had met with Mvelo Gran years back she had met her through my father and she believes this arranged marriage was orchestrated by my father years ago

. Everything she said was making sense they paid my uncle a fortune for him to agree in my hand in married my uncle did state that he doesn't know how the Mnguni knew about me or my existence but were willing to pay a fortune for me but why ?.

Her : Adulthood involved hard changes I'm sorry baby you have to go through this at this young age you in “

Me : I guess it life " I said in law voice nothing surprises me anymore about decisions that are taken about my life without my consent Ill just lay low and take the blows for now only God knows when will I ever rise from this .

I was deep in thought and did not realise that I was cocking a storm Looks like I took over my mother's kitchen because I was the only one cooking now she was to emotional and talking non stop about her doubts and fears of this arranged marriage

Her : I wish I can have a talk with that boy “

Me : “ his a king maka Sbahle and you know very well that our laws forbids that a mother in-law to have private meetings with the daughters husbands and worse his also king " She nodded

thoughtfully .

if I did not spend time with Mvelo today I would be thinking of running for the hills but he looks like a good guy but i can not base that on just one meeting I had with him There are no guarantees of success or failure to this arranged agreement . I understand my mother concern she will not be there I will be alone she wish she could give me her wisdom perseverance heart and knowledge of out customs .

In the end I decided to put my faith in myself I'm not a failure not a pushover I got power to rise in every situation I'm faced with at the end of it all I need to rely on me.

After cooking I dish up and set the table I was not hungry so I faked a headache and went to my room I took a shower I just washed my body and my mind took a wrong turn I started thinking about Mvelo his captivating eyes and smile and the way his face is always serious the guy never laughs his funny no doubt but focus and sombre he commands respect when he speak and that alone makes me worry about how I will control my opinionated mouth .

So here I was taking a shower because I could not

drown myself in the tub due to this fake hair in my head why do women put this shit on vele ? I clicked my tongue and tried to enjoy taking a bath standing which was very impossible I closed my eyes pictured the ocean but I saw powerful waterfall instead

“ you are ready never doubt yourself you Born to be a Queen Everything you want is on the other side of fear.”

This voice echoed I shoot my eyes open looked around it was not familiar voice but it was a female voice i opened the sliding door trying to see who is in the room with me but notice that I was all alone I jumped out took a bathrobe and rushed to my bedroom attending to my phone that was ringing my favorite song got me singing to it before I could answer

~~~

Shitted on 'em

Man I just shitted on 'em

Shitted on 'em

Put your number two's in the air if you did it on 'em

All these bitches is my sons ~~~

Me : hello “

“ hay ... did I call at the bed time ? “

Aagg ! its Mvelo made a promise to call back and he did ok tick for keeping a promise

Me : “ no I just got out of the shower right now “

Him : “ ooh hope you did not trip trying to answer my phone call “

I rolled my eyes as he snickered

Me : “fortunately I did not “

There was silence and I thought he was not there

Me : “ hello “

Him : “ I just had a talk with my Grandmother ... “

Me : “ oh “

It was so kind of him to called me and ask if I have given my assent to the wedding being moved to closer date . He wanted to be sure and to check with me that I had not been unnecessarily influenced I found it amusing

Does he know that I’m considered most headstrong by my family member im the one who could not be forced to do anything I did not want to do. I was moved by his consideration but yet again as a women in this household I have no say my first thought was to tell him that this marriage is not arranged but forced and I don’t want to go along with it but yet again that will only be fear



and insecurity talking what do I have to lose  
Mvelo has already promised me a new life to  
study abroad to be myself and point out my views  
my voice was always caged in this house and i  
have lived in my head so long that I made it my  
permanent residence it time to break free .  
maybe the dream was right I need to break the  
wall that shield my emotions.

Me : “ Mnguni does it matter at all when I will be  
getting married to you I can disagree with them  
and say it too soon but a year or two down the  
line it will still be hanging over our heads ...  
besides my mother speaks highly of your  
grandmother and I don't know what she wants  
the reunion to be so soon but I believe that she  
has only Good intentions “ I hope I said inwardly  
He breath out loud as if he was holding his breath  
that got me smiling.

We talked more about life and he told me that he  
has his friends over they showed up un  
announced to celebrate his engagement party I  
could tell by the noise that they parting Jesus man  
and alcohol

Me : “ how do you feel about all of this you never  
told me ? “ I was talking about the arranged union

Him : “ it came as a shock ... but I could not run away from fate ... I’m the last leaving man in my family I feel like I need to plant a new seed for a new family tree to grow for that to happen I need a queen / wife and mother to my children I’m too young for such responsibility but I learned the hard way that we do not always get what we plan to have in our lives “

Me : “ what might that be ? “

Him : “Most of us fantasize about meeting an amazing person dating her for a good time informing the parents about it getting everyone’s approval and finally tying the knot. That’s the definition of a perfect love marriage for many right? It’s the stuff of fairy tales and most dream about but we of royal blood our Future is written in the hands of the ancestors and elders ... our direction are shifted because destiny and fate “

I nodded as if he could see me

Him : “ hay I’m also scared nervous ... its my first time being husband to someone as well fuck I don’t even know what expected of me but I guess will need to work on that together what do you say ? “

I laughed

Me : “ I will like that “

We talked about general stuff hobbies and he got me laughing like a lunatic after 45 minutes we said goodnight I laid on my bed facing up smiling till the dream I had this morning came rushing back what did it mean? can the very same man who put a smile on my face seconds ago be the one who will break my heart in million pieces ? the portrait said it all I was heartbroken and he was hugging another reality kicked in we not in this for love its arranged.

my uncertainties and doubts about Mvelo swung from the ridiculous to the unexciting revelation I have only seen the sociable pleasant side of him. What if he was an Ex murderer? A possessive jerk? What if he did not give me room to breathe? What if he is in love with someone else a crazy ex ? What if he was disorganized? Or too particular? How would I have to adjust my personality to fit someone else's? Will I be able to live with this man? Will I be able to love him?

## Chapter 17

Trey \*\*\*

So after spending three days in Richards Bay I had to start work. My uncles instructions it was not easy running a multi million dollars company and shadowing my uncle from the looks of it it was big shoes that I got fill I'm grateful for Austin for making me do my articles on my 3rd year because what left to do now is to get my result graduat practice full-time I just had a taste of the coat room few days back and dam I loved it I'm exited being on the office feels so wow maybe its because its my first job but and I'm all hyped out about it. My uncle plays to win and leaves no stones unturned so I need to put more work to put my name on the mark . So its official I'll be working in the UK branch and making endless trip home .

My Wedding is in few days time and I'm flying back home as we speak I'll first need to pick up Zithelo from her mons house i was planning on spend this few days with my little princess I also need to find a way to tell her that Me and mommy are not together anymore and daddy is

getting married I hope she is not crazy like Pam and throw tantrum because I have no clue what I will do next last thing I ever wish to do is to hurt my little girl that's why I'm trying my level best to be the best dad talk to her everyday buy her gifts and always remember her favourite cartoon character.

I kinda miss my Queen the last time i spent time with Sbahle it was on the weekend of her memulo / Zibizo I wanted so badly to tell her about Zithelo and Sli but there was never a good time no moment she was a bit distance and cagy and I had to rush back home till this day I have no idea what me and Sbahle have today she is hot tomorrow we cold the next day we not talking to each other she challenges me and I feel like I have meet my match.

The few days I spend with Sbahle I noticed that my wife to be has temper for days yoooh! She quite no doubt but when she speak she spit venom she is hot headed she has wormed up to me and we talk a lot over the phone but damn she's crazy she is straight talker and does not sugar quote shit can you believe that it just been a week with her but we have fought a million times

she told me her terms and conditions of this marriage basically she put me in her lane I have never seen a girl who is not taken by my handsome looks you know every time when I get to close or flirt with her she put a wall and shut me out frankly I'm tired of trying I aren't the one to beg for love when she finally grows up I will be waiting for her she is my stubborn hot-headed crazy wife after all I told you that she no fragile lamp she the wolf itself under that beautiful futures .

I looked at her pic and smiled ooh how I wish I can watch her whole day whole night hold her and make her scream till the neighbours come knocking on the door but well culture say we have the wedding night to be intimate not that I'm after sex I really don't mind waiting till she ready.

Menzi : she like Sindy ... You can never win with her until you on top she needs a dick and she will show you respect " that what my best friend said but how can I initiate sex to a virgin who I have never kissed and we still waiting for the wedding night to take place next week . . which I doubt it will even happen at all ohh my feisty Queen bakithi .

I just arrived in Durban and was looking forward in seeing my daughter that alone put a smile on my face I was still not sure if I should stay with Zee in the UK or maybe leave her with koko home but either way I need her to be around family. I Have been having bad feeling that what ever Sli is going through is affecting my daughter Zee feeds on emotions that her gift she senses sadness and Channels it to happiness but she not getting trough to her Mom Silindile emotional imbalance is making my baby sick. She has been in and out of the Dr room and I have been fighting with Sli like world war three . it toxic what me and her have now who knew that me and Sli will be like cat and mouse cooperating couple.

I breath our loud as I stepped out of the plain I was jet leg and tired but just glad that I'm on leave work is taring again I need to control my calling on the other hand Koko need me to take the throne as in yesterday Zee needs a full time dad my crazy wife need my attention baby mama not speaking to me i have no idea how she thinks will cooperant with her attitude towards me ”

Jesus Trey you got problems “ Sbu will say.

So you all know what happened between me and

Sli we made love and I woke up the next morning to start something new with Sbahle weeks pass and i come back to claim my daughter Zee was sick and no Dr was helping her . my baby mama refused as in she bluntly refused I have never called her ever since a few weeks back when I came to check up on Zee we fought again and we had mad crazy sex after I walked away from her it was a mistake I know I shouldn't have but shit happens .

I call every time I get and I speak to the nanny and Zee only... Nola initiated that act said I don't need to confuse Sli I have hurt her enough and she need to move on. . . I don't know how that made me feel though sli moving on ... im just stuck between a rock and very hard place I wish I can officially brake things off with her but how when she is the mother of my child. I feel like when I walk away I'm killing her and when I stay I'm hurting her its just never win-win situation right now .

I'm being unfair to her and Sbahle ooh God if Sbahle funds out I'm screwed don't got me wrong I'm not scared of her but I respect my Queen . I parked outside Sli house the last time I was here



we fought like crazy when I told her I want to take Zee to stay with me next year ... Its only fair I mean she had three years to spend with her so I need my years with her as well funny because its few weeks before next year and I'm taking her to visit for a weekend spend time with her cousins ( Pam's kids ) I breath in and out as I stepped out I buzz the gate and the help buzz me in I knocked on the door the help let me in

Her : sir Mis is by the pool area but baby Zee is taking a nap must I wake her up ?

" no I will make may way to Sli " she nodded and showed me to the back yard Sli house was huge modern and deco was beautiful which makes me think how rich is this women i found sli on her white bikini her flat tummy out there for show as if she never fell pregnant her yellow body was wow she had shades on a book on her chest I'm guessing she fell asleep reading wow this sight here I wasn't expecting to see its leaving me with just imagination only small fabric is hiding her delicate parts I'm staring too much looking at her sexy body I'm hypnotised The thing is visual cues are a major part of the sexual response to man this is not about me wanting sex from her but just

to run my hands on her body and worship it her body still has a hypnotic power over me took me to the night when we conceived Zee shit I already have Bonner she moves her head and notice my presence ...I quickly put my hands on my pocket ." Ohh god " she said almost tripping of the lazy chair

Me : I'm sorry to wake you "

She frowned

She took scarf and wrapped it around her body

Her : its ok... Ill go pack for Zi"

She was about to walk out but i held her arm I

hate the tension between us and the fighting it got to stop sli has gone through a lot in her life and I hate to see her cry and especially if I'm the one who's making her cry

Me : can we please talk before she wakes up " \_

I lead her back to the seat and she took out her shades this women doesn't age at all I looked at her even longer than I should till she finally looked away folding her arms I cleared my throat

Me : uright?"

She just looked at me this is going to be hard

Women don't forgive as easily as men do but if your sorry statement are true and sincere then

you got your best chances to get a positive response

Me : firstly I would like to say I'm sorry "

Ever since sli came back to my life my world has been turned upside down its no lie that I love Sli of only she did not leave will be singing another tune right now I don't know maybe not I should stop thinking about what ifs its not helping in this situation at hand I ran my hands on my face in frustration

Me : how are you ? "

Her : I'm just like how you left me Trevor broken mad angry ... you came back into my life and you have the nerve to make me the other women " \_

Me : ooh that what got you all worked up "

I raised my eye brow

When shes mad she pulls her nose and pulled her mouth to the sided

Her : I know my worth uyezwa " she pointed a finger at me

I pulled her finger down and held her hand our fights never ends well

Her : I'm tired Trey ...I can do this with you any more... "

Her : do what ? ... Last time I checked you not the

other women you the mother of my baby ... So can we talk like civilized people and stop biting my head off because it turns me on ..."

## Chapter 18

Sli \*\*\*\*

I may be in deep sleep but I suddenly felt some one standing over me I slowly looked up and I was met by this tall buffed up guy with dreadlocks I first smiled thinking I'm a dream but soon realised that its Trey his here standing in front of me while I'm half naked

Me : ooh God " I stood up and covers my lower body

Me : aaah what are you doing here ? "

I wish I could wipe that smug on his face with a slap

Him : hi Sli" ooh God his doing again giving me mix signals I don't need this right now why is my lady part vibrating like this on his sound of his voice I finally have courage to look at him ooh take me Jesus his so Hot... Has he gotten taller now he was

looking at me shit i forgot to greet back fuck why must i? I'm still mad at him I'm angry infect I wish this hold he has over me can be broken here he was apologizing holding my hand sending electrical waves to my heart. He regret being with me I see it in his eyes he regrets sleeping with me I can tell by the way he with hold his face after he release inside of me he doesn't stay to cuddle. He must love this girl but holding on to me for what? yes we have child together we had unfinished business when I left but could it have ended like that ? just another unfinished business ? but I stood so low for the sake of love what example am I setting for my baby girl? I'm the women that makes him cause adulterer ooh God knows I never planned This illegitimate relationships it just happened when I was emotionally spent and my self-worth was on rock bottom I was lonely all the time and leave in this fantasy of me and Trey in love forgetting that being the other woman isn't just about keeping a secret – I am the secret."

Funny because this feels like day-javu to me I have been in this situation before and its happing again now . Both times the person had their foot out

the door already when I met them and I honestly didn't know one was in a relationship initially — they just never talked about their significant other. We were only friendly or binded by something

Both relationships ended with me being cheated on or for this instant me being kept a secrete I'd like to say it's something I deserved falling for it twice I really should have recognized the pattern but the circumstances at the start of both relationships were so different I hadn't put together that it was the same thing I believe Trey loves me he can not treat me like the previous man I use to be with but I forgot that Trey is a man also now .

His talking about taking Zee and I have no strength to protest he wants to build a happy family with his wife using my daughter I'm angry the girl is leaving my life I should be the one that walking down the Ilse with him I should be the one trending in social media and newspaper I should be the one trending in social media and newspaper I invested so much in him but came back with nothings

What does this Other Woman have that I don't?

Why is she better than me? Is it because she is younger prettier thicker richer sweeter sexier kinder better? I hate focusing on hating her because it only leads me feeling insecure about my self

I have seen her pictures she is sexy young beautiful and has status he post her pics on his social network he talks about her to his friends and family his what's profile pic its a picture of them together he loves her I see it in his eyes that the love he had for me is slowly fading.

I was really really jealous she the kind of girl you introduce to your parents I never thought about her when we were together. But I did when we weren't especially if he stood me up because his plans change and it will only get worse once he marries her

His phone ringed and he smiled he used to Smile like that to me.

Him : Ndlonkulu " he laughed and stood up turned his back on me. its her he talks like this to her. He respect her and speak deep Zulu to her

He use to call me by my full name lately I'm just Sli " fuck Sli you don't listen that your Problem " I wiped a lone tear that escape my eyes his coming

back

Him : I'm busy with something right now but will drive there so we can talk ... I miss you "

He laughed she must be comic to crack such joke I walked away my heart was braking I'm twisted between absolutely hating myself and hating her. I was jealous of her and I felt terrible about having such feeling but yet again when is my happiness coming ? I felt that by choosing to be with him I was actually choosing what kind of person I was and I didn't particularly like the person I was choosing but I really love him.

Him : I have to go please tell the nanny to drive Zee to Pam's place I don't want to wake her up now "

I was numb he knows that his sister hates me and I could not say no to that he hugged me and kissed my forehead he walked out taking piece of me with him but how do you make a man love you when you found him with his one foot outside the door already



## Chapter 19

Sbahle \*\*\*

weeks passed and I was still not feeling any better the wedding day was approaching my mom was so happy I can't say that about the rest of my family they believed that I was unfit to be a Queen I know nothing about culture yet alone acting like a women

“ I don't know what they saw in you uyosihlaza nje emzini “

that was the Bhengu Queen my grandfather's 5th wife she's bitter and always spoke shit about me “ you have devil's mark on your back kade ngasho ukuthi you and your mother are witches “ we all keep quiet and take it in should it bother me that she doesn't like me No fam I'm used to this I know that my father's side hate me and my mother the worst part is that they do not even acknowledge that my mother is married to the so called King they constantly treated my mother like a slave The bitter queen is Nwabisa mother she preferred we speak about Nwabisa wedding that is to happened next year or never happened at all looks like the husband she is arranged to marry is

not interested in this whole thing.

But we busy sugar coating the situation for her she must be glad that she educated and need to start building her life away from being the Bhengu royalty because that what we are just girls with name and status nothing special about that .

I don't mind when the evil Queen start bragging and making comments about her daughter I hated being centre of attention anyway but fact remains that I'm getting married to the most Handsome hottest coloured guy who looks like a model that got everyone in the going gaga on how he looks his wealth his accent my aunts will brag everybody believes and think that I'm the luckiest girl in the world to be engaged to Mvelo and already I have become a socialite over night with the Medea harassing me yep the Mnguni family is highly influential.

So Mvelo returned back to the UK We chat a lot which was easier than speaking with him face to face he had that aura and appearance about him that scared me a bit when I was around him.

I became more comfortable around him when we talked over the phone maybe it because of the distance that I finally let my guard down i get to

tell him everything about my screwed up life We Skype endless phone calls last week told him I wanted to do my hair and he told me to do braids I have learned that his controlling side is a more dominated side of him we fight a lot because of that yes FAM we fight and we never sleep without resolving our issues I like that he communicates with me a lot but his the most moodiest person I have ever known and very possessive but yet sweet king and living which I appreciated.

He suggested that in each phone call we make we reveal one thing about ourselves a like or a dislike a pet peeve or an characteristic. It did not have to be deeply personal only what we were comfortable with. The back and forth was refreshing. It's good to know that i know a glimpse of the man i will marry now Unlike our face to face conversations that were so awkward talking to him over the phone there were no interruptions and its went very smoothly.

But Still I wondered if Mvelo had any doubts He must have certain apprehensions about the way his life was about to change as well. I have notice that in his eyes lays deep secret about his life I sense this at the time we first meet in retrospect

this change of lifestyle must have been hard for him as well. . . what did he have to give up to feet me in his life he trying so hard to protect my feelings but always reassuring me that we going to do this and will make it work.

I was really fed up on seating around at my house Nwabisa was acting a bit cocky and not so nice this day I guess her mom got to her and I became the target as if I planned to marry Mvelo so I avoided her she always trying act and think she better than me yooo it's tiring to be here shame because I don't give a rat ass about her . Didy left with her mom going on vacation to cape town will only see her on my wedding Eve oh how I miss her we do chat a lot but its not the same with her not around its official my life in this house is boring. so I decided to take a walk

### **Sponsored**

its official my life in this house is boring. so I decided to take a walk I did not know where I was going but I decided to just walk till I feel tired I sat under the tree by the lake I set on the bedrock right at the edge of the lake. My toes dip into the water I busked on the solar energy and admired mother earth's beauty wow it was

beautiful indeed. I don't know what happened but I felt this cold chill on my body and when I looked around the sun was setting did I just sleep in the woods yoh way to go Sbahle.

I must have walked to far from home because it was a hell of a distance to get back home. Walking back home felt like a decade of torture on my feet I finally got home found my mother watching TV she stop everything and looked at me

Her : where were you ?" \_

Me: just went for a walk and lost track of time "

Her : kodwa Sibahle I was worried and you left your phone behind "

Me : uxolo maka Sbahle "

She looked at me in disbelief I could not tell her that a fell asleep by the river that was a story my mother will never buy Her : asibonge nje ukuthi lendoda ayikho or else we would have been talking a different story "

I looked down and nodded and made way to my room I undress took a bath and decided to read a book I was not even hungry at all my mother offered me food I just advised her that will eat later

My phone beeped it was Mvelo

Him :\_hi"

I smiled and type back " hi "

Him : I'm outside "

Ini ! popped my eyes what ?

Him : I told you I will see you today " I looked at my watch it was after 19:00

Me : tough you were talking about video call "

Him : woza ... Stop debating with me I just drove for 3 hours and I'm jet lag so ... Aish woza Sbahle please "

I took of my sleep wear

put on my above the knee long sleeve grey dress and sleepers my braids were let loose running the stairs I looked if mom was around and luckily she was not in the seating room i dashed to the door opened and breath out loud as I was about to reach the gate the guards did not give Me any hustle thanks God .

They opened the gate for me to my surprise

Mvelo was standing by the gate he smiled at me and waved at me to come closer I started walking with hesitation as I was walking towards him i noticed that he was wearing a light grey track pants and grey matching top and Adidas sneakers wow I guess Grey is the colour of the day. he

looked so Hot I notice his eyes piercing into my soul I looked away I just could not handle the intensity in his look.

Him: hi

He smiled and I smiled back and looked away

Me: hi what are you doing here ? “ he engulfed me on a hug and whispered in my ear

Him: I came to see you "

Me : thought you still in the UK "

Him : well surprise "

I giggled .

Me : I’m not supposed to stand in the street with boys you know "

He laughed and put his hands on his pocket

Him: but I’m not just any boy I’m your fiancé"

He loves Acknowledging that his my fiancé and it's going to be worse once we tie the knot

Me: still my mom will chop my head if she finds out I was standing on a street with my fiancé who happens to be a boy"

He laughed

Him : you to tense what's up "

Me : I’m not I’m just not used to this “

Him : “ there is still a lot I need to teach you then “ the way he said it kind off a gave me tingles on

my spine His his eyes were piecing in my eyes he bit his lower lip I felt a sharp vibrations in my body He moved closer to me I stepped back and he kept on moving closer till I put my hand on his chest to stop him

Me: what are you doing ?”

his chest felt like a brick I could tell that his ripped up I felt I quickly moved my hand from his chest he lean closer to me he places his mouth on my ear and he whispered

“ you are so beautiful “ and he blew air in my ear and I stepped away I smiled at him . just when I felt little butterflies tingling me he unlock his range

He opened the passenger door and looked at me Him : I don't want to get you in trouble with your mom so can we get away from here"

I looked him and did not know what to do it was late he handed his hand to me my heart was jumping so fast I walked towards the door and snatched the keys from his hand

Me: I'm driving "

Him : no non no! you trying to kill Me like the last time ... No lethta " I shook my head as he chaise me around the car



.  
.

To be continued ...

## Chapter 20

Sbahle \*\*\*

After running few laps around the car he finally gave in and jumped into the passenger sit I winked at him and he shook his head looking confused on what just happened I jumped in the car I was so excised I was driving a Range I was touching everything and admiring the car everything in here was top notch this car was pimped up I must admit I looked at my self in the mirror and all along Mvelo was staring at me

Me: what ?

He laughed

Him: will I ever have car that I will call my own once we married

Me: well what yours is mine hubby “

We laughed

Him: just drive please before I serve you with

prenuptial agreement “

I stated the car and I looked at him

Me: so where too ?

He punched in the navigator

Him : “ follow the white ladies voice “

I bust out and laughed

I drove off and along the way we stated talking I felt alive and I smiled and laughed Mvelo told me about his childhood life and how his life was he says that my home town reminds him of the northern west where he grew up really this man does that place even have an ocean?

Me : “ so you were not born with silver spoon ? “

Him : “ Nop I only knew about my True identity when I was 18th “

So he did tell me about his calling and frankly I never found it as a taboo I'm a typical African girl from Zulu land I know this things just that I have never took time to fully understand them but I can never say that you evil or devils worshiper if you have an ancestral calling My father used to foresee the future and that gift was passed trough generations I have dreams that I believe are part of communication of something that is about to happened talking about my dream I looked at

Mvelo and debated if I should tell him about it or not “ you have arrived at your destiny “ the white lady disturbed my thought

I parked the car when I arrived at the destiny I looked outside

Me : sikuphi ? “

it was development estate new houses where being built here

him : “ come and see “

I jumped out of the car he held my hand and we walked to one of the houses the house was complete smelled of paint and wood there was no furniture but it was beautiful there was setting on the middle of the room it was candle lit dinner rose petals on the floor and silver leads covering what’s ever that was served

I held my mouth I only see this things in the movies

Me : “ ooh my God “

Him :” you like it ? “

Me : “ when did you get time to do all this ? “

Him : “ I’m a man full of surprises don’t underestimate me “

It was indoor picnic kind of thing rug and cushions on the floor

Me : “ who’s house is this ? “

Him : “ you have lot of questions come lets eat “

He held my hand and made me sit down

he set down opposite me and looked at me he was about to open the lead but I stopped him

me : “ ima let me take a pic first “

he bust out and laughed I took pics and posted it caption – surprise dinner from my king my phone started buzzing like crazy yoo this vultures are responding now ...

him : “ you know that when we get married you need to have a handler “

me : a what ? “

him : “ aish I give up with you ...you are too rural “

I hit him with rose petals and he laughed food was really good it was mostly meat pastries and grilled vegies we ate over light conversation and laughs and wow the chocolate moose was heaven every spoon full I will just close my eyes and allow it to melt on my mouth

him : “ I want to tell you something “ I looked at him

me : “ what “

he stood up and scooped me up

me : “ uzongiwisa Mvelo “

him : ooh come on relax I got you “ he looked into my eyes and I smiled I placed my head on his neck we walked outside

The last time a man ever carried me was my father he loved giving me piggy back rides and to be in Mvelo arms right now just made me replay those days when my life was so simple honest fact Mvelo makes me happy I’m laughing a lot and talk a lot this days he just brought a lot of change in my life the anger I use to carry on my shoulders was lifted off . he placed me on the car bonnet of his car and he slide on top and laid next to me we watched the stars while he played with my hand

him : “ tell me something .... Have you ever been in love ? “

I turned my head and looked at him

Me : “ why do you ask ... “ I was derailing the question that what I do when I don’t have an answer or have no clue how to answer his direct questions

Him : “look I’m no expect in such things... “

Me : “ but you have lived to experience It ? “

Him : “ we not talking about me Sbahle “

Me : “ well I am “ he set up straight and raised his

eyebrow his irritated I could tell

Him : “ Sbahle ! “

Me : “ Mnguni “ I saw his mouth curving into a side smile I enjoy pushing his buttons like this he started tickling me

Me : “ no ... mvelo “ he was on top of me

Him : “ you know the things you do to me “ a volcano irrupted in my stomach this feeling was back every time when he gets to close I have this foreign feeling his phone rang on my lap he got of me and slide next to me

he took it out the name Sli popped up on his screen his body tensed up I sense that he debated taking the call but reluctantly answered running his hands on his face

Him : “ hello “

As much as it will be interesting to ears drop and finding out about who is this Sli person calling him at this hour I felt it will be right if I give him space I tried to slide off the car but he held me close

Him : “ I’m not home call Pam “

...

Him : “ I’m not doing this with you right now !“

...

Him : “ who’s fault is that ? “

...

Him : “ what the fuck!!”

...

Him : stop using emotional black mail it does not work on me “

his voice gave me shivers ... I thought I pissed him off but this Sli person is making me see a side of this guy I have never seen before he dropped the call after back and fourth of shouting I was still scooped under his hold he looked at me with his eyes red he slide back and pulled me to lay on his chest he breath out loud I wanted to ask him who was that and what was the call about but was afraid of his reaction

Him : “ I need to tell you something “

My heart skip a beat his heart is raising his about to have a heart attack too I set up straight and looked at him.

Him : “what’s wrong ? “

I looked at him and I could tell that he was struggling to tell me this I had no doubt in my mind that it has everything to do with this call he just had strange enough It killed me to see him look this stressed he was laughing and goofing around with me few minutes ago and now there is

this wedge that is weighing him down

Me : “ please talk to me “

Him : “ two months back I found out that I had a child ... a daughter “

I breath out loud

Me : “ I know ... “ he did not hear me he was rambling and talking to fast he was not making any sense

Him : “ I swear to god I did not want to keep this from you I know it was wrong of me to do so every time when I tried to tell you the words could not come out ... “

Me : “ I know Mvelo ... “

Him : I lost three years in her life because her mother actions it was selfish of me to keep this from you I know ... its like I contradicted my self by saying that we should tell each other everything but I turn around and keep stuff from you ... I’m sorry “

Me : “ I understand ... “ he was not even listening to what I was saying he was talking with his hands and suddenly he stopped and looked at me

Him : “ what did you say ? ....”

Me : “ I know about Zithele “

“ how ? who told you ?.... Instagram ? “ I shook



my head

Me : “ Zoe bit you to it she made me promise that I don’t confront you about it and you will tell me when you ready “

Him : “ how long have you known “

Me : “ ever since the first day I meet you “ |

Him : “ shit ... I'm sorry for not telling you “

Me : “ I understand ... “

there was a moment of silence we laid there in the car bonnet looking at the stars he was lost in his own thoughts so was I I never thought that I will be a stepmother at the age of 18 which made me have multiple questions about This unknown woman would she be the primary caregiver to his baby? she would always be in this little girl’s life and more importantly she would always be a part of Mvelo life. As selfish as it sounds this stranger was suddenly more important than me they created a life with Mvelo they had a bond together Part of me also worried that they might end up in a romantic relationship together i mean They slept together not once not twice a multiple times until they conceived a baby and now that they were parenting a child together what would stop them from getting sexual again? ... if They

aren't already in one . . . oh god what have I  
gotten my self into

.

.

to be continued

## Changes 21

Sbahle\*\*\*\*

I'm biting on my lip and my thought are bouncing up and down like tennis ball I'm stuck in my heard nothing seems to make sense ... you know People get stuck in their heads all the time – some of us more than others. Although it's lovely to ponder life and inquisitive about the situation at hand i keep asking myself what kind of game is he playing ? are they fighting because of me ? why did she keep the baby from him ? is he in love with her ? Why is this happening now when I feel some kind of a way about him. Is there an us? Will there be an us in the future ? or we just going remain as two people in the arranged Union. . . question ... question ... no answer to them all .

Maybe I should hear him out maybe he will answer my question ooh God there is this other factor or issue of him having a child with another women I thought I was ready for this but I'm I really ? What am I saying its not up to me or us we are arranged we a porn in the alders game they need my egg to grow his bloodline.

Will his child blame me for the rest of her life I'm the cause that her parent are not together she will never be with both of her parents under the same roof and while that's not all that rare this situation is particularly strange and heat braking I know this for fact from experience I hated my uncle for taking over my father's house after my father died so how will Mvelo baby act around me when the truth comes out that I broke up her parents ... is This history repeating itself ?

Ooh God and worse part is that her parents would be on friendly terms and she might struggle with knowing that she wasn't particularly conceived out of love or was she ? . How would this child view her parental situation when she is old enough to understand? Was it one night of stupidity or was it passionate love making that made her ?

Me : “ who is Sli ?” I knew the answer to that but I wanted to confirm my suspicious  
I finally asked my voice was barely audible  
He lifted his upper body and rested his elbow on the car window and his head on his hand he looked at me for a long time his eyes glow this time I felt something in me I felt a need to be with him my stomach did back flips and I felt a wave of unknown feeling his look made me have short breath my heart beating became abnormal my mother warned me about this  
“ when you feel it you will know “  
I then knew that im screwed I have fallen for Mvelo his flaws his imperfection did not mean a zilch in me any more he lowered his face to mine I breath in her breath I felt the time stopping or was it my heart.

Him : She is the mother of my child "

Me: girl friend ? " \_

Him : No ... " he breath out loud

“ can we not talk about this ... Not today please ”  
he rubbed his nose on mine I pushed him off me a minute ago we were going about our business happily in your relationship when suddenly there's this issue at hand ... it stated to shift

everything Maybe it's something he don't want to say — or the way his avoiding it — but there's a little tickle in the back of my mind that says something's off. my instinct maybe its my subconscious is setting off alarm bells that his being not totally forthcoming. I have never been in situation like this I'm not sure if I should override my gut feeling or maybe I'm being paranoid which is why I'm asking myself what else is he hiding from me i felt my throat getting dry I wanted to get away from him I need his car keys .... I walked back to the house I set down I took appletiser and drank from the bottle what does he mean we must not talk about this not now ...? the problem is that the majority of my thoughts are not so upbeat they don't have the answers I seek . When I'm in a mind-wandering mode / “in my head”\_ thoughts usually turn to the brain's default mode network which means that the brain literally defaults to this kind of worry-based of thinking too much yes I know about my condition I spend years in a therapist room to catch up on fast on the medical teams and I'm in that state again when I feel numb  
Him : “A wandering mind is an unhappy mind.” he

sounded far but yet near I wanted to answer him but the voices on my head made me close my mouth

Him : Sbahle come back to me " I looked at him he was sitting next to me his worried

Me : I'm sorry " I remembered im looking for keys i was not planning on talking any further he remained sited and looked at me.

Him : Sbahle ...talk to me please "

Me : " Mvelo you said you don't feel like talking now so I'm giving you time "

I got lot of questions but I'm afraid of the answers I will get yes I knew about his daughter but never thought the mother is in the picture yet alone they communicate this feels like a love triangle what I am even saying he don't love me he tolerates me because will spend years together because of this marriage but now what must I do with this feelings I have for him he snaked his hand around my waist and pulled me to sit in between his legs

Him : I'm right here with you don't allow your mind to wander off... Reason I don't want to talk about her is because she Is my past but she is in my life because she is Zee mother my relationship

with her is complicated okwamanje as you heard for yourself "\_

he pulled me to him and I rested my head on his chest I love how his touch makes me relax

Him : I have a past Sbahle like any other guy my mistake made me the man I am today I'm not perfect most probably far from being perfect ... "\_

Me : are you in love with her ?" \_

He breath out loud

Him :Fate hadn't been kind to me. For so long being in relationship was an unrequited feeling an unreturned text and an unresolved ending. . .Love was a one-sided fight against the overwhelming odds that I would eventually lose. Love was me trying in vain to hold onto a relationship that was past the point of saving....

And so after many bitter tears and heartbreaking experience I wanted a way out. I was content being by myself. I thought if love wasn't meant for me maybe I shouldn't fight against it. I started to be my own company instead of yearning to find someone. I slowly learned to be okay with myself instead of needing someone to be there for me. I was more concerned with guarding my heart and not getting hurt than anything else...."

Me: you sound broken "

Him : I was ... Until I meet my daughter

She turned my world upside down and blew my mind in the most unexpected way. . . "

Him : she is the innocent soul she did not choose to be born in the world where people fight hate and use her for there own personal gain "

He breath out loud

Him: I vow to protect her from all of that I believe that if she has my heart it will be safe with her because she had never experience heart break... "

I wiped my tears that was so sweet

He turned Me around to look at him

Him : have you ever fall in love ? "

This question again I looked at him and shook my head No

Him : Zithethelo is to young to safeguard my heart but since you innocent and pure like her my you safeguard it for me "

I buried my face in his chest ooh Lord why is he doing this to me

Him : Ndlonkulu "

Me: mmm"

Him : will you do that for me ? "

Me : I'm scared ... "



Him ; im scared to but i trust you i trust the people who sacrifice their lives for us to meet my father went on suicidal mission dumping me and sister on the side of the road to survive. Your father allowed another lion to do a take over in his pride challenges you went through prepared you for a guy like me I'm so glad and relieved that my path had been leading up to meeting you and falling in love with you. The past lessons were painful yet timely to teach me what I need to know so that I can be the best version of myself before I could love you. I know how right we are for each other because I know what it was like being with the wrong one. I feel blessed everyday to be with the person that I didn't dare to dream I would meet. . . she was chosen for me but I soon realised she was a missing puzzle in my life " \_ I looked at him and to my surprise his eyes told Me that he meant every word he just said he ran his hands on my face

Him :

I'm not an affectionate type those who happened to be in my life they may tell you how much of jerk I am and you just shaved off my mane" \_ I laughed Am I ready for this ? His my first

boyfriend and I don't know shit or rules of engagement how will this work his eyes were still looking at me they glow in the dark I felt my body heating up and my stomach turning into knots he was breathing on my face and he is to close his nose touched mine

Him : " I'm going to kiss you now ok " he said just few inches from my mouth and before I could protest and run for the hill felt his lips on mine

Me : I don't know how to ..." I said softly He smiled and gentle suck my bottom lip it felt good he took the lead to explore my mouth Sucking leaking and moaning I started feeling very funny My body was on an adrenaline rush my heart rate definitely speeding up ooh God I'm having a heart attack I suddenly could not breath my breathing pattern was getting heavier and louder ooh god did I moan he pulled out slowly packed my lip and nose I catch my breath and held my chest

Him : Don't worry you're not dying it's just the excitement and nerves your body is feeling when our lips meet. It's a good feeling so don't panic. Enjoy the adrenaline and all of the weird things going on in your body "

I looked at him and blushed I just kissed boy ...

And I like it he pulled me to his arms  
Him : you just had your first kiss ...with your  
husband ..."

I looked at him and we chuckled

Him ;\_

I love you Sbahle Bhengu ...”

.

.

.

To be continued \*\*\*

## Chapter 22

Sbahle \*\*\*

I heard the door opening she stood by the door I  
heard her heavy breathing

Her : Sbahle ...yakhohlwa that I was once your age  
"

I faked yawn which turned into be a real yawn

Me : morning ma ka Sbahle "

Her : where were you last night ? "

Me : ma ? " I rubbed my eyes

Her : I know you were not here last night ... “

Me: aybo ngingayaphi ebusuku wadlala ngami ? "

She looked at me for a longest time I made sure my bed covers covered my body only showed my face

Her : the sun is up go take a bath and help me with breakfast "

I frowned and looked at her

Me : don't we have maids to do that "

Her : I'm a wife before I'm am queen girly and the kitchen is my place... Awuvuke "

Does this women know how sleepy I am bakithi

Her : and if you going to sneak out of the house my girl try to the evidence so you will not get caught"

I looked at her all puzzled

Her ' nobody sleeps with ugg sleepers vuja and go take bath and tell me ukuthi uphumaphi "

I dropped my mouth looking at my shoes fuck I can't even hide evidence that I was not home

She walked out laughing while I just hit my forehead I lifted the bed covers and breath out loud I ran my hands in my mouth and smiled

Mvelo and i spend the whole night talking kissing and just being I our feeling I can not believe I fell in love when I was just 18 and I will never forget

the moment it happened my feeling became stronger in that new development house where it all started as surprise dinner date to romantic night that i will forever replay in my heart and head after he told me how he feels about me I could not help but to see that his genuine about this I still have my doubt about him but last night I let my guard down and followed my heart we were eating and kissing and tracing the lines on each other's palms — talking about the future about college about all of the unknowns. . . he has everything plan out which scares me because I have learned that plans can have the most unexpected shift. What will happened then when you only have plan A and no backup . he will sometimes stop look at me and squeeze me to a hug he has said he love me so many times that I lost count him : "Even if one day you regret to be in my life and thinking of leaving me " he'd told me arms tangled around my waist Him"I hope I get to shake the hand of the man gave you life because his creation is a gem indeed "

As much as I have left s huge part of

disappointment in me about us. About him at that moment that statement was. Just bullshit this man before me is my husband and I plan to be with him we passed out in each others arms and was woken up his heavy breathing he was in deep sleep but the dream he was in was making him shake and grind his teeth I shook him softly his eyes lazy open and he smiled when he saw me and kissed my forehead it was already morning and there was no time to look st my dreamy in front of me I had to go back home

Him : I'm going to miss you "

Me : I'll miss you to now let me go before I get into trouble "

We kissed for the longest time leaving me panting out of breath ..

Him : I love you "

Me : I love you too ...' His teeth are my weakness for a man who never smile or laugh his fa e comes to life when display his teeth I tip-toed into my living room the coast was safe sneaked inside I knew mom was going to check up on me it was already after 5h00

so I jumped in the bed and covers my self so yes FAM I spend night with a man and it was so

magical ..

After taking a bath I looked at my self in the mirror so yes FAM I spend night with a man and it was so magical ..

After taking a bath I looked at my self in the mirror ran my fingers on my mouth and smiled " I wish I can just stay in your lips mmm sthandwa sami ungiqabula kamunandi " I giggle and and walked out its official Mvelo is my new drug " you know they just told me that its Gold and white " I walked in the kitchen minutes later Mom was speaking to one of my aunts "Thabi " she the sweetest and very close with mom Mom is still upset that Veli ( Mvelo's Aunt) is handling everything on her own I have no clue how the wedding dress looks like but Zoe told me that she the best event organizer ever

Me : maka sbahle stop worrying "

Her : sbahle its your wedding I have to ... Your in laws are not involving us one bit "

Aunt T: akathumeli ngishi esisodwa isithombe lesi "  
—

Mom : and a week from now my Bby will be walking down the isle "

""\_ awu saze savelelwa ulomshado bo !! you wake

up you hear about it you sleep yizo lezo kanti  
kiyaqala yini ukushada leykhaya !!!'

Mom : awu sawubona ma.... Siyaxolisa " \_\_

The bitter queen mother walk in she hates our  
guts but she is always in my fathers house eating  
our food she looked at me

Her : awusabulisi manje "

Me : sawubona Ndlovukazi "

Her : aish this thing of yos nontombi cant even  
greet me with respect nxayi suka ..."

I opened my mouth but looked at my mom she  
shook her head

I absolutely hate my grandmother and I want her  
to either go to a nursing home or die ... Oh God I  
was on better mood few minutes back but the  
moment that women opens her mouth ooh I felt  
my blood getting hot feel like a horrible person  
for felling like this and I know my father is  
probably rolling on his grave right bow but I have  
to vent before I freak out and say and do  
something I shouldn't. I hate my grandmother.  
There I said it. She's the most repellent person I've  
ever known and I feel like I'm wasting my energy  
by giving her any attention.

Me : may I please be excused"



Mom nodded I ran to my room banged the door

.

Trey \*\*\*

Its morning Wait its afternoon and I found my uncle standing by the window I must had have 2 seconds of sleep because I still feel tired I didn't even make it to my bedroom I just passed out on the coach. Driving from Sbahle house was bed idea but I had to be home to spend some time with Zee

A flash back of dream I had made sit and think of what it meant

it got me worried I can't shake the feeling that Sbahle life is in danger

Him : you look like you have seen a ghost

Me : " aish Just a dream I had " I ran my hands on my face "

Him : mmmm

Him : what you doing here ?" \_

Him : business ... How was your night with your wife "

I smiled replaying last night events I set up straight

Me : Have you ever felt an overwhelming sense of familiarity and joy upon meeting someone? "

He just folded his arms and looked at me

Me: it felt she was someone from my past life i felt connected with her spirit

I finally feel understood fully and completely. I feel like I can be my goofball self around her and she won't judge me. In fact she embrace and accept me unconditionally. I feel totally comforted and complete looking into her eyes as if its me and her are one and the same like i have connected with her soul to the core. "

Him : OK lover boy I get you ... If I knew you will be this detailed I wouldn't have asked "

We laughed

Him : are those perhaps your wedding vows ??'

I rolled my eyes at him and he chuckled I walked to my room took shower Sbahle laughter filled the room and the most strangest thing happens in the shower. The water started a circle movement and not going down the drain I knew gogo Ndoni wants to tell me something I then notice Sbahle standing on the cliff she looked at me and smiled and she jumped down I ran after her and saw a big wave of water that look like her face ...

when I came out from the bathroom I set on my bed the vision was not clear .... It confused me like

the dream i had this morning I need to See mama today she might share some light after dressing up I found my uncle reading some documents he had a frown on his face

Me : what's up?" \_

Him : “ duty calls I need you help me with this case “

He pointed a file at the table

Me : “ im on leave planning a wedding and need to spend time with my daughter. So this need to wait till I get married "

Him : “ its more of your league embalment Froude corruption you know all that jezz and a whole lot of tax money that not paid “

Me : shit !" \_ I could not say no to that. Business law was my speciality

I rubbed my hands together all excitement

Me : “ who are putting away ... “

Him : “ your father in law “

I dropped my mouth as in what the fuck

Him : “ I knew there was something dodgy about him " \_

Me : so you decide to dig up dirt "

Him : it something that Banzi said that got me thinking "

I looked at him

Him : his account is too clean ...which means his hiding something "

Me : " there is more to this than what you telling me " I looked at him

Him : " of cause there is but that not your business find loop whole and take him down ... "

Me : " ahh malume I kinda of promised Zee that I ... "

Him : " I trust you with Trey ... I font want that man to be part of of our family his rain ands now ... ' "

He stood up took his car keys

Him : his planning something and your wife may be a porn in his game I don't want to spill any blood because your conscious . . . you in the big league now act like a lion that you are " \_\_

I nodded ....

.  
.

.to be continued ...

## Chapter 23

4 day before the wedding

Trey \*\*\*

My wedding day is approaching and I'm ball of nerves. I'm one minute happy and the next I question my self if I deserve a person like Sbahle I have been to busy to go by her house and visit her and to be honest I miss her like crazy we text and call each other but its just not the same. And now I can only see her on our wedding day since she is under 24 hrs lock down.

I really love sbahle her her physical appearance do not match her worn soul she is the mist beautiful girl I have ever seen my type as well thick thighs small tummy and big ass is a bonus yoo she is so sexy .. Infect she the full package to me but not once I have ever lusted over her I like the deep connection I have with her we talk and she is good listener and dahm smart too her advise are always spot on she puts me in my place all the time she is matured for her age and her worm nature and strong courageous side makes me see he as a fighter she no push over she is just unique ... Shoot me for saying this again I don't care " I

fuckin love that girl" she is that special  
Someone who just walked in my life and sweeps  
me away. The normal I once known is no longer  
the same as it used to be Things started changing  
and I didn't realize when it actually did but notice  
how perfect the change has been. My family and  
friends look at me all amazed and are happy  
about this change in me . I wonder how can  
someone so young so Innocent have such an  
effect in me Someone who was not even present  
leave aside being called a stranger. Someone  
who's one sight just filled my mind with happy  
thoughts she is that someone who's presence  
makes me nervous and happy at the same time.  
Even when she is so far away her presence i still  
can feel I smiled and sent her a text telling her I'm  
thinking about her place my phone aside because  
I know she not the type who walked around with  
a phone on her hands yep my girl is antisocial Like  
that

" I'm sorry I'm late had to drop the kids ... "

He stopped looked at me and clicked his tongue  
Him : what the fuck am I apologizing for ? you  
disturbed me on my week end get away with my  
family Mnguni ! "

I laughed I was in Pretoria on business and Kevin is busy man to score a meeting with I have been running after him for days now and he still tells me shit but I'm glad he could make it

Me : Mr Smith I'm really sorry but i won't have called if it was not important "

Him : hay futsek ...address me by my name I'm not in a suite "

I laughed and called the waiter to take our drinks while handed him my proposition.

Kevin Smith is Married to Zoe Aunt and he the shark in the Courtroom his firm is small but big in profile his firm never looses a case and he only deals with high profile cases so high coat is his second home basically

Him : this is serious. " he looked at my proposal and whistled and looked at me

Him : what must I do with it "

Me : put him down ... For a long time "

He set back and looked at me

Him : why you not doing it . clearly you have everything to take him down "

Me : his my father in law ... "

He took a sip on his drink

Well it was not hard in collection evidence to take

down Bhengu the man is just careless and left lot of bread crumbs so my PI found our more then I was looking for and Taking him down will be like taking candy from a baby to be honest the guy never covers his tracks but I feel sorry for the guys that are connected to him because they going down with him also

Him : this are high profile people "

Me : its more of kind of a thing ..."

I have compiled evidence that will take him down for long time I was planning on looking him in the eye when I do it but it will be conflict of personal interest so another firm must do the Horner's

Him : what in for you "

Being in the legal field have made understand that favours are done for more of a personal gain. My uncle was right when he said I need act like a lion so I'm planing a hostile take over of Kevin firm not now though but in few years time. I like how he works and the Durban branch is missing that ...so I need him as partner .

Me : Kevin come on we practicality family why would you think of that "

My poker face did not give him any ideas but I know that he will will do an investigation on me



but bummer for him I'll be in the UK...he relaxed a bit and started talking business ... And he finally agreed. . .

Me : nice doing business with you "

Him : like wise " he took the file and his phone after shaking my hand but bummer for him I'll be in the UK...he relaxed a bit and started talking business ... And he finally agreed. . .

Me : nice doing business with you "

Him : like wise " he took the file and his phone after shaking my hand he stopped and looked at me

Him : I'm going to keep a close eye on you Mnguni "

Me : I expect you to do just that" he shook his head and walked out

" one down ... "

I sent a text to my uncle

Him :good ... You know what to do next right "

Me: I'm on it "\_

I got in my car after I left the restaurant my phone ringed and connected to the Bluetooth

" Trevor you ... You took my child to Ngonyameni Village ... With out telling me !!!"

Me : I don't repot to you about my baby "

Her : you know that I'm back in town and you decide to ship my child across the country !!!"

Me : well we don't revolve around your busy schedule sli do your speech or what ever stand up shiy you do and stop blowing up my phone as if I ow you something " she stated crying shit not this again I just dropped the phone

.  
. .

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

This days I woke up with distorted thought I have a bad feeling but that mostly happens when my step father is around its easy for Mvelo to say I'm must forgive him for treating my mom the way he do. But I just can't find peace in it... I'm split into million peaces thinking about how will i leave happy with Mvelo while leaving my mom alone with this monster... This days he has been having numerous one on one meeting with the evil Queen mother and spends most of his night in her house I should be relived that I do not get to see him but this hag of women is always on my case that I'm this close in strangling her.

She asks questions all day long usually the same

types of questions where people my in-laws work where those the Mnguni get so much money ? even though there's is google and all that jazz she still will say that his thug in suite

I feel like I'd have more peace around a 4 year old than her She so quick to talk about disrespect and that she will "smack me" When I leave her hanging calling me names is something i have came to arcustom to She does nothing but sleep shout and swear at me and my mother all day but when I sleep during the day after getting away from a day of humiliation she'll complain about how I'm lazy and that the Mnguni must replace me with beautiful hard working smart girl referring to her daughter I presume.

Lately She's nosy as fuck. You literally can't go from room to room without her asking you what you're doing. If I eat something she'll sit there and watch me and make comments about it. I have decided not to eat around her unless someone else is there too because I know she'll stare. If I go upstairs for any reason she'll stand at the bottom of the stairs and call me down to ask me what I'm doing. . . she called me wicket and that I have bad heart because I hardly talk to her or anyone else

" ukhohlakele njenGO nyoko wena ... Nxa "  
honestly if this was any other house hold I would have long killed her. Or ran away but I stay for the sake of my mom but I'm glad this married came it my only escape

" you can not start your new life with such heart Sbahla learn to forgive and forget " ooh my poor mother she is so naive bakithi forgive kanjani if this women is provoking me Evey time she gets

" we counting down the days .. Kuba mnyama kakhulu uma sekuzokhanya . . . bekezela mntanami ...and Pray " my mom will comfort me when i struggle to get of the bed to face the world I don't believe that my happiness lies in someone's hand but I need to go out there and make my own happiness You've probably heard quotes like "happiness is a choice" or "if you want to be happy be" or "people are as happy as they make up their minds to be." In theory these quotes come from a good place. They're meant to highlight the notion that though you don't always have control of your circumstances you have control over how you feel. But how do I exactly feel ? I hate being Bhengu ... Its just a name that I

will never hold with horner ...behind close doors  
I'm constantly abused and I must endure it all  
because I'm princess I need to smile and wave like  
I'm leaving the perfect life . .

I turned around and looked at the time it was 40  
min after 4 in the morning seemed like I never  
slept at all to be frank with yall I didn't sleep at all  
I took quick shower jumped into my black long red  
skirt matching red crop top that has a hoody  
white cap and red kicks took my diary and  
backpack my intention was to sneak out for  
morning ride on my bike but I suddenly felt my  
heart beating abnormally fast as i head foot steps  
coming my way I ran to the pantry and closed the  
door

. I feel like I'm developing anxiety from being  
around her. If I hear her coming I get nauseous.  
I'm afraid to walk back to my room because I  
know she'll start interrogating my every step  
Her : this people do not need to marry this girl  
...she not worthy to be Queen "

Male voice : but Nwabisa useceliwe nje "

Her : I'll deal with that mina ngithi .. . washada  
loyanondidwa imfene izihamba emini and wena  
you will lose a lot "

Male voice : that marriage will not last Nwabisa will be a Mnguni wife ill make sure of that "

Her : i don't want it to happened Uyezwa !! you better make sure of that ungakhohlwa that I sacrifice a lot for you to get the throne time to pay back Bhengu "

I held my mouth in shock " ooh my God"

.

.To be continued

## Chapter 24

Sli \*\*\*\*

I was mad angry in fact I hated ever crossing paths with Trey his such bully and uses power over me so what was I now to him? another women who carried and mothered his child how did we get to this point how did it all fall down

" ooh my God you still here ... Didn't they tell you that the kids are gone " she said stepping out of her house I was so emotional when the house keeper told me that the kids left with Mzamo this morning they were going to the village since Trey

is getting married on few days time so I'm not allowed to see my child because his getting married.

I wiped my tears and looked at her she still look beautiful but very sickly she was skinny with dark circles around her eyes and her bones were clearly visible on her face .

I stood up from her stoop and dusted my self

Me : I'm sorry "

She coughed slowly walked to a rocking stool she was in bad shape I must admit I felt sorry for her shame .

Her : staring will not give you the answers of my illness Ms Zwane '

I looked down " I'm sorry "

Her : what do you want from my brother ?" I was about to leave her premises Pam hates me that's no lie too her I'm just a sugar mama that's ruining her little brothers life

I stopped walking this is the one question she ask me that I'm unable to answer

Me : excuse me ?"

Her : as you can see I'm really sick and repeating my self will just make me more weak "

Even on her state Pam still acts like a bitch

Me : we have a child together ..."

Her : I don't give a rat shit about that and don't get me wrong I love my niece I'm not asking about her I'm asking you ukuthi umfunani umfowethu "

Me: nothing ... We not together anymore " that was bitter sweet I'm I really over with trey? or I'm just trying to convince her ? Our relationship is kept a secret any wat

She laughed OK now I see why every one says that Zithelo looks like Pam she laughed like her her two dimples just came out to play the way she raise her shoulder when she laughed it what Zee does as well

Her: you were given one instruction pertaining my niece just one " Zithelo is with Pam call Pam if you need to see her or talk to her ...im out of town on business " that was the SMS he sent to you wena what did you do ... Call him everyday every night. .. Haybo mama what were you doing ? "

Me : Pam how can I talk to you when you clearly have showed me and told me you do not like me "

Her : and you right about that I do not like you but I'm mother and when a child is involved I put my differences aside with the other parent "

Me : I'm sorry I didn't know "



She looked at me

Her : for an older woman you should act dumb  
how old are you 31-32 years old and already you  
do not think you too quick to act like a victim  
thinking that Trey Family does not like you you  
forget that you the mother of his child...that alone  
had made you family But you too emotionally  
invested in Trey and you forgot what made you  
step foot in our home ...wawuzobika umtana ... "

Me : I think I should leave "

She was talking out of content now and I was not  
about to get in a fight with a sick person "\_

Her : yini iqiniso liyababa ?

Me : what have i ever done to you Pam to treat  
me this way ..."\_

Her : let's see 5 years ago you called my brother a  
witch for telling you Truth about you dead  
husband you didn't stop there you told him his  
cursed for having a calling and you called him all  
sort of name even blamed him for killing your  
precious husband and destroying your life what  
you did after that you turn around and opened  
your old legs for him without using protection you  
trap him with a baby instead of telling him the  
minute you found out you pregnant you hid it

from him and came back with a baby when she was Three years old when he told you he had moved on you using his baby to get beck in bed with him ...so you old enough to ask me why I don't like you ?"

I could not say a word to her my tears just continued yo rush down on my cheeks

Her : I will never hate you but I hate the way you act around my brother Sli you are broken and you can never be in a right relationship because you used to being hurt by Man to you this is just normal "

Me : You don't know me "

Her : I don't need to know you yo see right trough you ... surprisingly girls who grew up with dads who were emotionally or physically absent are more likely to struggle with depression as adults. Because they fear abandonment and rejection these women often isolate themselves emotionally. They avoid healthy romantic relationships because they don't feel deserving and fear getting hurt but they might jump into unhealthy relationships that ultimately lead to heartbreak. In either scenario the women are in emotional peril and frequently become

depressed. If they don't deal with the cause of their sadness—an absent dad—they may never be able to develop healthy relationships with men. . . have you ever thought about forgiving your own father for leaving you and starting a family with another women ? ... No but you just jump from one unhealthy relationship to another ...

..Again I'm going yo ask you umfunani umfowethu ?"

Me : you don't know about my life ..."

I'm shocked that she knows about my dark secreete that I kept buried for years now

Her : you forget that i was once a cop and digging information about people I was trained to do that ... "

I looked down I felt my heart beating abnormally this was embarrassing

Her : I follow your motivational talk and I believe that behind that insecure women there is strong women you just need to Stop helping the world and focus on you first stop preaching what you don't practice "

I felt my knees not strong enough to hold my body I found my self seating down

Her : I will never hate the women who made me a

Aunt for the first time i love niece i see me in her eyes

"

I wiped my tears and looked at her

Her : if you love him as much as you claim you do you will walk away ...

Me : Pam I..."

She cut me off before I could talk

Her : you only have seen the good side of him trust me my brother is the worst kind of human being when he wants too be and he feeds on the weak ...don't be his victim" she stood up and slowly walked inside the house she left me still confused.

driving back to my house my mind was replaying every word that Pam said do I really have daddy issues ?

"\_good you came right in time "

Me : hi "

I passed her trying to make my way to my room

Her : sly I'm moving out "

I froze and looked at her

Me : what ?"

Her : ever since we came back to South Africa we have been fighting if its not about Trey its about

Zee if not Zee its about work

Me : Nola please I haven't been in right state of mind right now Trevor took my baby to his village

...

Her : you see what I mean "

Me : I'm hurt Nola OK shoot me for crying out loud . . . "

She sigh

Her : I know Pam told me that the kids are going I called you but you never answered you phone "

Me : I'm sorry ...I'm just stressed this whole thing with Trevor is weighing on me "

She breath out loud

Her : what think ? ... The fact that he wants to spend time with his child or the fact that he is getting married ?"

She folded her hands and looked at me

Her : seat down ..." She pulled me to sit with her she held my hand and looked at me

Her : You cannot co-parent with a narcissist. I repeat YOU. CANNOT. CO-PARENT. WITH. A. NARCISSIST.

No matter how flexible or firm you are. No matter how hard you try every attempt to "be the bigger person" or "kill 'em with kindness" will ultimately

fail. You cannot co-parent with a toxic person. "

Me : Nola Trey is not like that ..."

She laughed shook her hand

Her : Silindile listen babe Co-parenting requires shared effort and shared intent. Consider the prefix "co" – it means "together mutual in common." Narcissists do not share the same goals as you. He cannot and do not put the child's best interest before their own maybe he does I don't know but Trying to co-parent with Trey is like trying to row a boat with one oar while the other person uses theirs to slowly add water. Your boat cannot go straight when you're only paddling on one side you can Try as best as you can bust still your boat will go in circles stopping only when it sinks."

Me : I know ... I know but maybe if I can talk to him he will see that we need to coparent the right way "

Her : how you going to do that when in your mind you still believe that you two are still together "

I stood up this talk I was not ready for not now not ever first it was Pam not even an hour ago now Nola

Me: Nola not this again please "\_

Her : when if not now I'm tired of walking on egg with you To be clear break-ups are hard on everyone just accept it and move on and for the sake of Zithelo just do it !!!"

I cry a lot this days and I just have no control over my emotions and I wish people will stop gunning on me I'm the victims here I was the one who got dumped when I had a lot of expectations of happy ending

Her: babe all along you have painted this beautiful side of Trey that I also was fooled to believe but just by looking at how he treats you I can tell he was never a good guy you were intended to be with in the first place his more of asshole and ...."

Me : please Nola stop calling him names ..."

I looked at her and she said something in Arabic ooh god this friend of mine

Her:. When I say "narcissist" I'm not speaking in hyperbole so it's important that you pause for a moment and really consider a few things Is your ex controlling? Emotionally abusive? Insensibly difficult? Does s/he minimize deny or shift the blame? Does s/he try to intimidate or isolate you or the children? And do they exhibit any signs of parental alienation? If the answer is no great

news! Your ex probably isn't a narcissist and you probably can find a path to peaceful co-parenting. But if you answered yes to a few of those indicators it's likely time to give up the ship.. . allow him to do this on his own and you need to communicate with Pam or Veli for visitation right ..." She took her bag and walk out ... I sank down on the floor trying so hard not to brake down but failed miserably.

.

To be continue

## Chapters 25

Trey

" OK baby how do we do this ?"

She giggled I just finished giving her Bath she was dressed up but her hair was something I have never Seen before it big red afro

Her ; pull it up daddy like this "

It did not even fit in her small hands as she showed me

Me: ooh my princess like this " she giggled and that alone melted my heart I love my baby so



much and I enjoy this moment I have to share with her bed time story bath times doing her hair and watching cartoon's with her

Raising a child is no easy task and it can be more daunting when you're raising a daughter as a single dad Without the emotional assistance of another partner it can be challenging navigating the complex emotions as well I fear about social situations and changes my child has to go through I wish I can meet common ground with Sli but the way she acting I just can't deal I still hate that I was not there when Zee was still in her mothers tummy and the three years in her life I have missed a lot and my main focus now is to be there for her now yes I can to rewrite the past but I can make it up in the present day I honestly thought me and Sli had a short in this love thing

I tried to look pass everything that happened and what my family thinks of her try to rekindle the flame but it was just not the same we grew apart 'I' in fact did our relationship Just went pear-shaped and my assumptions plans and dreams of being a family man blow up in my face I care about her no doubt but ... I don't know the spark is just not there anymore

Sadly as this may be but common occurrence to most man ironically I was never prepared to cope with this drift.

Me: well we all done "

She looked at her self in the mirror

Me: you like it"

Her : you the best daddy thank "

I punched the air and she giggled turning around to Hug me

Me : I told you that daddy can make a killer ponytail. And I can paint your nails like a champ "

She nodded call me crazy or what not but when ever I'm free I take my baby girl on a date its like Dating her. I wish I could say I do this consistently but even once every few months is better than not at all. Dating your daughter is critical to showing her how a man should treat a woman once she reach that stage Call me old school but on my dates with my girl I open the doors pay the bills look them in the eye and tell her Her heart is more beautiful than her appearance make her feel like a million bucks. This doesn't have to cost a ton of money. A walk around the block. A short bike ride. A trip to the ice cream store. Doesn't have to be fancy but again it must be intentional. .

. and yesterday we had a tea part with her dolls and she painted my nails OK I got Somizi nails right now but if it's make my baby happy I'm happy

" good morning king and her princess "

Zee : koko !" She jumped and ran to her they hugged and talked briefly she than kissed my cheek and dash out its breakfast time with her cousin

Koko : how you doing son "

Me : she a handful"

Her : wait till shes a teenager and tell Me if you will not miss this days when she is still so young "

I laughed

Her : you good with her ... This parenting thing comes natural to you "

Me: I just lean as I go along I hope I had a manual "

She laughed

Me : she asked about her mom yesterday "

Koko set down in one of the coach in my room

Me : I don't think there will ever be an us ... And I don't know how to tell Zee "

Her : no matter what's life has in store for you and Silindile either you love her leave her take a

second wife or decide to coparent with her  
Zithelo must not be affected by your relationship  
dispute she needs a warm home and love ... She  
wants to be loved More than she wants the stuff  
you can buy her or the things you can teach her  
she wants you to love her. No one else on Earth  
can assume your role as parent or daddy. Your  
daughter will let you down make huge mistakes  
and maybe even turn her back to you for a season  
but don't ever let her doubt your love for her.  
Look her in the eye and tell her you love her a Lots  
she needs to know the know the cause of you and  
her mother not being together " \_  
I nodded I continued to pick up Zee toys on my  
room koko set there silently  
Her ; have you spoken to your sister ?"  
Me:I did few days back ....she coming today right  
?"  
She looked at me and looked down  
Her : just call her please ... I'll go check up on the  
kids"  
Me ; koko ...she going to be OK right ?"  
She just nodded with glassy eyes and walked out I  
looked for my phone and dialed her number  
Me : are you OK ? "

She laughed

Her : I'm pregnant Trey ... And have cancer so ya im good "

Me ; don't play Like that Pam '

Her : stop worrying the minute I give birth I'll start chemotherapy ... Enough about me how are the wedding preparations going ooh I can't wait to meet Sbahle Zoe and veli are bragging about the Queen "

Me : she is very special and strange enough for arrange marriage I fell in love with her and she loves me too "

Her : you better thank me little brother I told you to spend time with her and see if you will like her or not but boom you fell in love ... Aish I'm so happy for you "

Me : she just perfect Pam strict and straight forward hotheaded and she has temper for days its like I'm marring you " she giggled and started coughing she was out if breath

Me: PaM ... Sisi ... Pam !!"

Her : I'm fine ... I'm fine " she breath out loud and I found my self weak and holding my face I have exhausted all my resources to get Pam the beast treatment and Dr but they all say that nothing can

be done while she is still pregnant Pam loves her unborn baby so much that I fear that it is slowly killing her Sbu is walking Zombi and drowns himself in alcohol to avoid seeing his wife in that stage I devoted my self to prayer only God can help us now my mind was not interested in what she was telling me about the visit she had from Sli yesterday but she caught my attention when she asked

Her : are you stringing her along Trey ?"

Me : what !!! ... No !"

Her : I know you Trey and women like Sli turn you on ..."

Me : Pam you out of line"

Her : don't fuck with me I know for a fact that you have an impact on how she is acting now I wish I can smack her so hard seriously I don't get why most high-powered woman prefer dating someone toxic you know most successful women actually have lower standards when it comes to relationships. . . "

Her : I'm toxic ? "

Her : you my brother I know you and I'm glad you meet a women like Sbahle she will sort you out "

I laughed honesty speaking Sbahle scares the shit

out out of me she has that look that strips my Igor  
Her : I'm just glad you have girl child and your  
habits and way should change little brother I may  
not like sli for various reason but I don't condone  
what you doing to her think of Zee you have an  
influence on her future partner. Scary thought I  
know but the kind of man you are to her mother  
will have a direct impact on who she chooses to  
marry some day. zee must beg you to marry her  
when she grew up. And when you explain to her  
that you already married to her amazing step  
mother she must wish to have that too I know you  
might fear of being the right man for Sbahle but  
trust me If you're doing it right you will still be  
with sbahle when Zee is all grown up "

Those words hit home for Me and as much as we  
talk for another 15 min or so I was still wrapping  
my head on that we finally said our goodbye and I  
set in my bed just thinking and processing  
everything I later jumped in the shower I ran to  
my room to attend to my buzzing phone

Me : hello"

Sniffs

I looked at my screen it was " my Queen "

Me : Sbahle ... What's wrong ?"

she didn't say anything but just cried  
me : I'm coming ... got to new house at the  
development site ... I love you OK ... "  
she sniffed again ...shit!

.

.

To to be continued

## Chapter 26

Sbahle

Not every day you get to hear a person conspiring to kill you or better yet wants you dead what I heard proved my theory that my Uncle killed my father but I wouldn't have put it past him one bit the signs were there just no proof or evidence . my family's always been quite abusive both emotionally and (rarely) physically towards me Since my early childhood all I've been hearing at home was screaming crying and blaming shifted to everyone. No wonder I have grown to have this stone heart.

On the other hand I knew my grandmother was



evil but for her to have a hand in my father death that just shows that I don't know the people I call family ... I was pacing up and down in my room I felt Like screaming I kept asking my self why do this people hate me so much first they killed my father drove my sibling out of this house treat my mother like trash and now they ganging against me ...what have I done to deserve this life I sank down and cried I cried for my fathers life that was taken I cried for my mother who's constantly abused my brothers whom I don't know if there dead or alive I cry for myself the fate of my life that I don't know which turn it will take

" hello "

I didn't even notice that I dialed his number

"\_sbahle what's wrong "

Just to hear his voice I felt like crying even more

Him: I'm coming ..."

He told Me to go to the house we shared our first kiss in after dropping the call I wiped my eyes and stoop up ...

Him : the usual spot Nkosazana? " I nodded and smiled it was one of the guards that always help me sneak out I took my mountain bike and I rode out of the royal realms normally when I ride up

hill i smiled and embrace the beauty of my village  
but today my heart is heavy tears are blinding me  
I'm walling out loud I'm just a ball of angry right  
now

Mornings are quiet that I heard my cries echoed  
on my ears I jumped off my bike I wiped my tears I  
stood by the cliff and looked at the clean lake its  
looks so Peaceful majestic and steady I wish my  
heart can be like that as well .

The songbirds give a daily concert I looked up and  
admired One of the most beautiful creations in  
the world ' the sun' Its bright rays are seen by  
every single one of us I closed my eyes as it slowly  
warm my face . . . I'm tired of the toxic life I'm  
leaving I wish my head could stop talking and be  
quite the voices are too loud now I just wish to  
find peace .

I took a deep breath I saw something like a light  
glittering in the lake I felt like it was calling me my  
eyes was glued on it I found myself taking off my  
shoes and cloths i was left with only my  
underwear I moved to the edge and dive in the  
lake the water felt so good on my body my  
attention shifted to cool water on my skin I  
decided to dive in The water is clear and

refreshing I'm quite a good swimmer and I'm able to hold my breath for few minutes under water I was hypnotised by the strange light the most beautiful stone it was shining on the floor of the lake it was so beautiful that I just kept diving down every time when I get close its looks to be far from me to pick it up it looked like small thousands of crystals sparkling in blue and silver colours the more I dive down the more it came to life I froze when I realised what it is. I had to breathe I was too deep under water my lungs were about to explode ooh my it's beautiful it's moved it's so big it danced and looked at me I panicked " ooh my God " It moved close to me I found myself losing air I started coughing and trying to swim up but my eyes were fixed on this big snake before me it changed its face and its upper body looked like human " you not ready ... " my eyes felt heavy and light were out

.

.

Trey \*\*\*

After speaking to Sbahle I dash into my closet I jumped into navy chino pants white shirt and

powder blue sweater I put on my white Jordan  
took my car keys looked for my wallet while  
calling our pilot

" I need the bird in the air in 30 min time "

Him : destination sir? "

Me : KZN "

Him : I'm worming it up for you "

I was about to step outside my room when saw  
someone springing something on top of Sbahle  
drink and food she took it and drank it the face  
was hidden from me but I noticed the bracelet on  
the hand I saw small crawling ants look alike thing  
on Sbahle body she started screaming she had  
blisters and boils all over her face disturbing to  
look at

Me : No !" I rushed out of my room and humped  
into Koko outside my room

Her : come ..." I followed her

Me : I saw something "

Her : I sensed it ... Your wife is in danger "

Me : she called me crying ...

Her : ooh Nkosi yami ...that family don't want this  
marriage to happened"

Me : what .... Why ? "

Koko : she was suppose to marry a useless being

that will drive her to suicide her future was not suppose to turn our like this..."

Me : ngenzeni ... "

Koko : angazi mtanami ...khuluma ne thonga lakho" \_

We finally arrived at our back yard she opened the ancestral room she took an enamel basin filled it with water ...

Her : khuluma nethonga " the minute she said that I felt this pounding headache i held my head and kneel down koko took one of amabhayi placed it over my shoulder and lit impempho

I saw Gogo ndoni in the water

Her : she does not believe in our ways she is not ready to go to the water she may not rise "

Me : ubani Lona omfisela okubi "

Gogo : his grandmother from her father side was known for using dark magic before she died she was evil and very bad hearted they buried her face down so that she will never rise again but when some one feels a hint of jealousy or envies her spirit act on those feeling but when some one feels a hint of jealousy or envies her spirit act on those feeling someone in that house does not

want I Ndovukazi to marry you "

Me : ubani gogo "

Her : akubalulekile .... she just became one with the water she not ready to know her true power ngozozama ukumukhipha emanzini .... Shesha mvelo call her name in the water she will have a fighting will to come back if ezwa your voice "

I saw sbahle floating underwater with Ndon she was not moving I started doing as instructed my heart was beating so fast I was terrified

" Sbahle phuma emanzini ... vika Sbahle " I ran my hands on the water " baby please ... "\_

.  
.

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

I don't know how but I heard Mvelo voice I slowly opened my eyes the big yellow snake moving back to the water

I was on the bedrock trying to catch my breath I almost drowned ... No hold up I did drawn did this snake help me ?crazy part is I did not even feel my self losing my breath i busked in the solar energy as the sunlight dries my body

Me : " what just happens "\_

ooh God Mvelo! My memory came back He said I

must meet him at the house its a bit far so I decided to request I was do tired when I arrived I was still shocked that the house has Furniture now I just drag my tired hungry self to the main bedroom and slept

.

.

Narrated

Aunti Thabi found food on the table that looked mouth watering

" take that Food to that lazy girl she has not left her room today "

Aunti Thabi " yebo Ndlovukazi ..." She stopped and looked at her

" ma ukhona umaka' Sbahle "

Queen : kokuqala angisiye unyoko ... And how must I know about that women's where about I'm not her keeper "

Her : uxolo ma...Ndlovukazi "

Queen : kuyaphola ukudla ... Hambisa bo!!"

Aunt Thabi wandered why is queen doing in this house alone yet alone preparing food for Sbahle something was strange with this picture why was the Queen mother giving a dahm that Sbahle eats or not and most of this things on this plate was

not even Sbahle favorite food she knocked in her room and she let her self in she smiled when she notice that she sneaked out again she was not about to let this lunch go to waist so she decided to sit down an eat she took the empty plate down stairs the Queen jumped from her seat

Queen : udlile "

Aunt T: yebo ma ... But she is not feeling well so she is taking a nap "

Aunt Thabi noticed a smile on the Queen face that was strange the women never smile at all

Queen : kuhle let me go ... Got things to do in my house "

.  
.

Sbahle \*\*\*

I woke up with a bad dream something was wrong I saw Aunty Thabi telling me to be careful she looked different not her usual self she had this glow that was following her I looked around and I found my self under Mvelo hold when did he get here

Him : hi "

Me : hi"

He pulled me into a hug this was bone crushing



hug

Me : I can't breath "he chuckled

Him : I'm sorry I could not come on time ... I got held up" \_

Me : it ok it was bit crazy for me allow you to fly across the country anyway " \_

Him : I'm your man when you call I should leave everything and come to you "

I rested my head on his chest I think I have found my new peaceful place its in his arms silent was loud that we would hear a pin drop I was debated telling him about today's event and I don't know why his so quiet today it's not like him at all .

Him : spit it out "

I looked at him

Him : what eating you up '

Me : I'm good Mnguni "

Him ; Mabhengu I'm not going to ask you twice "

His voice made me shake my heart beat moved from my left side straight to my throat

Ohh I just found out that my grandmother and uncle are conspiring on killing me and making Nwabisa your new wife I got so angry that I ended up jumping into the lake and saw a big snake that looked like a human and I heard your voice calling

me to come out when I was about to drown ...

Him : who's is this Nwabisa " I jumped and sat up straight

Me : Wait did I say everything out loud "

He side smile he is mad about what my family is planning how can I be do stupid and say everything out loud

Him : I know you will question what I'm going to say but can you do me favour when I'm gone "

I looked at him as he stood up OK is this guy twins with Kanye West fuck he dresses to kill the guy is a fashion guru his body structure makes him looks hot in what ever his got on he has that bracket legs and when he walks damn people stop and look at him he turned and looked at me

Him : don't pull your wall down for no one I see a storm approaching and I'm not going to be around to protect you but I trust that you will be just fine just be a bit vigilant with who you open up too "

I frowned and looked at him he was serious

Me : I don't understand "

Him : you know your family more then I do ...

Follow that gut inside of you it never lies "

I nodded

Him : so tell me why diving ? "

Did he just drop a boom on me and changed the subject just like that

Me : “ it was suppose to be a swim water helps me think ”

Him : “ what time was that ? “

Hallo is this an interrogation

Me : this morning after I called you ”

Him : and you saw a snake ...big snake in the water ” \_

I looked at him and his eyes were fixed on mine

Me : “ I'm not sure... why you asking me so many question “

Him : I'm curious ”

He side smile now I know his pissed because I'm not being direct with him I nodded

Him : “ im talking alone now “ he hates it when I don't use my mouth to respond I swear to god I'm in love with a controlling Frick

Me : “ I don't know what you expect me to say .... Yes i saw a snake in the lake and i heard your voice when i was drowning and crazy as it is the snake saved my life ... “ I said with a pinch of being annoyed he just looked at me

Me : I knew you going to think I'm crazy ”

He crouched in front of Me and held my hands

Him : you truly are a chosen one .. You just meet my great great great grandmother Ndoni Mnguni .." He kissed my forehead " come let me feed you"my mouth was just on the floor right now what did he say ?

.

.

To be continued \*\*\*\*

## Chapter 27

Sbahle \*\*\*

" you sure you don't want me to walk you in ?"

I looked at the time it was already after 18:00 my phone has been buzzing non stop that man is going to kill me a million thoughts was running in my head about what I'm going to say to him

Him : " should I be worried about your actions "

I shook my head

Him : do you ever say what you feel or you prefer talking to your self and believing that everyone is gunning over you ? ..."

I breath out loud Mvelo always wants me to explain my self to him all the time right now I

need to think how am I going to face the very same people who I know they killed my father and conspiring God knows what against my life

Me : “ im not much of talker Mvelo you should know this about me by now “

Him : “ I bag to differ you are chatterbox in that small head of yours You know I have calling right ? and sometimes deep in the night i

I can hear you calling my name but How can I try to help you woman If you go on hiding your pain ... Baby the tears on your pillow are real You can't go on pretending to me when I can actually see the pain right trough you talk to me please my Queen “

I smiled but slowly wiped the smile on my face the minute I saw cars going into my yard

" I have to go "

I looked at Mvelo with his Jordan on the dashboard looking I'll kind of being chilled is he even aware that I have crazy man in that house who going to make my life a leaving hell from now on because i disobeyed him and left the house without his approval and to make it worse I'm coming back at this time .

" ooh God " \_

I saw the kings guards coming my way I wanted to hide or run away ... he greeted me and Mvelo

Mvelo : " is everything OK ?" \_

Him : " yes sir ... Nkosazane uyadingeka endlini " \_

I looked at mvelo he held my hand

Him : I got you ... Come let's go ..."

He got out from his side and walked to my side to open the door for me I looked at him my feet could not move

Him : Sbahle ? "

Me : I have bad feeling about this Mvelo "

He crouched in front of me and held my hand

Him : I know I have it too but babe Ignorance is the mother of all poisons stop feeding your head and believing that things are fixed and permanent... This life is not permanent ... " \_

I smiled and looked down

Him : rember i told you about my Aunt Nomakhezi and how much she hated me and envied me for my gift something I'm born with something that is in my blood its no different than what you about to walk into in that house people are bound to hate you if they can not have what you have

Envy is a two-person relationship: I want what you have. Jealousy is a three-person triangle: I want

therecognition you have from others. . . they all want And what to take but it never meant for them " isipho sakho is to be Queen to rule to be the mother of valley its your birth right they may try to snatch it from you but they will never succeeded ... because sonke sizelwe sifumbethe different gifts " \_

He held my cheek

Him : your smile will be there down fall kill them with kindness babe"

I nodded " thank you "

Him : just remember that Envy is the religion of the mediocre. It comforts the condemned it soothes their worries and finally it rots their souls allowing them to justify their meanness and their greed until it eats them inside out whatever causes there suffering has its roots in the Three Poisons: Ignorance Hate and Greed... Don't stood to there level "

He pulled me to a hug I have leaned to allow him to hug me funny how I have never pushed him and how I feel comfortable and safe into his arms " you sure you don't want me to come with you ... You know that angibasabi "

I shook my head and chuckled in his shoulder

Me : I don't want them thinking I'm disrespecting them our wedding is in few days times and to be seen with you will be like sprinkling oil into fire ...but thank you for today I guess I needed to armour up with what waits ahead "

Him : go get them tiger " he kissed my forehead I giggled as I walked home I turned and find him still looking at me I waved at him as i ran inside the Royal yard

I got inside the house and found Didy walking up and down like a headless chicken outside she turned and looked at me I wanted to scream oh how I missed her

Didy : where were you? Do you even know what time is it now ?"

Ok not a response I was looking for

Me : not now Didy when did you get here ? "

Her : that not important ohh babe this people want your head I feel like you need run away or something better yet call yurt man to get you " she was talking to fast and panic in her voice was evidence

Me : what going on ?"

She shook her head she was shaking I have never seen her like this she kept on pulling me way from



the door if it was for her I would not enter the house she was blocking me

Me : I'm not running away Dudu yini kwenzakalani ?"

She wanted to hug me but I sneezed and pushed her away I don't get this hugging shit its either she say what she has to say and stop with this physical I affection bullshit besides this arms only belong to my mother and Mvelo ...

Me ; why so many cars ? What happening ?" I was getting impatient with her now

Her : ooh God you don't know!!.." she held her mouth I heard a person crying hysterically inside the house

" ooh God she was too young to young to die what happens to her ? ... Ooh kodwa ngo mzikulu Wami "

Didy : stop Sbahle " I pushed her aside and rushed to the sitting room every Bhengu family member was here they looked sad as if someone died the Queen mother just walked in and was being all dramatic with loud cries and no tears Nwabisa eyes popped out when she saw me she pulled her mother trying to make her stop but she was on another level causing drama and drawing

attention

Didy pulled me seat down next to her she held my hand so tight

" umzukulu ?" My Uncle asked his eyes moved to me and I swear to god I saw steam coming out of his ears

Queen : ooh yes they told me to rush here because sekunomshophi owenzekile awu dudu maka Sbahle ... "

Me : what's going on?? "

Queen mother looked at Me as if she has seen a Ghost ok I'm getting tired of this look

Uncle : ophumaphi Sbahle kunini sifunana nawe just because the Mnguni pay lobola for you you think you adult now busy doing what you want Kwami ! " ooh shut it you pig this is my fathers house nxa ! just because the Mnguni pay lobola for you you think you adult now busy doing what you want Kwami ! " ooh shut it you pig this is my fathers house nxa ! futhi I'm not there why is this women crying ?

He clicked his tongue I guess my facial expression gave me way I looked down this was what I was a afraid off this men humiliating me in front of the whole family Mvelo keeps telling me to kill them

with kindness njani if he constantly trying me  
yooo his testing my patient now

Him : I asked you uphumaphi "

I couldn't look him in the eye even if I wanted to  
Queen mother : so ubani kanti o'file ?? "

I shoot my eyes open and looked at her. I could  
feel my uncles eyes on me and did not give a rat  
ass I made sure I don't even look his direction

" Thabi is no more Ma we found her in the kitchen  
floor "

Ooh my Gog no it can not be. No... No !!

Nwabisa : what happened to her "

Another aunt answer : it looked like food  
poisoning because she she had white form coming  
out of her mouth and blood coming out of her ear  
her lips were blue "

Nwabisa : ooh my God !" I felt numb

Queen : ubekuphi kanti lo ?" There all turned to  
look at me

What do I say ...I have no energy for this I just  
need to lock my self in my room and cry who  
could do this to her ?

Uncle : hhayi khuluma Mani Sbahle !!!" His voice  
bold and loud I wiped my tears and looked at him  
what do I have to do with what happens ? is my

whereabouts going to bring her back ?  
queen : kade ngasho ngathi lengane ikhohlakele  
for all we know she poisoned her aunt "

mom : " INI!! "

What the fuck !!

Nwabisa : with her Temper anything is possible  
with Sbahle she once hit me with a glass "

" hawuuu " the room said OK what's going on  
here ?

Didy : that a lie Nwabisa you know it !!"

Nwabisa : who you calling lie wena ain't I older  
than you ??"

I was frozen in the spot my mouth was dry I  
wanted to scream to every one and tell them  
shove it where it does not shine we just lost Aunt  
Thabi and already they looking for suspect just  
because this is my mothers house its either me or  
my mother who will be responsible for killing her  
forgetting the parasite that come and go get in  
the house I didn't want to look at my mother  
because I know she probably crying there is  
nothing that hurts me the most then to see tears  
in her face .

Me : I went for a walk " I finally said "I left very  
early and was gone since this morning i left the

king and Queen mother talking in this very same room when I left this morning“

Queen mother eyes were about to fall down I looked at her directly in the eyes till she looked always

" nakhoke umhlola wodwa lo you getting married in few days time kumele engabe ugonqile uhgamba ngo vivi ubuya at this time ? " one of the Aunts said

Uncle : uyandinda yini wengane "

Queen mother : are you even going to ask such because to me it quite obvious she is nondidwa ubuyephike ? “

Ooh am I no longer a killer now I’m a bitch ? wow this family does not stop to amaze me the thing that come out of there mouth

Mom : “ sekwanele ... ! everybody know s that Sbahle loves the outdoor we should be preparing for a funeral but you all here attaching my daughter ... “

I looked at mom wow when did she get her voice back ?

I should be hurt by now but this whole fucked up interrogation was too amusing to me I found my self chickling inside Didy actually had to pinch me

to stop laughing

Queen : you slowly forgetting your role in this family wena ! “ she pointed a figure at my mother “

Mom : “ I’m Queen last time I checked your reign has long passed when the old king died ... so be careful when talking about roles and how you address me “

Queen : “ yewena ukhuluma nobani kanjena ... vele lento yakho iyumbulali Even when her father died she was last person seen with him ...

Ukhohlakele unehliziyo yomthakathi wen Bhengu tell abantu Baka Mnguni about her before ayosihlaza lapha I mean ziningi kabi izontombi eziziphathe kahle laykhaya ezingagana kaMnguni not this thing ... ”

OK this bitch had gone to far including my father name in this mediocre

I keep replaying those words in my head. I was looking at Queen mother speak the things that came out of her mouth did she perhaps forgot that we just lost one of our own and already the house has gang up on bring Sbahle down I know for a fact that

Chronic blaming is a form of emotional abuse and

often hurts just as much as physical pain does. Right now i feel helpless over the blamer and a certain fear sets in I see my Uncle coming to my direction. Just as any other blamer he sees nothing wrong in blaming others for anything and everything. When things go wrong in their own lives someone else is always to blame and I'm in the receiving end -- nothing is ever their fault. They tend to be irrational therefore i just can't reason with them when they already concluded about me killing my own favorite aunt or better yet me being the worse kind of a bitch but they gone to far by involving my father name in all of this just like a ticking boom I felt my anger going from 0 to 100 in a split second ... It all make since now

the Dream oh my God she was warning me about this because she was already gone I felt a lone tear stream down my face

" ukukhala ngeku kukusize ... Where were you and you better tell me the truth or I will beat it out from you uyezwa !! ? ?"

I looked at him his angry his eyes are full of hate I stood up and looked at him in the eye I felt his breathing change

Me : guilty people always blame others for there own mess Let's face it being blamed for something i didnt do must really hurt me and brake me down right ?....

I am innocent after all and its should hurts. But truth is the one thing that survivors do is never to be intimidated by vultures after all time and recriminations have past is to face a killer in the eye and say I did not do it but ask them if they did it ...I mean what motive will I have to kill the only person that ever showed me that she is family and cared for me genuinely ...

I've learned that anyone who accuses me of improper behavior is probably hiding something You most probably have a personal issues against me to pin this on me right ? so i have heard all your blame your insult i knowing this may not help much even so it is true. . . I don't care what you think of me because jealousy insecurity and low self-esteem are coursing through your veins. The only way you can feel your own importance is to spread lies insult abuse or gossip viciously about Me and my mother bringing us down so that you can feel better about who you really are hungry greedy busted



He raised his hand attended to hit me  
" lay one finger on her and that will be the last  
thing you will ever do !!"  
I looked behind my uncle and there stood my lion  
king.  
I smiled to my self " I know what you did and trust  
me my existence will be your downfall "

.  
.

To be continued

## Chapter 28

Somewhere in Qwaqwa\*\*\*  
They entered as I slept. They called me by name  
asking me to get up get dressed. They were on a  
schedule. I was still hungover by sleep I kept  
asking myself what going on my vision was blurry  
shit my glasses where are they  
something I rarely did I looked for them in panic  
.the smell of cigarette and weed alarmed me that  
this were not my classmate i panicked  
" Who are you ??"  
I tasted stale cigarettes hands on my cheek shit

got real my only hope was to get my cellphone but How since I'm blind as a mule without my spacs I looked around for my phone that was suddenly missing Its charger hung from the outlet I wearily asked if one of the two men now standing in my room knew where it was of cause They did they were on a schedule and we couldn't be late they kept on saying This is it my day to die my gut feeling told me that what ever is behind those door is my last day on earth I heard one saying " Time's up asshole" \_ It was about 2:00 a.m. and the men grew agitated they started pushing me around I so badly wanted to turned away Nuzzling in my pillow just for the last time. My father always told me that sleep will be my death I guess he was right because death came in night when I least expected it I remember thinking this couldn't be happening not to me. The slapping the punching got me crying but my mouth was covers I could not scream I tasted blood and my stomach was badly injured I was kicking trying to block my already bruised faced I found shelter under my bed cover pulled it over my head I was dizzy and I think I fell asleep for a moment and awoke again when one of them

pulled off my covers . Grabbing one of the corners I pulled hard and tried to bring the covers over my head ... Maybe they will leave me already I'm crying like a girl after all .

" I'm sorry ... I'm sorry " I kept saying for what only God knows

" if you need money I can tell my uncle to give you please I'm sorry ... Ooh God you hurting me "

A knee pressed into the small of my back and I briefly convulsed. It fuckin hurt me so bad but it was not compared on the helplessness me that was suffocating The man seemed like he was twice my height and ten times my weight. I could feel everything all of him as he restrained me.

"I did not want to do this the hard way" he said. I didn't really know what this was why was he even doing this When he let go of my arms and stood up the meeker man stepped closer to the bed

" ngithe vuka nja!!! "

That deep Zulu accent it can not be missed I knew it from somewhere ...

I was wearing my briefs and t-shirts and walking on foot on the quit corridor only my sniffs and silent Cry's were heard it was to quite the light gave me a clear vision of the goons that were

dragging me out

The men reminded me of WWE wrestler both in appearance and demeanor.

I was kicked and pushed I realised fighting was just a waist of my time

" hamba !!" They will shout at me pulling me by the arm

A could still feel the cold air rushed in blowing my already shivering body as if walking on cold tiles was painful trying walking on wet grass in June month on your feet in Free State no school guard was on site or any classmate this was planned I knew this was a planned kidnapping this people know who I am.

The door opened leading me outside I froze as the Cold licked my face and crept under my clothes spreading across my skin like the lacy tide on a frigid winter beach. I licked my purple lips tinged with blue and gently chattering teeth The biting cold chilled my fingers into clumsy numbness the cold seeped into my toes and spread painfully throughout bare feet

I felt like crying they pushed me to walk i stopped as I felt big hands grabbing me ...no that that was not grabbing he actually hit me on my back I was

grabbed by my shirt and hit from behind and lost my footing I found my face tasting the soil

" God if this my time take me now ... I can not take this any more " i prayed in silence ... I prayed for help ... For a miracle ... I was too weak I could not even open my eyes the way my face was badly bruised now i was cornered in the van with gun pointed on my face I had no strength to fight or cry for help now it was useless my fate was close and I had accepted it.

My eyesight maybe be poor but my other senses made me aware that I was not alone in this van I heard someone coughing his breathing indicated that they in pain like I am

" hallo "

" this is not the time to cry ... When the car stop will need to fight or run "

" Mlondi ?"

Him : I'm sorry I could not protect you "

What does he mean by that yes his big and grew up fast and more Street smart then i will ever be yes his big and grew up fast and more Street smart then i will ever be but I'm still older then him I should be saying that to him

Him : bafo ... Mom told us this day will come and

said we must run till we are ready to take back what belong to us"

I could not believe what he just said I was afraid really afraid... I'm not ready I can't fight I'm book smart this life was not for me .

I was never much of a fighter or talker they say I take after my father so I nodded even though he can not see me I know he knew that I did not agree to his plan there was so many question I wanted to ask him but I knew better than to piss my little brother off we in this shit together and as always he has figured out who's the enemy.

The light in the street shined trough the window and confirmed my suspicions he is badly beaten up

They have done a number on him. He probably ran his mouth like he usually does and fought back and angered the abductors His once was white T-shirt was now red with blood this was our doom this was the end off us I pray for my mother I will not see my sister I will not get the chance to protect I hate this blood running trough my veins our father cursed us because it has made me us have all this enemies just because we have his blood.

I was a shivering mess now I was rubbing my arms trying to keep warm but no luck I felt a huge blow on my cheek I must have fallen asleep I looked around and my eyes landed on him I realised that the car was no longer moving

" finally the Prince is awake ... I have been waiting for this day my whole life ..."

" fuck you ...you fat pig " Mlondi spit out

Him : I'm going to enjoy killing you the take over has just begun "

I was still shocked at the man looking at me

" Malume ... Why ?" It came out as a whisper I knew this man hates us but for him to kill us what will he gain ? You know when you look at death in the eye and trying to get all the answers and death blinks first and you realize that nothing seems impossible he is planning on kill us either way.

Him : " don't act surprise this is more of take over just like in the wild When a new male coalition takes over a pride they always kill the prides' cubs since they are not biologically related and do not want to spend energy ensuring that other lions' genes will be passed on ... so this my boys what I'm about to do is insuring my blood line ... I

already took your father's seat I'm already fucking your mother so hard than soon she will give me an heir will pimp your sister to the highest bidder but I just have no use for you two so goodbye"

Me : you sick busted " I tried jumping him but I fist got to my face first made me fall back

Mlondi : you stupid old pig the difference in this story is that me and you share the same blood ... And already what you planning to do to us will be no match what coming to you you already have a wolf in that house that is slowly getting hungry for blood ... You think killing us will get you what you want ... Qawekazi will destroy you never intimidate a women "

Me : you killed my father!!!" \_

He laughed

Mlondi " pull the trigger ...do it and see if you will ever find peace you pathetic piece of shit ! "

I heard my brother cursing them while they beat him to a pulp he was always the rebellious one his younger than me and he is just a daredevil kind of a person

" you going to wish you never said that " \_

One of the goons said but what so respectful about a man who takes power then earn it Mlondi



tried fighting every one of them was a ball of crying mass looking at what this people were doing to him

I Will admit it I was scared and I was pleading for my brothers life they already dragged him out and I have never seen people beat up a teenage boy like this ganging on him kicking him punching him. my uncle pulled out a gun pointed at unconscious Mlodi who was laying life less on the ground I used my last strength and jumped out of the van i ran after him but he turned and pulled the trigger at me I fall down and crawled on top on my brother as the men fired his gun on my back they rolled our lifeless body down the train tracks nd that's when I hit the tracks I fractured the bone in my lower spine

I was loosing lot of blood I looked at Mlondi one more time I heard heard gun shots and light was out for me and i was unconscious ...

I woke up screaming Mlondi name and realised I was in my room

“ same dream “ my brother said walking in my room handed me a glass of water

This shit happened 6 years ago but every day I relive it as if it was yesterday

I sigh as he helped me sit up his face told me there was something wrong

Me :what's wrong ?"

Him: we got two Zulu boys downstirs looking for us "

Me : what ? ...do you think ...?"

Mlondi : no its not him ...I already did background on them ..."

.

.

.narrated \*\*\*

Meanwhile Sbu and Banzi walked inside the office it was just your typical office leather seat table and CCTV screens

Sbu : how did you find them ?"

Banzi : I'm in a special forces and finding people is my speciality "

" I heard you have been asking about me " mlondi walked in he was big muscular buffed up tattoos all over his arms his light skin and pink lips made him the ladies man but there was something dark about him

Sbu : it was more of looking for you "

Mlondi " its sounds like the same thing to me ...who are you and who sent you and how did you

find me ? "

His eyes was on Banzi he was sizing him up in fact Banzi laughed " so many questions in one sentence which one must we answer first ? "

Mlondi : I see you have a death wish "

Sbu : boys come down firstly it was not hard finding you here mfethu you live e'qwaqwa and you call your self Shaka the Zulu gangster "

Banzi chuckled

mlondi : you starting to piss me off!!" he pointed at Banzi

Sbu : look it a nice name I like it "

mlondi : " can you get to the point and this bull shit !!"

Banza : look I will love to answer all your questions but Mlondi Bhengu it's time you went back home "

Mlondi popped his eyes out he never thought that he will ever here that name especially in this place

Him : who are you? "

Banzi : we friends of the man that is planing on marriage your sister "

Him : my sister is happily married the last time I checked '

Sbu seat down and crossed his leg

Sbu : so Sbahle name does not ring are bell ? "  
" who are you vele? And tell us your business "  
said a guy in wheelchair he looked older than the  
guy behind the desk

Sbu looked at him and put two and two together  
that the guy in wheelchair is Nsika Bhengu

Banzi : look to cut the matters short we know why  
you ran away and we know what happens to you.  
But leaving in hiding is over now your sister will  
need yo to walk her down the isle ... And Nsika  
your seat is waiting for you ...let's just say your  
new brother in law just took your uncle or king  
down " \_

.  
.

To be continued

## Chapter 29

Sbahle \*\*\*

“ Sbahle “ he indicated with his head calling me to  
his side the way he did it that was so HOT

If this was a movie I would have been running in  
slow motion to his arms not everyday you get the

most hottest man saving you from the enemy I felt so emotional as I ran to him and buried my head on his chest tell me why I'm crying ? it more of seeing him right here ... ooh and not forgetting my Aunt Thabi died and non of this 'people are moaning her death instead I'm the accused number one

Him : " are you ok ? "

I nodded

Uncle : " what's the meaning of this Mnguni!! "

Mvelo : sorry to come unannounced but"

This men of mine so humble and respectful

Uncle : who do you think you are walking in my house as if you own it !!"

Mvelo and i chuckled yohh this man like claiming things that are not his

Him : " just came to get my wife your Highness "

So modest in his voice I dictates that his mocking him

Queen mother : " what .... ? you can not be serious do you even know what this girl is capable off ?...kuyimanje ..." he cut her off

Mvelo : " with all due respect lets not get to that right now I didn't come for stories i just came to get my wife and that it "

Uncle one : “ that’s not happening we have not gave her away to you “

He held my hand

Mvelo : “ customary laws disagree with you I paid bridal price for her so technically she is my property now “

I don't like the sound of being owned like this but the way he said it means that his got me

Uncle : our culture disagree with this laws of yours ...so I may allow you speak to her but not in this way you doing right now !"

Me : look king " he was annoyed now "

there is no perfect way then the now you raised a hand on my wife and I'm not sure she will ever be safe in this house "

Mvelo said with a chilled voice this men of mine has a Queen on this chess game and was calculating his move take yes Mvelo is good looking got body to die for dress like a model but to me that just a bonus of things that made me fall for him ...you know there is nothing so sexy like a man with brains wow

Uncle : she still my daughter And if needed be I need to reprehend her "

Mvelo : by raising a hand at her ??"

Mvelo voice was loud got my uncle shaking a bit  
Uncle : its my house my rules don't come here  
and change our ways uyezwa !!"

“ No wonder you Bhengu man run your mouth like  
women its because you involve women in your  
meetings ... Women if you may please excuse us “  
that was Uncle Mzamo he was with another white  
guy who looked like wow " sizzling " the room  
became silent the minute this two walk in

Mvelo : “ take your Mother to the house I need to  
have a word with your uncle “

Me : “ok “

He whispered in my ear “ trust me “

This man want me to miss all the fun really now  
do I have to go?

I turned and looked at my mother I didn't have to  
say a word to her but she jumped on her feet

Queen : “ uyaphike wena ?because the king has  
not Instructed us to move "

I have never seen my mother carry her self like  
that before but she laughed

Mom : I will never disobey my in-laws what kind  
of a mother will be " \_

Queen : your victory laugh will be short leaved  
when I tell them about what kind of daughter you

raised

Mom : try your level best Queen mother and see where will that get you "

Queen: nxa "

Mom laughed again " I always told you that I will have the last laugh... Don't get too upset and increase your blood sugar level "

Uncle : " Nontombi I didn't say you can leave "

Mom : I know ... But I'm leaving "

Uncle: if you walk out that door ... "

Mom : " uzowenzani ? beat me up ? rape me ? curse me ? or what kill me ? bring it on

anginandaba I told you that the only thing that is still keeping me alive in this house that has made me endure everything this family put me through is my daughter and I'm glad that my late husband chose a perfect suitor for her so right now I can do whatever I want I'm sure what they came to talk to you about is more important than this bucking notice you doing ... "

Him : uthini ?"

" haybooo ! " the room said

Mom : speak to MY daughter in-laws be nice and try to be a gentleman aish I forgot you don't have that bone I inside of you "



she walked towards me I don't know when or how the queen mother stood up so fast but she grabbed my mothers arm

Queen : " you do not get to disrespect us like this yezwa wena nondidwa "

I have never seen or head such a bitch slap like that in my life it's the kind of smack that will definitely leave her deaf she fell Nwabisa rushed to help her mother

Nwabisa : kodwa Aunti ungaze umshaye uma she old and ...'

Mom : don't start with me wena girl you think I haven't notice that you and your evil mother have been conspiring to get Sbahle fiancée you think I don't know that your arranged husband disowned him self from his family when his family paid your bridal price ...you tried so hard to be with him and he rejected you ... Kuyimanje you sleeping with your father in-law ....but jealousy got the best of you when you saw the Mnguni you wanted what my daughter have and you started spreading fucked up rumours about Sbahle lesgodini "

Me : INI ?"\_. I was beyond angry

Didy : I knew you were up to no Good you such s pathetic bitch"

" Dudu !!!" That was her father  
Nwabisa was crying mess she kneeled before my  
mother lags  
Mom : don't ever think about touching me with  
does filthy hands wena !!!  
Her : Maka'Sbahle I'm so sorry my. Mother forced  
me to do all does things "  
Queen : you such a stupid girl nxa... Thula Mani  
vala lomlomo wakho" \_  
The people in the room were shocked like I was  
Me : why ?"  
Nwabisa : because you so young wazini ngokuba  
undlokulu"  
Me : wow !!!"  
Nwabisa : you don't deserve to be Queen ...look  
at your self ..."  
Didy mom : ukhohlakele Ntombazane !!!"  
Mom kicked her and she fell  
Didy : “ Asshuuuu “ she was rolling on the floor  
with laughter  
I on the other hand had hands on my mouth the  
eyes in this room were all out about to fall out  
from there socket  
Mvelo : “ Sbahle go now “ I nodded I pulled my  
mother hand and we walked out

Uncle : Nomtombi you will regret this day uyezwa "

Mom : fuck you and the rest of your family nxa "

"Thixo ..."

" yoooh "

' hayboo ithini umakoti " this people were shocked that my mother insulted them

She was walking fast yet I thought this was my escape but my mom just found a brake through

Me : are you OK " I held her arm she stopped and looked at Me

" ngikhathela ileyanja I have suffered so much because of him and he think that everything i have been through I will take it just like that laying down he got another thing coming my plan to destroy him just started "

Me : mom please come down he is not that special or worth your energy "

She place a hand on my cheek

Her : this is my fight baby and I have been planning for years for this day and its finally here "

Me : I'm sorry you had to go through so much because of me "

Her : I was fulfilling your father wishes he told me to take care of you no matter what ... " \_

I hugged her as she cried

Me : its OK mom ..."

" Nontombi I'm I'm sorry you went trough all of that with out us knowing " it was Dudu mom and the other Aunts

Mom laughed and wiped her tears

Her : I knew most of you knew but decided to to turn a blind eye on it"

I have seen my mother sad crying or feeling all kind of weak but this crazy women standing next to me right now I don't know her

Mom :Just saying out loud makes me cringe.

You're probably wondering why the hell I would even consider staying took every expect of abuse this family brought trough my life the answer is right in front of you i was a widow forcefully forced to marry a Man I did not love you say it was culture.... that I may understand but seeing me bruises up and spoken to not even in manner that one will speak to his Dog what was that ?

Ignorance? As a women you decided to turn a blind eye to domestic violence in this house "

Older Aunt : Nontombi I go trough what you go trough every day because Down here in Royal house domestic violence is common very common

and I hate to say it but it has become norm here as well. Everyone knows it happens. Some do something about it more so though most don't."

I was so shocked

One Aunt : It's the culture. It's just the way it is. Does it make it right? Nope of course not. Is there anything that can be done about it? Very little. . we take it all in for the sake of our children ..."

Dudu : ooh my God i knew it my last visit here i could hear it i thought my mind was playing tricks on me Imagine the sounds of a fist hitting a woman and her screaming in pain. I was horrified. Having grown up in a house of violence I know that sound all too well and all my emotions went into overdrive I told my mother about it She said This is not our home or our territory. We are guest right now. Let's go that the day we left for Capetown ... Ooh my God how could you mom " I froze in my shoes.

Mom : because she didn't fucking care"

At that exact moment I saw a police pick up truck and some few private cars parking outside my yard

Didy : why mom why ? I urged you to please help her. He's hurting her!!!

I was horrified that My jaw dropped.

Didy mom : its not easy being married to this family to this royal man my child I have tried so many things to help most women in this family but i felt defeated and so so so sad. And helpless. But not only that i hate tunning a blind eye and saying this isn't our home your father has programmed that into my head for years now he will constantly say that We are visitors here and this is there culture"

Mom: not yours ? but ours !. It still doesn't make it right but it's just the way it is right ??"

She looked down

Mom : Women are not held in high regard here. They are to be used raped and beaten. Not all don't get me wrong but a lot of us are and we pray just for helping hand and your had that has the power but you listen to man ...its sad because you have a girl child and women need to leave by example "

Didy mom: I'm really sorry

Me : It's all so frustrating and completely heartbreaking that you were a silent killer this is my country this is my home but will never say its my culture. I am a stranger in this land and all I

can do is keep trying I pray that I will never be directly exposed to such violence again but if I am I will once again be a voice for that women in need and try to help her How can I turn a blind eye? How can I ignore the screams and cries of a woman being beaten? If I my self I'm also a women . . "

I looked at mom "she is a survivor and I'm proud to say that my mom is head strong got all of us fooled that she is weak but just like smoke she rise from the ashes " I held her hand " let's go mom "

She took off her doke rocking her natural long hair I hugged Didy or let's just say she hugged me Me : I'll call you OK"

Her : you better ...take care babe "

I opened Mom's car and she jumped in the passage seat I was not about to ask her if she ok she clearly not ok she found her voice and all i could do is listen to her when she is ready to talk Mom : what is the police commissioner doing here ?"

She pointed at the police cars outside I wander what my uncle is planning on doing I feared the worse who called the policy and why ? I had to get

my mother out of there she assaulted the Queen  
and nwabisa in front of room filled with  
whiteness we arrived in Mvelo house later on

Mom : " is this his house ? "

Me : " yes mom ... "

She nodded faintly smile

Me : go take a nap mom I'll cook you something "

We hugged " thank you sithandwa sami "

.

.

To be continued

## Chapter 30

Mlondi\*\*\*

The way I have always viewed the world was  
through the eyes of my parents be responsible go  
to school go to college get a girlfriend marry her  
and be a career / family man my brother used to  
say he is still that perfect guy your perfect  
gentlemen the kind of guy that most women will  
love to call son in-law the family's Golden boy  
yayaya !



I wish that people could say the same about me but on the other and naah...

" my house my rules my boy if you don't like it...

here is the door " my father used to say

" ngizokushaya Mlondo yezwa " my mom

" why you such a bully. Nxa " my big sister -

Thandiwe

" you so annoying get out of my room and leave me alone ..." My big brother - Nsika

" you so cool big brother " princess Sbahle used to say going back home got me having mixed feeling.

Memories from my past came rushing in I missed my sisters so much I missed home and I hates that our father died and left us with mess of his family..

My parents teachings still live in me though and ring in my ear I was taught to never forget my identities and become mature adults most people lose sight of who they truly are if there are raised in perfect family and trough the eyes of there parents ... My father told me to embrace who I am Be strong when I'm weak. Be brave when I'm scared. Be humble when I'm victorious stay strong for my family no matter what take risk and don't bow to no one rather die fighting then taking it

lying down . My Mother told that when it comes down to it you could be the most successful person in the world but it will never satisfy you if you not true to yourself.

Being a middle child has made me not need love that much parents mostly focus their attention on the first born last born or the soft weak child

“ Mlondi give your brother Jersey his feeling cold “

I remember my mom will say

Me : “ why mom ? “

Mom : “ because as much as his older then you he will need you to be a big a brother to him you were born to be brave courageous and strong so I'm not saying be your brothers keeper but take care of him when he need you the most “

I never thought what she said would come to reality one day thinking back I was only 5 years when she told me does exact same words . After my father passing I knew that I have to step up and men up .

You know this blood of mine... This surname ...This status almost killed me you know when the devil is testing you and plans to bath in your blood just to have that power over you ... That how that pig felt when he stood before up speaking in biblical

term " today we rejoice as you will watch me bathe in the blood of my enemies." \_talking like a Supervillain as if Bathing in the blood of you enemies is that easy as he said it.

First of all 'bathe' means to wash by immersing one's body. Thus a supervillain will either have to pack a portable bathtub or transport gallons of blood and how practical is that yeah right!

....plans did go his way because he did not make sure that we are really dead

I guess now The righteous shall rejoice when he see the vengeance: he shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked. [Psalm 58:10]... Hay don't look at me like that I went to Sunday school .

For years I have calculated the pigs move and I was not going seat and watch him take everything for us that day Nsika took a bullet for me... for us and by God's grace we still alive my brother lost his legs and is wheelchair bound I lost my heart It is said that all people are born good and that evil is something that we learn. Yet there are so many people who are just too good at being bad for it not to be inherent and that just me right there . I have lack of empathy and feeling for others makes it impossible to believe that it wasn't a trait I was

born with that why even today it's hard for Nsika to believe that I'm cold hearted  
No matter how long he has known me my own blood brother probably don't know anything real about me then just me being his crazy loud mouth brother who does not give a shit about anybody else. I keep all aspects of my personal life and personality separate and secret from many people . It makes it much easier to refrain from growing an attachment to others. . .and just like a chameleons camouflage to the world.

.

To be honest I was never born to be like this but life pushed me to it life was beautiful growing up but dark cloud came over us

### **Sponsored**

life was beautiful growing up but dark cloud came over us there are days we slept with no food in Our stomach no shelter over our head no cloths on our back our body injured from the shooting infection taking its place ...

I had to stop crying and start making money for me and my brother at the age of 15 years I had joined gang we were leaving in the shack then I did not see a need to go back to school but made

sure that Nsika finish his matric and Furthered his studies being hotheaded and fearless made me move rank in my gang when I turned 20 I was gang leader made shit loud of money on illegal business this blood money gave my brother his qualification in Bcom accounting his now working for some big logistic company and I'm so proud of him I worry about his social life at times and hope that he can move on from what happened 6 years ago as I seat in this place looking outside the window I wander if I will be able to control myself from killing that man with my bare hands

" by the way thank you agreeing to cone with us "

—  
Sbu said to me seating next to me I looked at Nsika he was reading a book I knew i had to do this for him to get closure maybe the nightmares will stop

Me : it not like it was by choice "

Sbu : " I know but tell me something why have you not avenged what you uncle did to you "

I laughed and continued to look outside my window

Me : " who said I'm not ? "

I am killing him slowly with out him knowing Sbu

looked at me confused I was not going to go into detail Not only am I very secretive about myself that also applies with work projects . I love keeping people in suspense you never really know what I'm thinking or what's my next move is.

Instilling this uncertainty in others gives me the power of surprise when making my next move

Banzi : you know for gangster your dealings are clean no criminal record no jail time ... just tattoos and this blond hair of yours “

This boy is really testing me

Me : “ because I aren't no gangster I'm a business man you dumb baboon stop hating on me it not my fault that you ugly “

Banzi : wenja ...lalela LA ..."

Sbu : ok ... ok gentleman cut it out! “

I bust out and laughed Banzi clicked his tongue and moves to another seat

Sbu : “ you know that if you continue to push him like this he will shoot you “

Me : “not if I shoot him first “

Sbu : “ you two are just the same ...I give up might as well kill each other “ I chuckled and I joined him

I was about to answer him when the pilot announced that we need to buckle up as we

about to land we arrived in king shaka airport and my heart started beating very fast

i made my way to Nsika I had to wheel him out

Me : you ok about this ?"

Nsika : I don't know and I'm unable to get hold of Thandiwe "

Our big sister is the only one that knows that we alive we call each other on dummy phones and destroy them later

Me : I swear to God if this is set up kuzochitheka igazi "

Him : can you come down we both knew this day would come "

Me : yah I can believe princess is getting married "

Him : she probably hates us for leaving her its like we abandoned her "

Me ; Mfethu don't say that We left something of ourselves behind when we left this place we stayed here even though we were so far away. And there are things in us that we can find again only by going back to our birthplace she is all grown up now the only thing we could do is talk to her"

He nodded he was tapping his hand on his chair he does this when his thing or nervous .

You know Finding ways to leave the past behind you is often the hardest thing anyone can do. But there are things you need to let go of because it's a necessary process to help one to survive But it isn't always an easy thing for most of us.

One thing I'm sure of is that I didn't run away or hide I was in plain sight and waiting to strike. So in other words I have successfully failed to let go and leave the past behind because my hush childhood experience made me the man I am today and im like an animal craving blood right now .

I had to remind myself that leaving the past behind didn't mean I didn't care about my mom my sister I was protecting them in fact I just had to adapt to life's never-changing realities that my family wants me dead.

I leave in my head most of the time just being grateful and appreciate to have felt the love of parent of worm home because I don't know if that will ever be a reality for me in the future.

what life experience taught me is that home is where the heart is .... And Bathakathi ready on Not I'm coming for you .

.  
.



To be continued

## Chapter 31

Trey \*\*\*

Mzamo " apparently the reason we are here it's because this morning we received a phone call from our daughter in law crying "

Sbahle uncle : why was she crying? "

Mzamo : looks like she over heard you and your mother having a heated chat about how she is not good enough for our family "

Uncle ; don't tell me you believe that deceitful girl she is trying by all means to get our of this marriage and you are listen to her vindictive lies "

Mzamo : so you are not skimming and planing something that maybe a treat to her life ? . . "

Queen : umbhedo lowo ...sizokwenzelani lokho ?"

Mzamo : can I stand ... In fact Let me stand ..."

Mzamo : you know why I hate greedy people? its because there always want more think that they have out smart every one else and they feel in titled to have it all "

One uncle : I'm sorry but where you going with this" \_

Mzamo looked at him

Mzamo : do you know who we are ?"

He stood in front of Sbahle uncle ... " When you look at us you see idiots with fat dip pockets that you can milk... ? " Sbahle uncle laughed you know that annoying Mocking laugh that made me angry " I got my own money but by tradition vele you need to pay a bride price and Sbahle is expensive because she is also a princess "

Me : you talk about her as if she an item ?" \_

Queen : listen hear boy you do not come here with your fancy English and question our culture ?? "

Me : you know that the greatest enemy of knowledge is not ignorance it is the illusion of knowledge ..

you think you got this all figured out it's either you underestimates or overestimates us your mind is capable of being quick to judge "

Sba/uncle : looks like you also haven painted this picture of us that we are after your money " \_

Me : if its not the case than why you conspiring to snatch this marriage from Sbahle after you

assumed who we are " \_

Sba/uncle : how can we snatch something

esibikiwe nasedlozini " \_

Me : I was coming to that " I snapped my fingers " thank you for reminding me of that so why you think I'm more suited to be your in-laws instead of Nontombi " I looked at the Queen mother One of the most powerful means of communicating with others non verbally is by calling up your most piercing incisive eye contact.

I sometimes also call this the "death stare" or the "predatory look." It's the ability to stare into someone else and make her feel as though you're staring directly into her soul... This will make her fear what you can see and give her unsettling feeling about how much do you know about her ...already she is shifting uncomfortable on her sit i got her where i want her ...she is scared terrified she already calculating what im preparing to DO her though she can only guess but never come up with a conclusive answer but with a question that ask " WHAT."

Queen : all I said was that ... She not good enough to be Queen there I said it !!"

I chuckled and set back

Mzamo ; do you understand the nature and consequence of your actions...you will do anything to make sure she does not marry my nephew here...right ?" \_

Queen "honest fact I'm trying to help you here saving you from that wicket child your nephew deserve better " \_

Sbahle uncle :I agree with the Queen mother and we apologize if you feel that way about us

Mkhwenyana and please rest assured that what ever lies that Sbahle feed you about this family its not true we are highly respected people in this community and our aliens with you is more important we can not allow an irresponsible child to destroy what we have built"

He looked at me rubbing his hands together Austin yawned " and yet you said this was not about money so you thought about this when before or after you found our that Mvelo is king ?"

Queen : what did you say white boy?"

Mzamo : you see you Magogo I like you you are an open book the problem with the rest of you is that you underestimate your opponent but i cant blame you you the most cunning bastard there

could be. "

Sba/Uncle : I'm not going to sit here and be insulted by you fuck your money if you want to withdraw from this arrangement do that ...there are plenty fish in the sea that will take Sbahle

Me : take?"

I hate how he thinks that his in control of Sbahle life

Him : my daughter my choice "

Me : I plan to marry her with or without your blessing amginamsebenzi ukuthi what you think of her ....and call her a thing or item you wish to sell uzonya yezwa !!!"

Queen : yoo she has bewitch you loyamthakathi "  
—

Me : she must have learned from the best ... She leaned from you "

Queen : yoo nansi ingulube unginonela '

Austin : ooh God does she ever shut up !!!"

" listen here boys that not how you address the Queen " one man stood up

Austin : ooh fuck that shit she ain't no Queen of mine " Austin pointed a finger at him you the most cunning bastard there could be. "

Sba/Uncle : I'm not going to sit here and be

insulted by you fuck your money if you want to withdraw from this arrangement do that ...there are plenty fish in the sea that will take Sbahle

Me : take?"

I hate how he thinks that his in control of Sbahle life

Him : my daughter my choice "

Me : I plan to marry her with or without your blessing amginamsebenzi ukuthi what you think of her ....and call her a thing or item you wish to sell uzonya yezwa !!!"

Queen : yoo she has bewitch you loyamthakathi "

—

Me : she must have learned from the best ... She learned from you "

Queen : yoo nansi ingulube unginonela '

Austin : ooh God does she ever shut up !!"

" listen here boys that not how you address the Queen " one man stood up

Austin : ooh fuck that shit she ain't no Queen of mine " Austin pointed a finger at him voices were raised every one talking over each other mind you there only Three of us with about seven Zulu man in this room Austin is a red neck the way he is so pumped up right now he had even turned Red

Sbahle : Enough!!! Just shut the fuck up!!!... You boys don't have respect you come to my fathers house and speak to us like this !???.. We may not be rich smart like you but we do not deserve to be attacked in our own home by you. .phumani LA !!!"

Mzamo set down

Mzamo : we still talking and raise your voice at me one more time you and I will have a bigger problem than what we have right now seat down and listen to me !"

Fuck the way he said it he just made the whole room submissive

Mzamo :...listen here I'm not attacking you but telling you shit that you already know about your self you trying so hard disguise yourselves as one who is innocent and gullible or try to project a different persona in the presence of others were you not the one accusing My daughter in law for murder few minutes ago ..."

"She was the last person seen with my wife we were trying to get answers " one uncle said looking down OK he is Thabi husband

Me : but accusing her of murder was it the right thing to do?" \_

Queen: trust me you don't know that girl she also killed her father why is she always the last one to be seen m with a person before they die?" \_

I was angry I felt my heart beat changing

Me : uthini !!"

Queen : that girl is a bitch we only gave her away because you insisted but she is a devil herself she even has a mark on her back "

I ran my hands on my face

Mzamo whistled : maGogo that mouth of yours is pushing my hand ... " he took out his phone and typed a message

Sba/Uncle : who you calling ?" \_

Mzamo : again I'm going to ask you this Do you know who I am ? Clearly you don't don't be fooled by this expensive suite and thing we don't get our hands dirty we kill for the ones we love ...you have gone to far ...and right now princess Sbahle is our own and ohh boy do we love her"

I saw the man in this room shake there heads this people hate Sbahle what ever rubbish they have been feed it has made them stereotype.

Mzamo : This greed jealousy and envy towards Nontombis kids

Has kept you on your toes for years you did



unthinkable things and you got away with it your  
so power hungry and your stupid minds gave you  
the idea that you're untouchable and you got  
sloppy or lazy to clean up your mess right now the  
cops are searching your house maGogo for the  
poison you used to kill the sweet Auntie Thabi oh  
and Bhengu why would you but such a deadly  
substance with your credit card "

Queen : INI!...." She stood up rushed to the  
window she panicked when she saw the police  
cars outside

Thank husband : ma you killed my wife ?"

The police siren made her panic even more

Queen : Bhengu do something !!!!!.."

He just place his hands on his face

Me : what can he do because we believe that in  
this very same house there is elephant and rhino  
ivory ... Am I wrong father in law ? "

Another uncle : I'm not going down for this yezwa  
!" he took out his gun and pointed at us

Austin : tell that to the constable ... "

Mzamo : do you have whiskey in this house ?"\_

Thabi husband : you mother fucker you killed my  
wife and that witch you call your mother " he  
wanted to jump them but they held him back

Austin : ooh look I found the whisky " he was holding a bottle whisky and three glasses  
The commotion in the house made me chuckle  
Queen mother was slapping Bhengu he was out of it one uncle was crying on Mzamo feet  
" I'm sorry please don't do this us we got families .. Kids to support I can't go to jail " he was talking to deaf ears

Austin : I took a sealed bottle you may never know with this people "

Me : with all the money we gave him he stil buys cheep stuff " we bust out and laugh

Queen : I said do something you stupid man "  
" who are you " he finally asked reality kicked in that shit just hit the fan

Me ; your worse nightmare ...."

Him : but why we have never done you wrong "

Mzamo : have you ever asked yourself why we chose this family and we were willing to pay anything to get Sibahle?"

I laughed and stood up after receiving a notification from Sbu that there outside

Me : because as much as you can kill a person igazi lomuntu liyakhuluma ... Through his kids "  
The door open and Nsika was wheeled in by Sbu

Mlondi followed and walked in "hello family I'm home!! Greet the party has started " he said the faces in this room were priceless Queen mother fainted ... I laughed  
Me : my work here ...is done

.

.

To be continued

## Chapter 32

Sbhle \*\*\*

mom took a nap while I made her food we have been here for hours now but Mvelo has not called or texted I was loosing my mind no doubt curiosity was killing me I made my way to the guest room and found mom just looking into space

me : " hay are you ok "

her : " I'm not going back to that house "

she started braking down and I rushed to her

" I cant I wont ..."

Me : " shuuuu mom I wont allow it mom I promise

you I will not allow no one to force you to do anything you don't want to do ..."

She just wailed I guess she is replaying the traumatic experience she ever went through in that house I suck at comforting people and her tears just cause me to tear up as well somehow I feel like this was all my fault she stayed because of me she suffered because of me. Looking from the outside you would think when someone finally escapes an abusive relationship the worst is over No more torture No more hell. No more emotional blackmail or physical violence. And with the source of the hurt removed healing can begin But after the external danger is gone and the abuser is out of the picture the survivor's internal journey is only beginning And parts of it can surprisingly be tougher and more painful in a way than the suffering they endured at the hands of their tormentor.

Her : 6 years of my life I spend in that house hoping this day will come It was hell that bloody mother fucker He tore me into shreds for 6 year ... 6 years !!! He abused me mentally physically emotionally and sexually I lost friends family anyone I was close to. He made sure he was the

only person in my life so that if he was gone I had no one where am I going to start picking up the pieces ?"

Me : by admitting you need help that is the first step the rest will follow "

She wiped her tears and looked at me

Me : I'm so sorry you were alone... And you went through that a part of me wish i could take the pain away "

Her : ooh baby ... You will know one day the sacrifice a mother has to do for her children we are born like that we protect we shield and we give the most warmest love "

She held my face " I'll be ok baby ... It may Not today tomorrow next month next year but one day I will "

Me : I'm going to be right here next to you all the way "

Her : I know sithandwa sami ... I just wish I can find strength to pick up this million pieces I call my life " \_I held her hand

Me : look mom Leaving an abusive relationship and trying to rebuild your life it's a traumatic journey . You will still have issues demons that you will need to deal with on daily bases someday

will be your highest happy as ever and care free and some days will be your lows it's normal to feel down once in a while but if you're sad most of the time and it affects your daily life you may suffer from clinical depression ...."

Her : stop warring to much baby ... I'll be ok "

Me : mom no ! you not ok and there is no shame to say I'm not ok I'm grown women now about to be Someone's wife stop treating me like a kid I know you hurt confused sad and worse past emotionally unstable let me help you now "

Her : Sbahle"

Me : mom all I'm trying to say is that let me walk with you It's not a quick process and you need someone to

To guide you and help you understand how to be gentle to yourself help others to understand if they don't get rid of toxic people in your life and learn to love yourself. Do what is best for you and don't worry about what others think "

She stood up and walked to the balcony

Me : I already lost one parent because of that family and I'm not going lose another...we going to report him "

Her : you know I did try that reporting him asking

for help but no one ever believed me or paid attention to me. If I could describe the impact and aftermath of emotional abuse in one word it would be invisible. Emotional abuse may leave no physical marks but the depth of the scars and the weight of the pain creates a burden that people can't see—or don't want to see especially in my case. I was Queen, had no right to speak, I'll of the king, he had power and money and got away with it, he told his family that I'm wicked, trying to taint his name, and the Bhengu name meeting was held, lesgodini, and the people were told about my actions, I was called all sort of names, even scared to even leave the house, but my in-laws were worse, I took it all in, there beatings did not hurt me ... It may have left scars and bruises but what hurt the most was the names his family will call me ... “

Me : “why did you agree to this mom? you knew what kind of man he was ... why you never left mom ? ?”

She folded her arms and tried hugging herself  
Her : it was arranged, forced marriage for him to get my husband estate, I gave him excess to your father's business account so that he may set me

free but in his twisted mind we were already in love he was leaving in his own fantasy world talking about our future and how long he waited for us to be together but little did I know that he was obsessed with me I removed my womb when he told me I must give him an heir I told him to take second wife since I can not give him children after a year of him sexual violating me "

She laughed

Her : He said he will never love another women the way he loves

I didn't know his medical records but I believe that he was bipolar "

Me : mom ... You could have ran away ..."

Her : he told me that I will never see my boys again he showed me picture of them being badly beaten there was so much blood Mlondi stopped moving he had a gun pointed at them "

Me ; ooh my God "

Her : so I stayed played a role a perfect wife three years down the line I attempted to run away again he told me nasty things that he will do to you and he will later auction you to the highest bidder yet again I stayed ...

I put you in that school to protect you not



because I hate you only me had excess to visit you he was furious ... I cut all visitation right and wanted you be locked away because I rather suffer alone than with you God knows i did not truest him "

I hugged her from behind I was crying mess  
Her :The turmoil was relentless. The few people I shared this with were oblivious to any abuse. Their empathy quickly turned to excuses for that mans irrational behavior. They'd never witnessed any of it so I am wondering if they ever really believed me or maybe thought I exaggerated the truth. The ups and downs became a regular gig in the days and months of that shit I call a marriage. It never stopped or slowed down. It was and is a toxic cycle in any abusive relationships. There were no normal days someone or something would cause a trigger reaction where there would be arguing threats and intimidation then denial blaming and saying I caused him to act that way. There was never an apology but there was always a guaranteed silent treatment that followed and lasted for days. The communication just stop as obedient I responded with " yes baba " ...  
" uma baba ethanda ngizokwenza "

My voice was gone not that i did mind I was just tired I became invisible as well as my feelings parish into thin air

The times I wanted to leave were immeasurable. He was an expert at convincing me I would never make it on my own and that my kids hate me . Self-doubt was inevitable. The abuse became such a profound part of my life yet I stayed. The level of toxicity increased through the years. I became very depressed one thing that kept me going was your smile wise words strong ability I saw your father in you I lost so much Sbahle and I made a decision that the minute you go to varsity I would take my life .. "

Me : " you stayed because of me ? "

Her : " not you ... All of my children have you ever heard that saying that says 'God could not be every where but he a mother '. Blessed is a mother that would give up part of her soul for her children ... a mothers scarifies jump all boundaries I had to protect you ... you was the only thing that made me take it all .... The man was psychopath he used my children to have his way with me "

Me : I'm so sorry ma " I pulled her for a jug

Her : I'm free baby thank you ... "

She free yes but she is still emotionally chained  
we cried in each other arms I wish my father was  
still alive mom need his hug  
" ma " a big male voice echoed in our room  
no...no it can not be !  
I turned around and held my mouth in shock  
Mom : Nsika ....is that you ?.....ooh Mtanami " she  
cried and I looked at my brother tears gushing  
down  
I looked as they cried in each other arms he still  
looks more like my grandfather round face big  
eyes I wish I could see how tall he is but he was in  
the wheelchair he kept saying his sorry his sorry ...  
But he was the oldest boy in my mother children  
but decide to Leave us  
He never ever spoke up even when they sold  
mom to that monster or even fought for for our  
fathers legacy Nsika was 18 when our father died  
surely he could have done something  
" its OK my boy you here now "  
" you went trough all that alone I'm really sorry  
mom " ooh Fuck him what will sorry help ? But his  
my brother his here if his in wheelchair chair may  
mean that the pig put him there  
Should i join in on a hug ?...should cry with them

to I froze on the spot I didn't know what to do I was born into a loving up-class family where were sibling rivalries that surfaced daily but it was just normal thing because our parents taught us to love each other never sleep without resolving our issues . But like most families the most important things we were a strong as a team. As we grew up some remained closer than others after my fathers passing everything went south. My sister was already married living in another country my brother were living there own life and I became daddy little girl he was my best friend and we spend lot of time together .

The only time I remember where me and my siblings were together it was my on sister wedding there is a photo of us linking arms on that day Smiling at the camera that was the last time I recall having siblings.

And tragic hit us when we least expected Dad died I looked around me and I notice that my world is gone

When a parent dies as youngest i Needed my big sister or big brother to seek solace from them .

Thandiwe was married did not even stay long after the funeral Nsika just mourned alone and

was on his own bubble Mlondi started a habit of smoking and did God knows what him being high all the time was no use for me no one step up or shown any interest to help me immensely in the healing process. Adjusting to the death of a parent is made easier when you have siblings going through the same grief together but yet again i was alone this moment right here is bitter sweet for me I miss my brother ...but do I really need him now ? I looked up and saw mvelo looking at me with a worry look I found my step I passed mother and Son having a tearful emotional reunion hugging and kissing mom thanking God Nsika saying sorry i looked at him our eyes locked as I passed him

" Princess ..." He called out he has my father voice now I stopped but did not look at him

Him " Sbahle ...Sisi Wami ... Mtaka ma " He called out again but I found my feet walking to the arms of the man that I have known for few months but has shown me that he will move heaven and earth just to be with me

Him: its OK " he pulled me to his arms as we walked to the main bedroom he took of his shoes jumped in the bed and cuddle me his hold alone

reassured me that I'm safe with him

Me : is Mloni alive " I finally asked

Him : yes "

I held my breath thinking about him is he OK did he lose a limp as well ?

Him : his fine Sthadwa sami ... "

I breath out

Me : where did you find them ?"

I know that his the one responsible for my brothers coming back

Him : Qwaqwa ..."

I nodded I can feel his chest moving he has so many questions about my actions back in the other room but right now its not the time I don't know how I feel

Me : please give me time ... I don't know how I feel right now "

Him : its ok " he kissed my forehead

I closed my eyes wondering if it was not for this man right here if he was not in my life would my brothers have or would they have not come back home ??

.

.

To be continue

## Chapter 33

Mlondi \*\*\*\*

I had paid the Police commissioner to give me just 5 days with my Uncle he can arrest the rest I don't give a fuck but this man here I still want to bond with him I haven't touched him but I just had few minutes of looking him in the eye just to instil fear in him I had hoped that Nsika will find closure in this fucked up reunion but expected he acted like pussy and asked for Maka'Sbahle fuck my brother is softy.

So here I am setting on the coffee table looking at him

Me : “ bhoooooh ! ! ! “ he jumped and I bust out and laughed

Me : “ you so funny wow that look ...hold up did you pee yourself ? ”

Him : you alive ? ...but how ? I mean ... “

Me : “no! I'm a ghost ... “ I opened my eyes giving a scary look I bust out and sniggered at his expression

Me : “ it's crazy that you shot me four times and I survived thinking about it who is on his right mind shoot a teenage boy four times ? “

He looked down I don't want his pity or sorry right now I want him to be the mighty man he was 6 years ago

Me : konje what did you call it? .....” A TAKE OVER ... BATH IN THE ENEMY BLOOD!1 “

I laughed at him the way his trembling right now its so funny no high and mighty I see.

Even this day I could not believe that I surviving numerous gunshots and miraculous I'm on my feet... doctors who have treated my gunshot wounds say that being shot is not automatically a death sentence. .. but in my case I was suppose to have been dead “It's a matter of total straight luck and I need to thank my God or Idlozi ”

Me : you know what the Dr told me ? “

He just looked at me

Me : ooh well I will tell you any way he said ‘ How can I get so many bullets in my chest the groin the abdomen and extremities and not have a lethal injury its pretty remarkable”

Him : “ I'm really sorry I do not know what gotten over me I swear to God I did not plan to kill you I was badly influence by the Queen and the elders they told me that if I do not kill you will kill me ... “

Me : “ I do not believe that your sorry what I know



for a fact is that you killed my father because you wanted my mother you always have this obsession and infatuation about her so you decided to kill the competition .... and used us as collateral for you to have your way with her “

“ I saw her first and your father took her from me !!.... “ he roared

I clapped my hands “ wow bravo now we getting somewhere here is the man I wanted to see finally you came out to play ! “

Him : “ fuck you busted .. What you going to do kill me now!!! “

I touched my chest in shock

Me : “ weee hold your horses don't get over yourself death is way to easy for you my dearest uncle ... “

Him : “ I should have killed you ! “

Me : “ yah you should have ...I know it hurt to see me here ... but guess what i'm loving it “

He charged to me and tried punching me but I punched him first he fell down and I gave him a mother of kicks in his abdomen

Him : “ aahhhhh “

Me : “ I'm sorry ... “ I kicked him

“ I didn't mean to hit you “ kick on the face

“ so be a good boy and stay here “ kick so bad that he started coughing blood

“ while consult with abaphansi on what I must do to you who knows maybe the dead do not want you either “ I spit on him bloody mother fucker nxa

Him : you know if I get out of here I swear to GOD I will destroy you “ he said crying in agony

Sbu walked in with plate of food he made himself at home I see Banzi was somewhere in the house on his phone ... I have ordered that all the guards and man that were working with my uncle to be killed I wouldn't have done this alone with out Sunny he is one of the Guards that was my eyes and ears in this place his father was a loyal servant to my father and he told me that he will do anything that will help take my Uncle down

Me : “ Sunny my man “

Him : “ Boy ... it's done “

We fist bump

Sunny: “ I really missed getting my hands dirty fuck what a trill “

I laughed and asked Sunny to take my uncle to the back room I heard him cry in vain when I turned around he was bleeding on the floor

Me : “ what the fuck Sunny ??? “

Him : “ he was not cooperating when I asked him to move “ Sunny wiped the knife with my uncles shirt as he pulled him and dragged him

I looked at him he shrunk his shoulders me and Sbu bust out and laughed

Me : I need to smoke dude you crazy “ I made my way out

.

.

I took out my lighter and plaid with it smoking in my father yard will not be ideal move unless I want him to jump off the grave and strangle me fuck I need to quite this shit . I walked around my birth place and a flood of memory rush in this place has not changed that much its just looks like more of an estate or gated community not like olden days when this place use to have thousands rondavel now it's big mansion house . I stopped and looked at my father's house the lights were on Sunny did tell Me that when Sbahle visit she stays at my father house I looked at it debating if I should walk in or not I continued walking ...

i made my way to my father grave instead it's clean I'm guessing maka Sbahle spend more days

here then in her house I looked at the engrave stone and a vase of fresh pink and white tulips yep my mother was here this are her favourite flower the engrave message on his tomb was so touching I looked at it as if my father will just show up I had a lot to say but didn't know where to start yet again that same feeling I felt when he died came back I felt blank and numb at his funeral I wasn't able to make myself cry even though I knew people expected me to I just couldn't feel anything at all . I'm not sure if I was angry that he died or angry at myself that I never got the chance to bond with my father I was good at making him angry but to have one on one bonding session was one of those rare moments if there were non at all.

For years after his passing I'd feel the same way – hollowed out they say my mother's grief remained raw and intense never diminishing as the years passed I had witness glimpse of it before we were shipped away to our doom I puzzled over it at times as my parents had had so many stormy arguments during my childhood. . . most of them I was the caused

My father wanted to teach me how to be

responsible and discipline while my mother argued that I'm still young he must let me be I will find my footing when time comes It was only when I became an adult that I realized love and discord can often coexist this people love each other but mostly loved there children more than anything .

Over time that strange cold blankness inside me melted away as I started to understand the emotional cultural and social barriers that prevented my father and I from truly knowing each other I started to piece together things that I had overlooked or taken for granted the gestures and the few words or glances that cumulatively indicated that we were dear to him. I smiled as I reflecting on my life I remembered the day my father took me to this very same family burial ground

My Dad gazed around the cemetery and said: "Look at all those stones Mloni. Each one represents a life. Marriages divorces losses financial struggles successes. We all spend our lives trying to avoid this place but death is inevitable. I guess the trick is to live a good life." I never forgot my father's remarks. We are all born

terminal as he used to say. . . looking at it now he was indirectly preparing me for the day he will pass on I moaned him like any other child will do to his parent but I easy let go of holding on to him and wishing his alive but lived through his teaching I may not be perfect but I try never to disappoint him he may not be around but I know he is looking down on me .My father was a simple men with a heart of Gold and lived for his family loved us to death my Goal is to fill those big shoes he left behind I have protected my brother and now I need to do the same with my mother and sister .

Its been 6 years since he passed What I regret the most is how many times I just wanted to hug my father and tell him how much I loved him. Pride and ego got in the way but I'm here now I can not change the past but I can leave for the now .

I breath out loud as I crouch down

Me: thank you for keeping our family safe I know it was hard fighting an enemy called family ... I hope you proud of the man I turned out to be ... I miss and love baba Ka Sbahle "

wiped my tears and prayed " forgive me father for I have seen I'm not perfect Remember that and

try to forgive me when I fail you. Lord please forgive me for my sinning I ain't saying that I'm finished but I'm praying in advance Cause the devil is lie when he thinks I'm not going to avenge my father's death and the agony my family went through "

I walked back to the house I felt a bit light then when i walk in this yard I looked at my father's house one more time before walking to my uncle house to start the games of torture .

.

.

To be continued

## **Chapter 34**

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

I woke up alone in my bed it was morning Mvelo was not on sight but he left his scent lingering in this room

I haven't slept like this in years I felt so safe in his arms that i just doze off and passed out.

I walk to the bathroom to do my hygiene process

there was new toiletries and it was 'oh so heavenly product' the same product I use only difference this are new I smiled to myself and how did he know this ?

I decided to jump in the bathtub and soaked myself .

Yesterday's event came rushing in and I found myself going under water because they just became too noisy

I don't know how on earth am I going to face my brothers funny how I have relieved this day so many times in my head but when it finally comes I don't know how to act what to do or what to say am I angry sad disappointed or just happy ... I don't know.

Two months from now would have marked 7 long years since I last spoken or seen my siblings if they did not show up yesterday . . . how do I deal with that good lord I do not know .

This whole reuniting of family made me think of my sister as well The last time I spoke to my sister was at my father's funeral

'be strong ok " she gave me a cold hug as if I was wet or stinking she drove off to her posh lifestyle she was in a hurry going to Brazil with her husband



and was not going to be held back buy a funeral and family feud .

I was 12 years old we she left we were years apart but still she was my big sister a phone call would have made my day once in a while But She was “too busy” I tried to call her for several weeks and sent many unanswered texts. When I open her contact on my phone which hardly happens anymore I saw trailing line of orphaned blue tick massages from me to her .

I look at her Facebook stream every once in a while when i had phone back then and I could see that she seems to be enjoying life with no need for a sister or mother. Photos of trips new cloths new cars all the bling and the glam but no letter no email no call to me just to see how I was holding up .

It’s possible she will come around again my mom will say but this time seems different This time seems more final. I’m done riding this roller coaster where she is the only one in the driver’s seat I have told myself that I have no sister the day of my memulo when she did not show up but Told Nwabisa that she happy I'm finally moving out from home and I must use this passage wisely

would it have been hard for her to tell me that. And now I have this issue of my brother behind that door. As much as fear that our circumstances might have been similar we were under our uncles oppression in different way but would they have come back home Without me taking the lead technically I did because Mvelo felt that as my hubby he need to step up and make me happy and change my living condition in that house so now my brother are here and I need to reunite and reconcile with them which seems unlikely since I've always played the role of the initiator I'm losing respect for this people who call themselves my siblings they just seems not care my mother almost die in that house and was sinking in depression she needed to be rescued but my big sister turned a blind eye Nsika just did what he does best and keep his head down . I understand he was young then but hallo his grown ass man now he could have made his move years back I feel like this people I call my siblings There disloyalty is repulsive towards me. After drowning myself in endless thought I rose under water that has turned cold which made me ask myself how long was I under ?

After draining the tub I dried myself and wrapped myself in towel when I stepped of the bath room I found the sliding door open and Mvelo was standing outside he was on his shorts and golf T-shirt I love how thick and rich his hair is and that he does not put that much effort in it it was let loose but still looked so hot regardless he smelled so good that I wish I could hug him he was on call a video call

" but daddy you promise "

Him : I know pumpkin but i told you that the Queen is not feeling well "

Her : did you rub her back and sang her lalabye like you do to princess "

I could not see him but I could tell he was smiling Zithelo is a talkative child for her age she bubble Mvelo always say that she is like her big sister Pam I listen to them talk and laugh it was beautiful moment to watch Mvelo is great father no doubt and sometimes I see my father in his in him I guess it true that Women who enjoy good childhood relationships with their fathers are more likely to fall in love with a man that resemble their dad

" I love you too pumkin"

He turned around after blowing million of kisses and our eyes meet his face light up when he speak to his daughter

Him : ooh Good morning "

Me :morning "

Him : " Zee say high "

Me: " I heard ... "

Him : " how long have you been standing there "

Me : " long enough ... "

He side smiled he did not move but continued to look at me he rested on his side and lean on the door frame he looked at me from toe to head ooh shoot I'm only wearing a towel a very short towel he chew his inside cheek I need to run fast

Him :wow you got beautiful legs "

" thank you " I looked around ... yes closet now Sbahle I rushed to the closet but felt hands touch my shoulder I froze ooh God his hands ran on my back he did not talk but the gentle feeling of his hands on my bereskin gave me tingling feeling it was like he was touching something that's fragile he caressed me so softly it was like he was touching something that's fragile he caressed me so softly careful intentional and thoughtfully My body immediately felt things I did not know they

existed his touch relays a multitude of messages from sexual attraction to deep admiration ... I did not know what he was doing and why his hand suddenly stroke my back gently he gently loosen my towel I gasped and grabbed it on my chest so tight my back was exposed I felt the towel rest on my waist.

" its beautiful ...." He said in my ear " you are beautiful " .... He continue to take my breath away by each whisper and touch I could feel his breath on my skin Warmth radiating through me and really contented like I'm wrapped in a warm blanket instead. Yet so nervous and completely vulnerable. I then become aware of what I'm feeling and i feel shame straight after I desperately hoped that he does not pic up how such a small act has such a huge affect on me I was getting redder and prayed that my facial colour doesn't betray me .

Him : baby what does it mean?"

I was lost I felt him moving my towel up and I pulled it and re-tie it up I felt volcano on my body erupting why my felling like this wait what did he ask me ? I was nervous but yet I wish his hands were still on my bare skin I could not face him I'm

scared on what might happened ooh God am I really arose ?

His lips were on my neck. He kissed me I held my breath letting out a whisper of sound he is way to tall and I feel like a midget under his hold he hugged me from behind his heart rate was beating abnormally fast as well

Him : the tattoo babe what does it mean "

Where is this damn voice when you need it

And why am I suddenly feeling like this with him ?

I mean I have held his hand and even cuddled with him never once has he been this close to me to my skin I was hot my breathing change shit I gotta pee

" I...i..t ...I..its my father name "

He kissed my neck

Him : its beautiful stop hiding it. . . I asked Zoe to buy you few clothes since you and her have same taste hope you will find everything in the closet "

Me : " what ?... I mean how ? " I turned

And he attacked me with a kiss and left me panting after few minutes

Him : "I think you need to go get dress "

I nodded

Me : thank you " he kissed my cheek

Him : go get dressed ... “ he popped his eyes and I giggled I dashed off I entered the closet I placed my back on the door

" what the fuck was that ?" I held my neck where his lip left wet kissed and my cheek I opened my eyes coming down from my high

Me : “ hhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhha! “

Him : “ what’s wrong .... “ he asked on the other room

Me : Nothing im good ... “ he chuckled

I almost dropped down when I realised how full the closet was this is not few clothes I ran my hands on top jeans dresses tops and my favourite shoes tackiest snickers I jumped up and down in excitement ooh God its like I died and woke up in closet heaven I jumped into baby pink above the knee dress. It hugged me and show off my assets I let my braids lose dragged my flops and I was out surprisingly Mvelo was still in our room laying on his back on the couch with his knees high he was on his phone should I be worried about him always on his phone every time he gets a moment away from me ?

" spit it out "

Me : mmm" he did not look at me

Him : I could sense that your getting worked out about some...wow " he did not finish he was looking at me

He dropped his mouth I pulled my hair up to messy bun

Him : now can I get my morning kiss "

Me : only in on one condition.....you put that thing away from you .... " he threw his phone on the bed

He pat a space next to him I moved to him and within a split seconds he flip me over and we exchanging spit it was slow ..and soooo good it felt like heaven " I love this dress on you " he said between kiss so this is how love feels like I was flouting it like I had no problems no worries in the world this time right here only belong to us

Him : " can you believe that we getting married in 2 days from now "

I popped my eyes and buried my face on his chest as he chuckled

.

.to be continued



## Chapter 35

Sbahle\*\*\*

I was laughing mess Mvelo is crazy when he likes we have been locked up in this room for hours now our stomach was rumbling with hunger we both avoiding the pink elephant in the other room my brothers are downstairs and Mvelo was afraid of my mom but mostly my brothers it was not being afraid per say but I know that he just wanted to avoid them because of respect As much as he paid Lobola for me but I'm still the last born and knowing my brothers they will fuss over me and make this situation even more awkward then it already is

I rested my head on his chest and he played with my braids this right here felt so right have a lot of hyperactive sometimes anxious voices in my head pretty much all the time. I knew when I realized that when we're together the extra voices go silent and I just feel very peaceful and warm. When I look at him I just feel this really solid feeling — this sort of strong feeling of deep satisfaction with hints of pride that doesn't feel vulnerable to doubt or speculation — I'd known

him for almost three months we have spend few days in each other arms and I told him I thought that I was in the process of falling in love with him and he just said 'I love you too just sealed the deal I'm no expect in love but Mvelo and I connect in a more spiritual level.

making up with him has made me feel some kind of way the rush my body gets when our body connect is out of this world

“ I’m not walking out of here alone “

Him : “ I need to helicopter to come and get me from the balcony “

I bust out and laugh

Him " now even your mom is going to look at me funny look how red your cheeks look "

Me : uyaphapha nje "

Him : your nutcase brother will shoot me no doubt "

Me : I wish mom was alone behind those doors "

Him : “ im so hungry right now “

And on queue his stomach grumbled i untangle my self from his hold

Him : uyaphi "

Me : we need to go eat " \_

as his soon to be wife it's my responsibility to feed

him hay don't look at me like that I was raised by a good women and some of her trades rub on to me

Me : " come lets face the music "

He pulled me back to his hold

Me : " Mvelo ... we can hide here forever "

Him : no hle-hle look at the time it's after 9:00 already what they going to think I was doing to you here "

I bust out and laugh I love how he calls me HLE-HLE I have realised that I have different nickname for every mood or occasion with him when he tells me he loves me or boost my self-esteem he calls me Ndlokulu or Ndlovukazi when I make him angry I'm Mabhengu and I believe that hle-hle is my bedroom name because he calls me that when he looks at me with lustful eyes he looks sexy with semi opened eyes

Me : come let's go eat ... "

Him : " i'm taking you out for breakfast "

I stood up and fixed my dress " that wasting money you have enough food to feed the village in this house ... "

Him : but is ideal that my my mother in law cook for me ? "

Me : I give up I will go dish up for you me "

Him : and what they going to say ... That making matters worse "

I placed my hands on my waist all along his eyes were on me he bit his inner cheek

Me : " I now that look .. not happening ... "

He laughed out loud " haybo ngenzeni ? "

He said with a side smile Jesus come save me I squinted my eyes and shook my heart he jumped up on his feet I stated moving backwards

Him : you come rocking up in here with this sexy number and you think I will keep my hands to myself...never ! " I do not trust myself when he speaks like this I found myself slowly walking away from him but could not get far as he held my waist

Him : damn you sexy " he whispered I blushed and looked down it not what he said but the way he said it that got me feeling some kind of a way ever since Mvelo came to my life he showers me with compliments I knew I'm beautiful but I was never comfortable with my looks that why I hide under baggy clothes and boyish look and this man came along and made me step out of my shell Let's be real words carry so much energy and depending

on the love language there are certain things your partner says that hits you to your core and boost your confidence right now I feel like a million bucks

Me : you know flattery won't get you anywhere ..."

Him: I prefer your lips on mine then you challenging me "

I dropped my mouth open and without invitation he already attacked me Never in my entire life I have seen or thought that I'm sexy and to hear him say it I personally think it's one of the sexiest things any man can say to women . There is so much certainty and desire in that one phrase. Such a turn on! Jesus Christ I am turned on my panty liner is wet what has this man turn me into I need to stop locking lips with him right now I pulled out of his juicy lips slowly ...

Him : mmmm"

I slowly pull away from his hold but he pulled me closer his hands are strong he started tickling me when I pulled a face on him I wiggle out of his hold even had tears on my eyes due to laughter I ran towards the door wow I escape if I stayed any longer in that room I don't know what would have

happened Mvelo is so hypnotic and I'm just trapped in his lustful power over me  
Him : " you know that you can never run away from me forever "  
Me : I know ..." I shouted back  
I started laughing as he ran after me he caught up with me by the hallway  
Me : " as long as I have legs to run ... "  
Him : " I let you win you can never outrun me ..... one day is one day"  
We both laughed  
The room became silent when we walk in there were seated in dining table this looks like perfect picture if only my Father and sister was around the looks I got were mixed mom smiled Nsika looked down he was still sad about me not welcoming him last night Mlonzi on the other hand wow his so grown up what the fuck is he wearing and blond hair for real ?  
Mvelo : sanibonani "  
Only mom and Nsika greeted him back shit now what  
Mom : I made breakfast I hope you don't mind "  
Mvelo : not at all Ndlovukazi ... I'm glad you made yourself at home "

Mom : thank you Mtanami ... But please call me "Ma"

Mvelo: yebo Ma "

Mom smiled

Her : Come join us please "

Mveli : thank you " I held his hand tighter as we walked to the table breakfast was awkward mom and Nsika were talking Mvelo joined in here and there Mlondi was just looking at me with folded arms

" so you decided to lock my sister in the room till this time "

I looked up it was Mlondi

Mvelo : " I'm really sorry I know this may look like I disrespected you Ma but Sbahle was not well "

ma : i understand ..."

Mlondi : "hold up why you apologizing to my mother alone because I'm talking to you !!!"

I felt like rolling my eyes at him I opened my mouth but his look made me shut it

Mvelo just looked at him and drank his juice this is going to go side ways this two are arrogant and no one will bow for another

Mlondi : "kahle ... Kahle what's your intention with my sister ... "

Mvelo : “ excuse you ? “

Mom : cut it off Mlondi "

Mlondi : I mean It's an arranged marriage there is no love so nje find me I'm lost ....ninzani vele ?"

me : wow !"

Mvelo laughed and wiped his hands "

Mlondi: “ I don't like repeating myself “

Mveli kissed my cheek

Mlondi : OK Mr let me make this clear to you ...

Sbahle is not ready for this sham you call a marriage "

Me : so you decided to crawl out from that rock you were hiding under and gave yourself a role of being my father last time check the only parent or family I have is my mother “

Mvelo : “ Sbahle ... “ he said softly

Mlondi “ I was not talking to you can't you see that amadoda ayakhuluma “

Me : “ I don't see no man here than the men sitting next to me All I see are just boys that ran when the tough got going!! “

Mom : Sbahle !!!" \_

Mlondi : haywena ..." He stood up

Mvelo: I need to make a call " he looked at my mom " thank you ma for breakfast "



Mom smiled

Mlondi : just try to have talk with your brother without fighting "

Nsika : may I have a word with you please " he said to Mvelo and they walked out

Mlondi : this wedding is off!! "

Mom : INI ?"

Him : the person who arranged this shit is out of the picture now "

Mom : what does that suppose to mean ?"

Me : what ??"

Him : you not marrying that guy "

Me: Mom !!"\_

Mom : Mlondi you out of line ...

Him: ' don't tell me you falling for irasta?"

Me : look who's talking you got white boys hair "

Him : haybo are you talking to me ? " he laughed he was annoyed ... " you going to listen and you going to make sure uyangizwa yezwa ...

Me : " I don't answer to you and I ain't listening to shit you about to sat "

Him : Sbahle I'm warning you!" He pointed a finger at me

My mom started laughing and clapping her hands

Mom : " I guess some things never change you

two still quarrel like monkey's ooh my God its been a while since I heard such beautiful noise “ she started crying I rushed to her

Me : “ im sorry mom Please don't cry “ I engulfed her in a hug

Mlondi : “ look what you did ? “

I looked up “ me ? “

Mom : ooh come on you two this are tears of Joy and stop acting stupid must I remind you we have a guest outside “

Me : technically mom we are his guest we are in his house “

Mom : “ ooh shut up “ we bust out and laughed “ Mlondi is so annoying

Mlondi : I don't see a need for this wedding to go on mom Sbahle is young she supposed to go to school and leave her life .... That guy is not good for her I know a fuck boy when I see one we don't even know his intention "

Me : “ his intention is to marry me I become a Queen give him 10 children and leave happily ever after ... happy ?”

Mlondi : “ what the fuck is wrong with you ? “

mom : language mlondi !!!

Me : “ stop acting like my father !! ... you have no

right coming into my life and telling me what to do "

Him : " Ngimdala Sbahle "

Me : " than act like it ... nxa !"

I exited the room I threw myself on the bed I hate it when I'm this angry usually it is because I am too emotionally tired and so drained of all energy that I just can't even bring myself to cry I find myself doing Dry crying and it's so horrible I feel numb my body doesn't want to be upset about my brother coming back or even worse Mloni trying to tell me what's right or wrong in my life When I saw them few minutes back I so wish I can just run to them and hug them but it's so hard when I needed them the most there were not there.

Mom : " is it safe to come in "

Mom asked waving a white napkin

Me : " mom "

She walked in with plate of food and set next to me

Her : " what wrong my baby in thought you will be happy to see your brothers but you have this anger this hurt inside of you "

Me : " there were not there for you mom "

Her : “ I did not bring my children to this world to rescuer me “

I shook my head

Her : “ listen hear ... So much is changing so quickly in your life I get that One of the things that is changing quickly is how deeply you seem to hate another it’s almost as if you fuel the outraged thought each time you get mad I've tried so much not to allow my circumstance affect you but looks like i failed miserable I'm trying so hard to reprimand you but well it’s just wearying. Sometimes it feels like the outrage just waits to jump on whatever issue at hand It’s a parasite looking for the next animal to suck dry.

So what’s going on? How did you end up this way?

Was it me ?

And is there anything that you and I can do about it?

Me : “ I’m just mad maka Sibahle “

Her : i understand but you need to cry it out scream but mostly just let it go we can not hold things that happened in the past everything that happened sweetheart was made to shape us to be the women we are today forgive your brothers

there are more of victims as you are to the mess created by me and your father if you want to be angry be angry at me “

I looked at her with glassy eyes no matter how I want to cry right now I know for fact that tears will not come out

Her : “ one of my son came back in chair and the other I can not recognised at all they grew up the hard way maybe even worse than us but today they came back all we can do is thank God that there are alive ... “

She pulled me for a hug and brushed my back it hurts too much to cry I think everyone has a point where tears are harder than the problem that's causing them yes I missed my brothers but still feel a tingle of hate and anger towards them

Her : It is time to move on and shed away the layer of your life that is making you upset. Fix the issue or just find something to make you better! Sometimes you just don't have enough power to cry because of anger it doesn't mean that you are not being hurt by this situation. You don't have to cry with your eyes to count it as a real cry sometimes it hurts so bad that you can't even put it out in tears so do what your father taught you ”

Me : I have never touched a sketch book since I was 12...since that day ...."

Her : I know but your father taught you art for a reason out of all his children you the one that took after him "

Mlondi walked in without knocking this guy really is he even one of my mother children I frowned

Him : there is black guy that talks like a white man requesting to speak to you "

Mom : ooh it must be Sbahle in-laws " she kissed my cheek and rushed out

I was not in a mood for Mlondi but did he move no he just stood there and looked at me

Him : Ntombi kayise " I looked at him only my father user to call me like that

" I'm not leaving this room till you forgive me ....but let me start by saying I'm sorry ..."

I looked down and played with my hands our of my siblings me and Mlondi we were always close he was more of my best friend

Me : I 'm not sure I like you brother of mine I want to say I miss you and I understand. But I am sorry You have affected me so deeply probably more than I know. For a long time I have wanted to scream "I hate you!" Most probably beat you up ..

But until now I have never wanted to say yes I  
forgive you I think it is because feelings of rage  
self-pity and disappointment covered my latent  
sadness like a heavy blanket"

He kneeled in front of me

Him : ngiyaxolisa ...Ngcolosi!

Wena wakwaDlabazane

KwaNephu KwaLamula

Nyawo zigezwa ngamazolo

Ninenivuka nixubhe ngelala

Shongololo!

Ngabe siyakudla sesabimilenzelenze

Nyawo zeshongololo kaziphumuli

Sigampu!

Ngwane Ingwani ngwadi

Abayibone ngesongukuthiiwelile

Jali! Ninenilala nomunwe

Nivuke nikhwifilanga

Mmemezi kaHlangabeza

.

. to be continued

## Chapter 36

Mvelo

When Nsika asked to speak with me I was a bit nervous I guess it because he is Sbahle big brother and I'm having a talk with him for the first time Walking outside with him I had a lot of mixed emotions I did know what to expect he is older than me and I don't know what he is thinking about this whole arrangement of me and Sbahle getting married.

I swear to God if he gives me that bull shit that this wedding is not happening I will go crazy on him you know the way Mlonzi acted back in the house it made me regret being a mediator to this family but honestly speaking I did what I did for my Queen and her mother and I just had enough of that Pig thinking that he has an upper hand over my women

The last thing I ever want to see is Sbahle upset crying or angry she is a tough cookie no doubt but I like how she just becomes vulnerable with me God is my witness that I have fallen hard for Sbahle and I plan to marry her she is everything I need in a woman she is strong outspoken not easily



intimidated she believes in culture and ancestors she is like my soul mate just scratch that she is my soulmate I find that when I speak to her she finishes my sentences and when I'm thinking of something she can just easily pick it up before I utter the words out we can be miles away from each other but she can still sense when I'm happy not feeling well angry she not that much of talker since she lives in her head most of the time but she has given me the excess to her inner thoughts and to be honest she one crazy women fuck I love her.

You know growing up I used to think that statement like " you just know when you found the one that she the one " did not exist or was not true I mean There is no way you can just KNOW as soon as you meet someone! You don't know anything about them! Fate isn't real!" so I thought but little did I know that God has created someone out there for me and we going to meet in the most strangest way possible who would have thought that I will fall in love with a girl I'm arranged to marry to me I agreed to this to make alliances with other kingdoms but it turned out that our love was already written in the stars long

before I was even born.

Before Sbahle I dated other people. Most of them honestly were terrible and I used to tap and go to be honest my track record with women is fucked up Many of them were just to clingy and had to may expectation of me or the relationship I thought I loved some of these people Maybe in some way I did . But somehow I still never felt fulfilled by it It was never enough It felt like forced love although I knew none of them were "the one" I'd lie to myself and to other people just to make my life seem more perfect than it was.

Nsika : I'm sorry about how my brother acted back there "

Nsika pulled me back to reality with him talking

Me : its OK ... I'm used to his kind if crazy "

He side smile

Him : I will like to thank you for what you did to my family I ow you my life "

Me :don't sweat it bro"

He looked down

Him : mom tells me that you and Sbahle have become very close "

I ran my hands on my head OK how do I answer that

Him : so you really serious about marrying my crazy sister "

Me : " aish yah she a hothead no doubt but that one of the things I love about her "

He looked at me as I set opposite him

Him : " you love my sister "

That a stupid question to ask but he's my in-law his the oldest brother and technically he carries the title of the head of the family

Me : " I do ... "

Him : " pardon me if I'm speaking out of team but this marriage was arranged right ? "

Me : " yes it was and I took time to know Sibahle personally and she wise women and will make an exceptional Queen I have lot to deal with on my side so I need a person I can really on when I'm away on business and that can handle the Kingdom and my other businesses "

Him : " she still young for such responsibility "

Me : " I'm 22 years old and I'm a king have international and local businesses to run I have a child a family and whole village to take care off .... I'm royalty and sometimes growing up fast is the only option to keep your head above the water for people like us .... "

He nodded and looked down a family and whole village to take care off .... I'm royalty and sometimes growing up fast is the only option to keep your head above the water for people like us .... “

He nodded and looked down there is something about this guy that looks dark and sad he carries to much blame and self guilt

Him : “ how do you do it ? “

I looked at him

Him : “ be on top of your game .... I mean I knew from the day I was born that my life will be complicated I have this huge responsibility to carry my fathers name when he died I was not ready for such I coward away and by doing that a lot of things fall apart “

Me : don't beat yourself about this bro we had to start somewhere to be the man we meant to be in the future like looking back in my life it was never easy I grew up not knowing who I was till I was 17th my father protected me from my family he practically went on suicide mission saving me and my sister from the enemies we call family so I vowed that I will never be like him and take an easy route out ... it was never easy and I know it

still going to get more complicated by time goes but I got good support structure that will help me and mentor me to be the best I can be “

He nodded " easier said than done I don't think I'm ready to fill my fathers shoes I mean I failed my family once I'm just afraid that it might happen again " he said looking Down

Me : “look at it this way Many people grow up thinking they want to be like someone else.

Whether we are trying to follow the footsteps of our father or in my case grandfather or some other person we want to be like. The shoes we long to fill seem unattainable and never the right size or fit.

Yet we spend much of our lives trying to fill the shoes of others before us.

We spend our childhood looking up to others especially a person we see as role model a leader. Hoping to be like them we change who we were born to be. Sometimes we spend such an effort to be like someone else we begin to forget who we really are ... “

Him : “ I just don't know where to start “

Me : “ you can start by taking ownership ... you the Bhengu Prince next in line to be your father

successor if your uncle was a noble man he was supposed to temporarily rule till you are old enough to take over ... so since he's out of the picture the house needs a head "

He looked at himself. Anybody can tell that Nsika is going through a lot. He's most likely depressed and the feelings of guilt and self-blame are so overwhelming. He's actually feeding into self-blame excessively and inappropriately and this right here is a main key factor in depression. He's just sad.

Me : " have you ever try talking to someone ? "

He shook his head

Me : " you should ... leading is not on in ones legs or ability to walk it's in your head courage and strength. Sbahle told me that you are the brightest ... quietest in the family ... that tells me that you are wise and you have a hungry brain use that as your strength to change things around here "

He nodded and smiled

Me : just remember that this is your birthright never allow no one to take it from you its your legacy .."

he offered me his hand for shake

Him : " you are a good man Mguni and I'm proud to

call you my brother in law ... “

Me : “ Thank you Bhengu “

Him : “ can you set up a meeting with  
neighbouring royal house ? “

I laughed

Me : “ I will be honoured ...”

Nsika is not that bad his quite reserved but deep  
down his good guy

We were called By Sbahle mom to come inside  
when we walked back inside the house I found my  
Uncle seated down

Me : “ is everything ok ? “

Mzamo : “ yes ... please take a sit “

it was me Nsika Sbahle mom and my uncle

Mzamo " as you know that the wedding is in three  
days time

Me :I'm sorry to cut you off but its actually two  
days from now ... “

Sba/mom : “ ooh my God I almost forgot ...a lot  
has been happening with my family oh my I even  
forgot my daughter's wedding “

Mzamo : “ relax Queen mother all preparation are  
done just few touch up’s but the day will be  
spectacular “

She breath out loud and we chuckled

Mzamo : we are not backwards in culture like most royal houses so My mother indlovukazi has sent a special invitation to your family and I decided to personally deliver it myself to you “

Ok what happening I was never informed about some special invitation I looked at the invitation card as Maka Sbahle read through it

Her : “ ooh my God as in tomorrow “

He handed the card to Nsika he looked at it and nodded ok what the fuck is happening ?

Mzamo : The Mnguni family would like to have family dinner just so that will get to know our in-laws "

I looked at him what is my Uncle playing here I thought will only meet on the wedding day

Sbahle Mom : “ ooh my God i will be delighted ... thank you so much “

Mzamo : thank you for accepting our offer ... I will let Queen mother know thank you “

He stood up “ well that all I have to say for now looking forward to seeing you tomorrow ... Mvelo

My I have word ... “

He said his goodbye and I walked him out

Him : “ what did Sbu tell you about the younger brother ? “ he asked as we stopped next to his car



I shoved my hands on my pocket and looked at him " .nothing much but just that he was gang leader in Qwaqwa did heist gun smuggling ... the works "

Him: " remember when I told you that Bhengu is sloppy with his money and his shady business ? "  
I nodded because I looked at his file and it was too easy to find incriminating evidence against him

Him : "so I had to dig it was to obvious as If it was planted "

I nodded " I had that feeling as well so what did you found out "

Him : what if I told you that human traffic drug smuggling illegal brothel it was planted on Uncle piglet.... The only thing we can pin on him is money laundry and animal poaching

Me : " what ? But everything points to him .."

Him : he had lot of enemies but who will have motive to destroy him slowly without him knowing "

Me : shit ....Mlondi"

He pointed with his head I looked up Mlondi was standing on balcony hugging Sbahle and he was looking straight at us ... No wait at me in fact

Mzamo : " the culprit himself "

.  
.

To be continued

## Chapter 37

Sbahle \*\*\*

Mlondi did say his peace and apologized it was really hard for him to say sorry especially since I'm younger than him he still does not see anything wrong in his action when he stayed in hiding for so many years or what he said to me downstairs or the way he spoke to Mvelo

I was also tired in going back and forth with him my brother is the most complicated arrogant messed up duschbad I have ever seen in short nje his just an ass

Him : I'm still not feeling your apology "

Ooh did I mention that he demanded an apology from me as well for not respecting him earlier

Me : can we shake on it "

Him : what are we 50 years when did we start shaking hands "

Good lord his personality is on steroids right now

and I'm just drained by this whole thing we have been doing he hugged me so tight that I felt my rib braking

Me : get off me you you're squishing me "

Him : I missed you ... You know talking to Thandi is not the same as talking to you "

I pushed him off my angry levels just went from 20 to 100

Me : what ...you spoke to Thandi ?"

Him : well ya she gave us money for rent for few months till we were on our feet after the shooting "

Me :wow ..." I stepped away from him I felt betrayed again .

Not to long ago me and my sibilings played together ate at the same table and slept under one roof close as pages in a book -- or at least that's how you remember it. So yes we drifted apart due to unforeseen circumstances when they finally decided to come back they tell me that there still talked and offers assistance to one another and I had to ask myself did they even think about me ? cared enough to bother themselves about how me there younger sister I'm doing ?

I looked at the grown man standing before me  
and I don't recognise him

I'm tongue tight right now 6 Years apart has made  
him a stranger to me i have little to say to him  
without noticing but definitely I have drifted apart  
from him the old loyalties are no longer there So  
what happened?

I look at him talking trying to justify his statement  
but I'm just not understanding why they failed to  
reach out to me was I No longer considered as  
there siblings ? Or maybe they blamed me for my  
father's death I know I'm being paranoid right  
now and the voices are to much in my head the  
truth is I'm hurt I know that only about one-third  
of siblings remain very close into their adulthood  
life's while the Another third remain relatively  
close but soon drift apart sometimes describing  
their relationship as distant or rivalries I know that  
me and sister have that relationship but never  
thought she will turn my brothers against me as  
well .

Him : what ... I told you what happened to us who  
were we supposed to turn too ?... Mom ?.... "

Me : she had every right to know that you guys  
were o'right "

Him : oh come on Sbahle she was sleeping with the very same men who put my brother on wheelchair !!"

I'm not sure what sting the most is hearing him say ' my brother ' or the fact that he doesn't seem to care what happened to me and mom in that house

Me : just get out!!!"

Him : I'm not leaving this room till we talk this through you boiling everything inside and you busy blaming me for something I had no control over ... come on Sbahle Grow up !!!" I just found out that I have little in common with Mlondi his too self centered and inconsiderate I'm trying by all means to understand him but this conversation is going down hill now I feel like strangling him his just deliberately pushing my buttons the wrong way without knowing why or how I'm this angry with him.

I shook my head and stepped out of the balcony I was mad I was angry yet again I felt like I was sidelined by my siblings

Him : look Sbahle I'm sorry ..."

Me : no you not in that twisted head of yours you think we had the perfect life with the very same

men that killed my father my mom went through the worse while you and your sister lived a carefree life away from us or from home ! what I hate the most is that the men that I love went out of his way to try and reunite me with my siblings but it was little too late you have that reunion . You have change gradually over the years due to life experiences and the people you were mixing with I thought or had hope that it will be easier to speaking but the years apart has made us drifted apart our priorities are not the same in your mind you wish we can fall back into default childhood roles when you have to tell me you my big brother and you right and I'm wrong ... I must do as you say as you wish because ' it's best for me ' I'm not that same girl anymore Mloni life taught me to fight to stand my ground and to protect my mother by all means I may not wear the pants in the family but trust me I did for the past years fighting battles that were way above my league and guess what I worn ... I don't really need you in my life and worse decision I made was to asked to be reunited with you  
Him : Sbahle .. " it came out as whisper I saw Mvelo speaking to his Uncle by the driveway God

knows how grateful I am to have that man in my life

Mlondi : you choosing an outsider instead of your own family "

I wanted to nod so badly the smile on my face was evidence that his the only human being that gets me

Me : we might have got on okay when we were young the only real link is the fact that we grew up together and emotionally and psychologically that was the only common link right now I'm perceived to be shaping my life my mothers life to hell with this family you can continue

To play the martyr or the bossy older brother role ...And of course as many a fairytale has highlighted siblings can be ruthlessly selfish "

Him : I'm sorry ...you feel that way about me ...

But I'm willing to do whatever it takes to gain your trust you my little sister and I feel like I failed you I don't know this women standing before me she strong headstrong fiers and has got all her ducks in a row all I'm trying to say is that if space you need that I'll give you .. I'm sorry I was not there to protect you from life and I can see that someone has replaced me " I felt defeated I was

weary he hugged me it wasn't warm as i wanted it to be but well it is what it is right now I wish I was alone .

" I would like to be alone please "

I said to him and walked back inside the room he stood there for few minutes looking at Mvelo and his Uncle if don't like that look but I'm too drained to reprimand him after few seconds he just turned and walk away without saying anything I finally breath out loud Do I hate my brother ? No I don't... Do I forgive then I don't know .. All I feel is just being drained and tired with this whole situation I just thought I was done with being angry I mean for a person that has been stuck in that angry bubble I finally thought I was free

I spent a lot of time in my life being angry. At one point I hated everything and almost everyone even found myself saying that "God I hate people " I hated the people in school shops play ground in my community and mostly in my family I just didn't want to associate myself with them I hated my life funny I used to love my life so much but it all just became grey and dull I can't recall when the precise moment was that it



began this disgust of the world around me I do know what I was disgusted by the mindless selfishness of others...the hush treatment in my house ....detachment from my siblings ...the death of my father. ...or the fact that i watched my mother get abused in front of me .

. I was in total frustration of the way everyone seemed to be wearing blinders to the world around them especially my world I heard silent screamed inside of me and all needed was to be heard

Mvelo came to my life when I felt I was about to self destruct

" Anger is armour — we go to it quickly to protect ourselves from other vulnerable feelings you might feel afraid or hurt first but anger a secondary emotion will surface quickly. Stopping to ask yourselves what is under the anger your primary emotion is another way to slow down and move from the fight-or-flight reaction to your reasoning part of the brain." Mvelo said that to me he took his time to study me and get under my skin he will video call me and will have silent conversation with our eyes ... He was patient and took his time to gain my trust and love . I won't

say I'm fully there yet where my emotions are in check but I will say that I'm not a slave or prisoner of my emotional distraction I take few breath exercise to calm myself down I walk away from toxic situations or people I so wish that I could self drown right now but I found my eyelids getting heavy

I was about to take a nap when I my phone vibrated I opened my one eye it was a text from Mvelo asking me to meet him in his car I jumped off the bed and walked out mom was in n the kitchen cooking she has made herself overly comfortable in this house aish I need to ask hubby if she can stay here for a while till the dust settles down ka Bhengu.

I looked around and noticed that my brothers were not in sight once I was outside I saw Mvelo inside his car with his phone in his hands I jumped in and he placed his phone aside and looked into my eyes

Him : “ hi ! “

I pouted Mvelo is always on his phone and when he see me he will put it away should I be worried ?

Him : ngibulala bani ( who am i killing )

Ooh my eyes must be red and puffy

Me : I just had a talk with Mlondi "

He held my hand

Him : ooh how did it go? "

Me : it went bad .... "

Him : want to talk about it ?"

I shook my head " I think my sister hates me ... " I faked a smile

He brushed my cheek

Him : hay the Chinese did not build the wall in one day so take it one day at a time OK ..." Mvelo touch just makes Me feel better all the time its

Me : " and you and Nsika ? "

Him : " we had a good talk ... " I looked at him waiting for him to elaborate but he just started brushing my cheek with his thumbs giving me a feeling I can't explain adequately. I try to talk myself through it and even stumble through my thoughts. There is complete trust and openness which is scary in and of itself when you've always dealt with manipulative assholes . There is side-splitting tear-inducing borderline maniacal laughter that he brings out of me There is security and safety. There is pure joy even when one of us has a bad day right now I feel like I did not have a

heated conversation with my brother few minutes back

Him : so my grandmother has decided to invite you and your family for dinner in my house tomorrow night "

Me : what ? why ? "

He laughed this what I like me seating his Dimple's when he chortles

Him : I don't know something to do with family meeting before the big day "

Me : " I'm not ready for that "

Him : ... Well your mother agreed I'm not sure about your nut case brother but Nsika is game "

Me : ooh my God ... its too soon "

Him : we getting married in two days time ... "

I know no need to remind me " you forget that I'm comfortable being with you ... not your family "

Him : you look cute when you panicking " ooh brother this man finds this funny

I took my phone and texted Diddy

Him : and than ? "

Me : I'm taking my crazy cousin along ...you said we having family dinner right I will need a destruction "

He just laughed his phone beeped and he looked at it his face changed

He kissed my hand and side smile

Him : I need to deal with something in Durban ... I should be on my way “

I hate goodbye it like when he leaves he takes a part of me with him I had asked him about staying a little longer in his house he agree his phone was annoying the shit out of me

Him : I trust you will behave and try Talking to Nsika "

I nodded as he came close and kissed me his phone vibrated and suddenly I was not feeling this kiss

Him : what ? "

I looked at him

Him : say it " he balanced his head on his hand with few centimetres from my face

Him : Mabhengu khuluma!"

My heart skip a bit he hates it when I don't talk his phone vibrated again this time around I pushed him off me

" your phone is so annoying " I found myself saying wait did I just shout at him

Him : what ?

Ooh God we not even married yet and already I'm detecting his life I felt so embarrassed after saying that I found myself looking down his quite I looked at him and he had a mother of all smirks he chew his inner cheek ... God not this look his making me nervous I quickly pac his lip and I quickly jump off leaving him shaking his head He started his car " two days left will see how far your legs will get you you can not run from me forever

.  
. .

To be continued

## **Chapter 38**

Mvelo \*\*\*

After driving from Sbahle home town I drove straight to Durban.

Sli has been texting me and left me voice notes about me rubbing salt in her wound by sending her my wedding invitation card ... I'm not a wedding planner and that stunt is written Pam all

over I wonder when she will accept that Sli is the mother of my child and she like it or not she forever going to be in our life... But that dies not make it right for Sli to flood my inbox ... I should have a talk about this with her I can't believe that Sbahle just picked up that it was another women texting me yoo that soon to be be wife of mine has another six sense.

" I'm already home when you getting here " it was a massage from Pam

I attempted to call her but she did not answer This days Pam condition is getting worse and honestly I'm scared when ever I talk to her or think about her I get this sharp pain in my heart . But besides this pain I have been having this unsettling feeling as well like something bad going to happen its this never ending worrying or sad feeling that comes from time to time.

I had to see and consult with Makhumalo about this I had this feeling that something was wrong as much as I have calling I can not see visions concerning me directly but my gut feeling will alarm me when something is about to go wrong in my life

Running a royal house is no child's play and my

guard need to be on alert at all the time I walk around with bodyguards I have learned to use a gun for defence but mostly I have to follow my lion instinct...

My status has created a lot of enemies for me Every thing just happened over night and I find it hard to trust anyone easily ...

As any other royal house there must be a royal traditional healer that will foresee events that affect the royal house but not all news must be bad some can be about a bright future ahead I did not see no one else fit for the job as one and only Makhumalo I trust mama with my life it took a lot of convincing from my ancestors side and on her side but I left her with no choice till she finally agreed she went through a massive training in the mountain with only her and my ancestors I fears for her life because " idlozi lengonyama " is powerful more than' lenyoka yasemanzini ' but she came out victories .

" good you here I was expecting you "

Transformation has made her like this she is so direct without wasting any time she lead the way to the ancestral room

Her : Nkosi yami someone is playing with fire LA "



Me : makhosi "

Her : there are dark Sky's approaching I see blood  
....death.....grief ..."

Me : makhosi "

Her : the blood moon is approaching "

Me : Makhosi "

Her : abaphansi they will give life and take life.  
..harvest season is here"

I looked at her and stop clapping

Her: destiny was not fulfilled ... Intombazane  
uzilethele amashwa..."

Me : ....

Her : nkosi yami I see grief in your house ...

Me : how can we stop it "

Her : you need to be strong the family will need  
you ... You the head .. Indlondlo ... The great  
white lion.... Mnguni "

She looked at me and the yellow candle fell  
down....

Her : I see rupture of darkness attacking the royal  
house .... He has set a trap ... Whatever happens  
do not let Ndlovukazi to leave the Ngonyama  
kingdom ... I see chaos .. Umsindo ... Isililo .....fight  
....there is a man who uses dark magic ... He is  
busy as we speak ... We need to go ..

Kuyaphuthuma "

She was saying everything all at once after  
throwing down the bones It was too much to take  
in and very confusing

Me : mama I'm not following "

She look up

" it has started ... I need to go the royal house  
kumele uqiniswe umuzi kunobutha obuzayo "

Me : we can leave today "

She started doing growling sounds I was clapping  
and saying my clan name... Till she finally came  
back from her trans

.  
.

Sbahle \*\*\*

I helped mom with cooking I haven't spoken to  
Nsika I was scared I spoke

Inappropriately this morning with him and I kinda  
regret it I'm not big in apologizing so I decided to  
cook his favorite meal I hope it still is his favorite  
meal dumplings and beef curry it's the thought  
that counts right and maybe we can have light  
conversation of supper

Me: mom how is Nsika ?" I was fishing

Her :his .... "

I looked at her but she just wiped her tear on her eyes

Her : why don't you ask him yourself maybe he might talk to you ... "

I nodded Nsika is not that much of a talker and I have a feeling that whatever he went through he did not just only lose his legs but a whole lot more

Her : sbahle " I looked at her

Her : I see you and Mvelo have become close "

I nodded

Her : so you in relationship with him "

Me : he just thought that it will best to know each other prior before we tie the knot"

Her : do you still want to marry him ...even after the person who arranged this is not in our lives any more "

Me : we talked about it and yes i will marry him are Union will be good for both families" \_

Her : so how is he like ?"

I smiled and looked down " his a good person "

Her : Sibahle Ntombikayise Bhengu do you love this boy ?" Ooh god did she have to call me by my full names just to get an answer dumplings and beef curry it's the thought that counts right and maybe we can have light conversation of supper

Me: mom how is Nsika ?" I was fishing

Her :his .... "

I looked at her but she just wiped her tear on her eyes

Her : why don't you ask him yourself maybe he might talk to you ... "

I nodded Nsika is not that much of a talker and I have a feeling that whatever he went through he did not just only lose his legs but a whole lot more

Her : sbahle " I looked at her

Her : I see you and Mvelo have become close "

I nodded

Her : so you in relationship with him "

Me : he just thought that it will best to know each other prior before we tie the knot"

Her : do you still want to marry him ...even after the person who arranged this is not in our lives any more "

Me : we talked about it and yes i will marry him are Union will be good for both families" \_

Her : so how is he like ?"

I smiled and looked down " his a good person "

Her : Sibahle Ntombikayise Bhengu do you love this boy ?" Ooh god did she have to call me by my full names just to get an answer

I nodded and looked at her and she smiled  
Her : come sit down I think we need to talk "  
I was hesitant I mean I never had ' the talk' before  
with Mom I was not even sure if I was ready for  
this  
Her : so useke wasondela esibanyeni sababa  
wakho "  
Me : No ma ... We have not gone that far "  
Her : mmmmm so what do you do when you  
with him "  
Me : maka Sbahle ... We just talk "  
Her: mmmm so you have kissed him? "  
I don't want to answer this questions any more  
what am i 15 years or something  
Me : kodwa ma .. Why so many questions "  
Her : I saw you and him in the car being all touchy  
and and kissy "  
Yooo tixo ... I dropped my mouth open  
Her : so my girl this is what you going to do....  
When you experience that your body betray you  
when you with him...tell him you saving your self  
for marriage "  
Me : he respect me maka 'Sbahle he believes in  
sex after marriage as well "  
Mom : are you ready for that? "

OK mom's question are crazy who's ever ready to be deflowered I shook my head

Her : good ... That means you ready "

Me : mom I said I'm not ready "

Her : do you trust Mvelo do like love him ...? Do you believe he will never hurt you internationally ?"

Me : yes !"

Her : that trust him enough to ...make you a women " She did a head shake and I laughed if she finds its hard to to talk to me about this than what was the point of seating me down.

I held my face my fears came rushing in

I never had many positive associations with sex not that I had sex by my best friend Zim was bitch and change all size and shapes in a her vj-whole and she will come tell me all about it . I always heard sex would defile me give me diseases or get me pregnant. I heard about the temptations of sexual relationships and how they would ruin my life if I got involved. This talks were meant to encourage me to wait until marriage to have a healthy sex life but instead it directly connected sex to shame no matter the circumstances. I began to believe that there was never a time or

place to show my sexuality...till Mvelo came along  
and he has made my body react in another way  
am I ready for my wedding night No ...

" I'm scared mom "

We heard the TV playing ooh it must be Nsika  
Her : will talk about this later I have two full days  
to prepare myself for the talk " .. I bust out and  
laugh

.

.

Mlondi \*\*\*

I looked at my pocket of cigarette and kept  
playing with them this is one habit i can not stop I  
have learned to keep my hands mouth busy to  
prevent myself from smoking

My phone ringed and I picked it up

" when you coming home "

Me : I am home "

Nsika : you know what I mean ..."

I breath out loud

Him: killing him won't get my legs back or bring  
back your childhood "

Me : who said I haven't killed him "

Him : I know you ... You don't kill but you play  
games with people's minds and when they think

their mad and losing their head that when you strike "

Me : Sbahle hates us " I decided to change the subject I don't like it when Nsika involves himself in my line of work

Him : I don't think so ... I believe she is just grown up "

Me : I hate that boy ...did you see how he looked at me he will not have the last dance "

He bust out and laughed

Him : I know ... Its because you two are more alike than you think ... "

I still think that this Mvelo gut is not good for my sister I understand if there were dating fuck now he wants to marry my little sister bullshit! sbahle suppose to go to university and be her own person not someone wife

Him : look bro ... If the two family join forces we will rule with peace... "

Me : what ...you thinking of taking the seat "

Him : its long overdue ...look I have to go ....and think about what I said ... He's not worth it ..."

Me : what ever "

Sunny walked towards me

Him : all done "



Me : great ... " I stood up and made my way to the grave yard I left my uncle chained to my father grave told him to apologize to him the whole and confess on why he killed him he was chained there the whole night

So today I have set up a meeting with him it will not be fair if singakhuluni njengamadoda

I have set and outdoor setting in the middle of our family burial ground

there was a table set with my uncle cheep whisky and my two cans of play energy drink

I asked sunny to untie him so he may join me for a drink.

This place has really messed up with his head he was busy looking around I could tell he was seeing ghost or his demons.

Me : sorry I'm late ... Aish was reuniting with my family you know how good it felt I wish you were there to whiteness it yooo its so good tell the people I love that I love them yoooo you could have seen mom tears of jot hugging me it was just a beautiful moment if i could show you i could yazi but you can tell because The love within me shines throughout angithi ?

I was even beyond blessed to see my sister as well

... Wow she is all grow up leading by example and is expressive beyond limits I bet she gave you a hard time .... "

Him : .....

Me : so how was your night ? ...and the talk you had with my father ...? "

Him : you sick !"

Me : I know .... Do you want something to drink so we can talk "

He looked around his eyes popped out as if he seeing someone yep Hus paranoid just how I like my meat

Me : aish the sun is setting so beautifully ... You know why I chose to have this meeting here ?"

Him : please get me outta here ... He is coming back he always come at night "

Me : mmmm now I know why you decided to build your own house you see him right .... You couldn't fuck his wife in his house in his bed right .... You sick bustad you "

He nodded and I bust out and laughed

Me : ncoooo poor you "

Him : please Mloni . . ngiyakucela my son I will confess I will tell you everything just get me out of here

I took my can of play and opened it I crossed my legs and looked around

Me : you know why i love this place because it tells us we will all drop dead one day no matter our titles status identity or level of importance. We are all mortal human beings. Human beings whom every day get a chance at life and love Some in the most excruciating circumstances and others who seem to have it all."

He looked at me with gushing tears

Me : So Sikhumbuzo Bhengu tell me this because I fail to understand why were toy never conscious of your mortality or be grateful of what you had or better yet let's talk about this hate you have or had for your brother. ... My father "

Him ....

Me : its getting darker ndoda asikhulume. .. "

.

.

To be continued

## Chapter 39

Sbahle \*\*\*

I heard noise like waves or water fall I heard humming of beautiful melody calming and soothing I rose from my bed i was wearing a long silky white night dress I was walking on barefoot I followed the sound I opened my bedroom door it lead me to place I have never seen before it was beautiful it looked like enchanted garden the river was big and powerful I looked closely and I saw a massive waterfall feeding into the this river it was so clear and blue in colour there

In the middle of the river set a big rock

And I saw female figure she was seating on the rock brushing her hair

Me : “ hello “

She did not respond

Me : “ who are you ? “

She did not respond I walk closer to her her back was facing me she slowly turned around she was beautiful her Melanie skin glow in the sun her eye colour was changing with reflection of her environment I have seen this face before but where?

Her : “ sawbona “

Me : “ yebo .... Where am ? “

Her : “ you in the royal house ... your royal house “

Me : “ who are you ...”

She smiled as the the sky change from blue to dark black

Her : “Sometimes life isn’t all rainbows and sunshine Throughout every person’s life there will be hard times where it’s forecasted to be dark and gloomy with seemingly constant showers. And when it rains it pours.

It is important to use these difficult times as life lessons growing and shaping you to blossom into a stronger and wiser person every day!

Me : “ I don’t understand “

Her : “ you soon to be QUEEN you are young but you chosen for a purpose... “

I look down I have so many self doubt about this title of being queen what if I’m not good enough what if I fail....I haven't even been schooled about this position .

Her : never doubt yourself ... This thing is in your blood its your birthright ... But there is no time then the now ....start now to believe in yourself start where you are start with fear start with pain

start with doubt start with voice trembling but  
start empowering you and believing that you are  
chosen for purpose just start and don't stop start  
where you are with what you have “

She placed a hand on my chest I felt this worm  
feeling

" starting as of today your heart soul and blood of  
the Mnguni family "

I smiled and nodes

I was confused though I did not understand but I  
could tell that she is indirectly telling me to stay  
strong to stay focus on what to come

Her : “all ways remember that you are The chosen  
one before you became his lover wife friend ...  
.you must never forget that you were born to rule  
to lead to be Queen ... “

I nodded and on queue the rain kissed my skin it  
was cold and hard it beat upon my head with  
silver liquid drops she sang her song that was  
somehow in tune with the raindrops

Her : Do not be angry with the rain it simply does  
not know how to fall upwards when it rains it  
pours but after dark Sky's come a rainbow “she  
dived in the river

Me : “.. who are you ? .... “ like siren she left her

song ringing in my ear ran after her I saw I yellow and white reflection of beautiful snake under the water... I held my chest

Me : “ Ndlovukazi ... Mnguni Queen mother ... “ I bowed my head as sign of respect and I was woke up to vibrating sound under my pillow

Me : “ hello “

“ ooh did I wake you ? “

I set up straight Mvelo is such an early bird is after 7am and he already waking me up and sounding fresh

Me : “ its OK I’m up now “

Him : “ again I’m sorry how did you sleep “

Me : “ I slept good thank you and you ? “

Him : “ only had few hours of sleep ... but I’m good “

Me : “ is everything ok ... “

He kept quite something is definitely wrong

Him : “ I'm still not sure what it is but I'm working overtime in getting to the bottom of it”

I felt something like liquid on my nose when I wiped it I saw blood I stood up and ran to bathroom

Him : Sbahle ... Sbahle "

I had already blocked my nose with a cloth

Me : mmmm"

Him : I heard you sniffing are you OK ? "

Me : aaah ... Yes ..."

He dropped the call and I ran to tap to wash this blood and I expected he was video calling me ...

What now

I picked up

Him : is that blood ???"

I nodded

Him : when did it start "

Me : right now "

Him : ma Bhengu ! "

Me : I swear I just woke up and it started .."

He looked down as if his thinking when he lifted his head

Him : i woke up with bleeding nose as well thought I should check up on you and see how you doing ... And now this ? "

It was more of question then a statement I held my mouth

Him : " don't worry about me I'm fine ...we going to be just fine ..."

Me : you hiding something from me I can see it in your eyes ... "

Him : so how is you day planned today ? "



Me : Mvelo !!!"

He raised his eyebrow

Me : uxolo ... But tell me What's going on ..."

Him : remove that cloth let me see if its still bleeding "

I wiped my nose and it looks like it has stopped

Him : sithandwa sami I want you to go pamper yourself take Dudu and the other mean one out

let me go check on what going on with

preparation for tonight " I want to strangle him

right now why is he avoiding my question and

why is he talking about Nwabisa

Him : don't pull that face on me ..."

I looked down why must he be be so intimidating

Me : " I haven't seen Nwabisa since that day. ... "

Him : " she your cousin and was bad influenced by her mother she was porn in her evil game don't

you think you blaming the wrong person ? The

least you could do is check up on her "

I huffed

Him : " look holding a grudge will only fuel her up and she will end up feeding into her evil heat I just

don't want you having unnecessary enemies "

I roll my eyes he laughed

Him : "any way stop rolling your eyes at me ... "

I laughed

Him: " I miss you "

I blushed " I miss you too "

Him : " I can't Wait to see you tonight "

I smiled " me too "

I wanted to tell him about the dream but I somehow find my self opening up my mouth and closing it .... Could this be the dark sky that Mvelo's Gran told me about ? Him keeping staff from me .... What is he hiding vele ? he looked behind him and back at me

Him : " look chubby cheeks I need to go ... open the side drawer I left something for you "

I rushed to the drawer there was box I quickly opened it " Jesus Christ ! "

Him : " why you calling another mans name women !! ... Say Mvelo Mnguni " I bust out and laughed

Me : " for me ? "

Him : " last time I check that card has your name on it ... so go spoil yourself ... I love you "

Me : " I love youuuuuuuu"

He laughed I dropped the call and jumped up and down i have never own a black card before and now I have a platinum card

I jumped to the shower took a quick shower ran to my closet and jumped into my short denim skirt and white vest with all start finished up with lip gloss

I walked to the kitchen to make breakfast but Mom has already beat me to it she left a note on the table

“morning kids I’m out for the morning I have to attend a prayer meeting will see you later help yourself to breakfast

NB: BE GOOD PLEASE”

I checked outside the window to check if she left her car and yes she did I took my plate and set on the couch

“ you up early kwenzenjani “

Mlondi said walking in stretching his body i still think this hairstyle looks ridiculous on him but funny enough he looks hot

Me : “ its beautiful day ... “ he set next to me and took piece of my bacon

Its good to say that me any my brothers have called it truce mom had a heated talk with us over dinner and well we had to move on from the auguring and blaming each other for situation we had no control over

Him : “ uphi uma ? “

Me : “ prayer meeting “

Him : “ she still does that ....? “

Me : “ without fail every Friday “ we chuckled  
Mlondi still hates or should I say dislike Mvelo we  
had to bag him to tag along with us today in his  
twisted mind he believes that Mvelo is fuck boy a  
cheat and a player ... He basically described  
himself .

I know Mvelo is not perfect he has a past maybe a  
present i don't know ... But he respect me enough  
that i have never picked up any bad vibes when it  
comes to that . but yesterday there was  
something about that call and his phone ringing  
non stop was I jealous bloody hell I was .. Was I  
insecure ....ohh hell no I'm Sbahle Bhengu I got  
the looks and body and damn do I kick ass bitches  
better be careful who they mess with once he put  
a ring on it

Mlondi : so you really marrying this fuck boy "

Me : I love him ... He loves me so yes siyashada "

Him : hayi futseck wena .. " I laughed as much as  
my brothers are back in my life I still asked my  
mother to walk me down the Aisle haybo siwe  
sivuka naye she has been my father and mother

the past years so nje I appreciate that women  
“ morning “ Nsika said as he wheeled himself in  
“ hi “

Mlondi : “ moja “

I decided to dish up for my brother we were  
laughing and talking like old times my mood today  
was just blissful

Nsika : “ Thandi asked me why you never invited  
her to your wedding “

Me : “ waist of paper “ I looked at there plates it  
was cleaned out yoo this boys can eat

I took the plates to the kitchen

Mlondi : “ what ? “ he asked walking in followed  
by Nsika

Me : “ look guys I understand that you and Thandi  
have a special bond but mina I’m just another  
little sister that she forgot about ... “ I finished  
placing the dishes in the washing machine took  
my phone and my mom car keys

Nsika : “ and uyaphi ? “

Me : “ I need to do my hair big brother ... “

Ml.ondi : “ but we still talking ! “

Me : if its has anything to Do with Thandi I'm sorry  
I'm not interested .

Nsika nodded while Mlondi was busy shouting

does the guy ever shut up I left him there calling out my name i jumped into my moms car and drove off playing hip hop I arrived at the Bhengu royal complex security was new I wonder what Mlondi is up too because he spend most of his days here I hope he will not make matters worse I packed outside Dudu house and she was out like a lightning

Didy : hay babe “

She pulled me for a hug .

Me : “ Dudu come on you know how I feel about hugs “

Her : “ ‘ooh shut up ... dmn have I missed you ... .your mother said that remember that we leaving at 15h00 “

Me : she in your house ? “

She nodded “ well all the aunts are I think they having a meeting or something ? “

I stepped on the break

Her: hay...boo!

Me : “ what? going on ? “

Her : “ shoot me and my big mouth ... “

Me : “ talk ! “

Her : “ ook ok ... they just laid Aunt Thabi to rest this morning”

Me : “ and they did not tell us “

Her : “ with all the drama going on in this house ... it was best that it was kept private and very intimate .... Beside this women are excited about your wedding ”

I started the car

Me : “ I see ... any news on the trial ? “ Dudu father is the family lawyer and he has been trying to cut a deal with the magistrate to realise his brother from jail only two were involved in legal activities and my Uncle being the kingpin

Her : “ everything is on a stand still the police commissioners keeps saying that Give me Bhengu and we can work on a plea so right now they all in holding cell ... “

Her : “ do you perhaps know where he is ? “

Me : “I may look all tough baby girl but I have no power to hide such a fat man “

She laughed “ my money is on your brothers .... “

Me : “ does are strong allegation missy be careful where you run that mouth of yours I just found my brothers aren't willing to let them take a fall for that pig

I smiled “don't forget that not all Bhengu man where that bad ... some of us we suffered under a

hand of women ... “

Her : and I hope that hag rote in that jail cell “ we bust out and laugh we finally made it to the mall .

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

We were drinking cool drinks me and Sbu he looked lost he was not talking at all it like his body was here but his mind was floating into space this can in my hand is not going down I should be celebrating that I'm marrying a girl that I love but things in my house are falling apart Pam is sick and breathing through a ventilator on the other hand someone is planning an attack on my house Sli is nagging as fuck . I just found out that my daughter is gifted last night she told me there is baby coming and she told me We must name her Naledi ... I'm just stressed its all too much was this the right time to get married when I don't even know if I'm coming or going .

" let me go check up on her " I pat his shoulder as he walked past me I found him crying like a baby last night when Pam went to semi coma we thought we lost her but she smiled and said " I can't go without seeing Sbahle ... "



That why my grandmother has decide to have this emergency dinner talking about Koko she is just broken her and Pam never spend that much time together but when they did Pam just became koko baby girl ... I wiped a alone tea that rushed down on my face ..

" how is she ?" I placed my hands on my face as Mbali set next to me

Me : what can you see Mfethu "

She did not respond Mbali is Makhumalo daughter she a stud she is more of my boy then girl she was born with a prophetic calling it's more spiritual ordained

Her : she too peaceful ...but she can not stand the pain she is feeling now ... She wants to go "

I looked at her with teas on my face

Pam had been on high doses of morphine to control the pain and morphine causes hallucinations so I ignored much of what she said to me last night she talked about seeing people mom and dad she saw all this while lying on her bed... She refuse to go to hospital so we turned her room to a hospital ward fully equipped

Me : it's not her time "

Mbali : if we all knew our time we would cheated

death every time it came to closed ... When 'THE'  
our father calls his sheep we listen and follow  
Corinthians 15:53–55

"For this perishable body must put on the  
imperishable and this mortal body must put on  
immortality. When the perishable puts on the  
imperishable and the mortal puts on immortality  
then shall come to pass the saying that is written:  
'Death is swallowed up in victory.' 'O death where  
is your victory? O death where is your sting?  
..."\_she tap my shoulder and we set there lost in  
our thought

When I walked back in the house to check up on  
her she was in a rare lucid state she said to me  
“Who is this old man standing at the foot of my  
bed?”

I blew it off as another hallucination must be the  
drugs She then repeated her question and asked  
that I move her oxygen mask she was frail  
beautiful but I did not recognise her  
Her : who does he look like to you?”

Me: I don't know sweetheart you tell me "

She described the old man as having white hair  
and wearing a white shirt with lion skin on his left  
shoulder She then said he was smiling at her i

turned to look at her and asked

Me : has he said anything to you ?"

I knew very well who she was talking about it was my great (\*3) grand father Somdala Mnguni

Her : yes .. "

"is he here for you?" I lump on my throat was so big that I find it hard to breath She then paused as if she were listening to him speak then turned to me and said "No. He said the moon in the sky will bring harvest time "

She smiled as she squeezed my hand

Her : when is my Queen coming? "

Me : do you want to speak to her ?"

Her : no ...I want to meet her ...go call her and let me get ready " the minute I left the room ... This hurt so much

.  
.

## **Chapter 40**

I could not stand seeing Pam in that stage I decided to lock myself in my study I was exhausted it was pointless consulting with my ancestors because they were not going to show me anything right now I have so many question

and the only person who might have answers is in the royal mountains I haven't seen my grandfather NkosiyaBantu since I got here and the only thing my grandmother ever does is just cry. My house is upside down and it's out of my control I'm angry sad but mostly confused. I gulped down the content of whisky and allow it to burn my throat I took out my phone and texted Sibahle again she has tendencies of not answering her phone she finally responded and told me she doing her hair I looked at the time and immediately became worried is she going to make it on time ?... why is she even dolling herself up when she already look so hot damn I miss her so much to think about it she is the only thing that makes sense in my life right now.

I heard a softnock and Makhumalo walked in after I invited her in she looked drained and tired Im guessing she hasn't slept at all since last night . So when Me and maKhumalo finally got home she just started talking and chanting she was running around the house burning impepho cleansing the house with water mixed with herbs ... She was sprinkling it around ( chela ) she was speaking to our ancestors she cussed and chased away a lot of

bad spirit that were roaming in the yard ( wabethela ).

she then asked to spend few minutes with Zithelo in the ancestral room alone she picked up some sort of a vibe from her they came out after an hour or so with sleeping Zee on her arm she told me that that when she was sick someone or entity gave her poison food in her sleep ( idliso) But it did not walk as it should have but only made her sick since Zee body fought the poison out she also told me to thank idlozi lami ( my ancestors ) for protecting her she also picked up that Zee is a special child she the first Lioness that may shift when she comes of age ...she told me that after the wedding I need to do ceremony for Zithelo to concede the spirit in her.

no doubt I feared for my daughters life and I blamed Sli for being careless how could she put our daughters life in danger like that ?

I asked Makhumalo why would they try to poison my child she told me it was to get close to me but since that did not work they uses insila Ka Zee ( hair nails bath water ) mixed with some muthi ( vudu ) on Sli when I asked what for ? she just yawned and took her stuff and left us there with

an instruction to keep the yellow green blue and white candle burning in the ancestral room till she comes back .

So there she is before me now I hope she will share some light in the million question that I have for her .

Me : mama I thought you will be on the mountain "

Her : your enemy's are coming ... They don't want this marriage to happen "

I stood up

Me : who is doing this ?"

She set on the couch opposite me

Her : he did all of this to have seat in the royal table ...he will try by all means to have that power back " I turned and looked at her

Me: what do you mean back ? Who are you talking about ? “

My anger just went from 0 to 1000

She clapped hands and called my clan name bowing her head my heart beat came down so was my breathing

Her : Silindile was suppose to be strong in faith so that should this day come she was going to be protected by divinity her anger and

disappointment has made her weak and that allowed darkness to walk inside her house .."

Me : she is the cause off all this ?"

She nodded I banged the table with my fist

Her : she is your mate ....or should I say she was your mate ? "

I started walking around the room

Her : the love you had for her was powerful and would have overcome any challenges she was told by your ancestors that she will go through test and tribulations to be with you because her blood is not of royalty she was asked to hold your fire and wait for you while she was giving a task to connect with her warrior Angel to enhance her faith ... She was suppose to be a powerful prayer warrior so that she will withstand and endure any hardship and no evil was going to come close to her "

Me: I don't understand "

Her : Silindile is favoured child her birth was a miracle and she was destined for greater power in life ... That why when you two meet you conceived a child that is gifted"

I placed my hands on my face

Her : her love for you has made her weak and that

alone has opened doors for the dark world to creep in she has allowed the most darkest spirit in her life ... The spirit of unbelief

I looked at her fuck sli is so stupid it's the same spirit I cursed away when she tried to take her life few years back

Me : but I thought she was strong in faith I mean she runs sermons and talks and ...

She shook her head

Her : Unbelief is believing something other than what God has said about a situation. You can believe Jesus was raised from the dead you can believe He is your Lord you can believe He is coming soon but if you don't believe and do what He says you are operating in unbelief. You can believe in Him but still not believe what He says. The Bible calls this an evil heart—a hardened heart (Hebrews 3:12). And a heart of unbelief grieves God. . . Sli was told by the higher power about destiny and her purpose in life she was not spiritually ready to be with she was suppose to Wait for the full blood moon and all was going to go according to destiny but destiny was was not fulfilled and now she is the very same person that is responsible in bringing darkness to this home ...



"

Me : what !!!"

Her : you need to be strong because the attack is on your Queen ...."

Me : No!"

Her : you are connected to the queen spiritually and when they attack her it affects you too

...That's why both of you had nose bleed at the same time this morning .... "

Me : " is she going to be ok ? " I was panicking I can never allow anything to happened to Sbahle I might as well lay my life in the hands of that person that trying to harm her .

She nodded

Her : she has Royal blood she is protected by the fallen Queen's but they going to use your weakness to destroy your marriage ...thread carefully my king if you hurt the Queen... blood will be shared .... The Bhengu brothers are a force not to be reckoned with .."

I sank down .... Not Sbahle not her I can't lose her

Her : you need to be strong there is no time for that. come we have a visitors"

As she said that a knock came trough and the savants told us that we have visitors from Silindile

Grandfather .

.  
. .

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

I did not feel like telling Didy about Mvelo and I to her we just close friends I did not want to bust my bubble so soon being in love is all to new to me any way and as much as I hang out with Didy she is still Bhengu and I don't trust my family with my life.

Didy was talking non stop she into fashion and knows way to much about what's in and what not she had so many ideas about the dress I must ware she was taking me in and out of boutiques till I feel my feet about to bleed.

Me : “ Didy we came to the mall to buy a dress for tonight and do hair I did not want to bust my bubble so soon being in love is all to new to me any way and as much as I hang out with Didy she is still Bhengu and I don't trust my family with my life.

Didy was talking non stop she into fashion and knows way to much about what's in and what not she had so many ideas about the dress I must

ware she was taking me in and out of boutiques till I feel my feet about to bleed.

Me : “ Didy we came to the mall to buy a dress for tonight and do hair this walking around is bloody tiring and to top it up I’m running out of time ... just make up your mind please !!! “

Her : “ ok ... Princess I’m taking you to the spa to relax and I will do the run around “

I just rolled my eyes I really did not have the energy to entertain her we stopped by the spa the front desk lady gave us a brochure

Didy : “ full body massage body scrub facial and hair and nails please “ the lady nodded and lead the way

The way my body was so relaxed after the massage and detoxing in the steam room I felt like a feather this girl know her shit

I had face mask on and some lady was doing my nails I did not want this fancy nail tips so I just went with French manicure with a bit of glitter

Didy walked in

Her : “ wow look at you “

Me : “ did you find a dress ? “

Her : “ got 5 choices but we need to pic three ... “

She showed me pics and my mouth was on the

floor ... I have never worn such elegant dress in my life before

Me : “ you pic girl I don't know too me all this is just too much “

Her : “ ooh brother you such a boy let me send this pics to your mother she will now .. “

I was ushered to the salon to do my hair they have unplated my braids so they just had to straighten it our hairdresser was very chatty she talked to Didy about everything I just gave up on feeling embarrass on how this girl act and talk to people it was all laughs and chit chats moment to her

Didy : I hope you have experience with this kind of hair my sister is attending her engagement party tonight and I want her to be more than beautiful she must blow her in-laws away “

Hairdresser: don't worry when I'm done with your sister you won't even recognize her

Didy : you have a 1hr bebe to make her look fabulous

I rolled my eye at them and took out my phone from my bag I realized I had tree miss call from Mvelo and four messages I read my message “ hi “

“ what are you up too ? ”

“ don't tell me you too busy to talk to me now!! ”

“ hayboooo ! ”

Looking at the messages that he left for me I smiled as I started typing

“ hi Ngonyama yesizwe “

I know by addressing him like that he will calm down and smile I have feeling that Mvelo has a lot on his plate I feel like he currying the world in her shoulder

Him : “ Ndlonkulu was ka Mnguni”

He responded and I blushed

Him : “ it's about time I thought you forgot about me “

Me: “ I'm pampering myself for tonight “

Him: “ why didn't you tell me I would have flew down to accompany you”

Me: “ naaa its kwl I got my crazy cuz with me “

Him: “ how far are you with the pampering ?”

Me: “ I'm doing my hair now then get my dress then make up “

Him: “ did you see the time its almost 14:00 are you going to be done by the take off time ? your plain leaves in 17:00“ aish yah I doubt that if I will make it but hay it my husband jet so whatever

Me: “ I will be fashionably late you are marrying me against my free will any way “

Him: “ is that so now “

I smiled because I knew he was laughing his but off

Me: “ I got to go chat later ne “

Him: “ I don't even know why you pampering yourself for ... because to me you just look like a goddess “

Me : “ you making me blush Mnguni “

Him : “I wish I can see those tiny eyes and pouty lips right now “

Me : “ stop it my cheeks are turning red .. “

Him :I love you uyezwa “

Does he ever get enough of saying those 4 letter words to me ?

Me : “ how will I forget when you tell me every time you get ... “

He chuckled

Him : “ fuck im whipped “ we bust out and laughed

Him : tell those people to speed it up don't even think about keeping me waiting for you “

Me: “ lol later “

I found Didy looking at me

Her : “ and that ? “

Me : “ didy go get the dress and send me there account detail so I will pay on line “

Her : “ mmm I see you cuz and you got a lot of explaining to do “

Me “ Just go !! “

She laughed and walked out

It took forever to straighten my hair and finally she styled it i have very long hair thanks to moms genes They blow dry it giving it that bounce when I walked I was looking totally different

I was now waiting for Didy she took forever mom was calling asking me where I am ? it was a mess time was not on my side Didy must be like a child in candy shop with all designer dresses surrounding her no doubt

Didy : ok sisi omuhle! umyisephy u sisi wami ? “ she finally arrived I .was about to send a search party to look for her

I giggled well she right I look absolutely breathtaking could not recognize my self either she grabbed my hand

Didy : we need to go home now we already running late “

I looked at her like what she the one that was

indecisive on which dress to take ?

Me : but what about makeup ? fitting of the dress ?

Didy : trust me I got you that ” I shrug my shoulder as she pulled my hair

Me: ok ok ok stop dragging me phela “

I thank the lady in the spar they all gave me a hug and wished me luck for my big day .

On the road Didy was driving and talking with his hands at the same time the way I hate being a passenger when she is driving because i constantly have to remind her that she is driving Mom texted that I must come to my father's house they all gathered there

Her : “ wow ... looks like everyone is here “

My mouth was on the floor ...the number of cars parked outside where the fuck are this people coming from ?

Mlondi was standing by his car with a big pocket of chips

Me : “ what’s going on ?

Him : “ you getting married and you are late ... “ I rolled my eyes and ran inside the house

I found mom Didy mom and some other close relatives in the Kitchen aish women and kicker



gossip

Mom : ooh mtanami you look so pretty “

Didy : pretty is for little Queen mother this girls here is smoking hot and compliments of me “

We laughed I gritted my alders in the house

Dudu Father : “ good you here we can go now ... we already kept the pilot waiting “

Me : “ I’m not dressed “

Mom : “ we will first stop by the hotel for that ...I have packed all of your close and whatever you may need I hope I was able to pack everything ... you brother has packed your bags in the car ... “ she looked up “ baba omcane ... asibike ukuthi umtwana uyahamba manje uya emzini “

One aunt came to me placed a rug over my shoulders head scuff on my head ooh crap there goes my hairstyle ... next thing I know we in the ancestral rondavel and Im choking in impepho ... mom was crying ... I was crying it was an overwhelming feeling this is my last day in my father's house as a girl ... this time tomorrow i'll be someone's wife ....ooh GOD ! this is really happening now ... my family is giving me away.

.

.to be continued

## Chapter 41

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

So after a lot of crying and hugging my family saying farewell to me we left only close family members took the Mnguni Jet the rest took commercial flight I was somehow down my whole life I wanted change but never thought it will come on form of a man

Did I make a right decision ? Is it too late to change my mind ? Do I really want to be someone wife at the age a of 18 ? What do I even know about love ?

I had so many questions I mean part of the reason I'm doing this is because Mvelo makes me so happy he gets me and has shown me nothing but love but now I look at my mom my brother that just came back to a picture is this really an ideal time to leave home ?

When we marry we face a difficult balancing act with our parents / family On one hand the fifth of the Ten Commandments tells us to “Honor your father and your mother that your days may be long in the land that the Lord your God is giving you” (Exodus 20:12). No matter what your age

you should honor your parents by spending time with them thanking them for what they've done well caring for them as necessary ...

But then we look at Genesis 2:24 part of the narrative where God creates the institution of marriage. This verse tells us "Therefore a man shall leave his father and his mother and hold fast to his wife and they shall become one flesh " The Hebrew word for "leave" means to forsake to leave behind to literally let go. As difficult as it may be when you marry you declare to the world "No other person on earth is more important to me than my spouse . " Your spouse becomes a higher priority than your parents or family can I leave without my family ? But yet again I have leaved so many years alone and Mvelo brings a whole new ball game I was resting my head on my mother lap she was rubbing my back

" shuuuuuu .... Stop crying Sbahle "

Me : " im scared mommy .... "

Her : " I know sweat heart I know ... "

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

I keep looking at the time and this man kept talking in circles I have no idea what is silindile Grandfather is doing here on the eve of my wedding but there was something about him that was dark and a bit unsettling he was here with a some other man who called himself Silindile Uncle Out of blue Silindile family are up in her life last time I checked she was disowned for marrying Zwane ... But ever since she became the mother of my child this people here became to friendly with her and my daughter I looked at my annoyed Grandmother Austin was folding his arms looking at them directly in the eyes Im glad that my uncle Mzamo is not here this meeting would have gone from bad to worse in seconds.

Koko : I'm sure that you did not come all this way to praise our beautiful home so may you please tell us the reason for your visit"

Sli Grandfather cleared his trough can they just get this over and done with

Sli grandfather : with all due respect Ngonyama we apologize to take your time we know that you got a wedding stuff to attend to ..."

I nodded

Him : but we thought that we should come and address the issue of Silindile "

I set up straight

Koko : khulumani please ..."

The uncle : As you know that Silindile is the mother of the royal princess Zithelo "

He looked at me and quickly looked down

Me : go on "

Him : since inkosi ( the king ) is taking a wife now..."

Koko : not just a wife but royal princess "

I looked at her making her stop talking so I can see where this story is going

Sli / gran: we fully aware of that that why we thought that the king can consider taking Silindile as second wife ..."

Koko clapped hands " yoooh"

Austin set up straight I on the other hand was speechless it all made sense on what makhumalo said now

Me : why "

The Uncle smiled " you see the king can take as many wife's he wants after he marries his rightful Queen so for the well being of Zithelo it will be best if her mother and father leave under the

same roof as husband and wife "

I nodded and they smiled

Me : so let's say I do take Silindile as second wife

... For the sake of Zee you say right. .. "

Koko : sorry to cut you off my son but as Queen the laws of the royal house say that a man does not chose a second wife the Queen herself must see a need if the house needs another women she will find the perfect match suited for her husband and they will make her second wife ... All I'm trying to say is that we hear what you saying but its not up to the king but to his Queen to make that decision "

The man swallowed and looked at one another's Sli uncle : but there is a child involved "

Koko : she Mnguni and her mother is free to visit her anytime "

Grandfather : you can not separate a child from her mother "

Austin : technically we doing Sli a favour she hardly at home and we can not allow one of our own to be baby seated by people we do not truest "

The uncle : nkosi yami wena uthini ( my king what do you say )

Me : I can not go against the word of my Queen mother and right hand man "

The uncle : there has to be away that we can do ...

You can not just impregnate a women and leave her like a uses tissue ... You need to take responsibility of your actions !"

Wow did this ass raise his voice at me

Koko : yeyiwena who do you think you are coming to our home and disrespecting us like this ??!!

They bow down and apologizes

Me : ok if i hear you correctly you asking that Sli becomes my second wife and technically my other Queen right ?"

Koko : iyoooooh with that commoners blood I don't think so "

Austin chuckled

Me :so i marry your daughter and we unite families right ? "

He nodded

Sli / gran: yebo Nkosi yami you see I was not happy about you only acknowledged Zithelo when I introduced her to your family that some how left Silindile and an outcasts ...she has never been the same after that ...so this might help her ..."\_

Me : I see "

Koko : ubonani Mvelo "

I raised my hand indicating to her that she must stop she mumbled something and folded her arms

Me : I understand that you want me to do this for Zithelo thank you for having Zee best interest at heart but what's in for you old man ?"

He stopped smiling and looked at me

Me : I know how you were kicked out from the Ncube royal house "

Well let just say that I do my research and background check on every one that comes to my house ... I never trusted this man from the word go the fact that he took Zee against sli will and came with her here told me two things it's either he was being a concern parent doing the right thing or his intention were just based on what he may benefit in all off this when I had a talk with Makhumalo I knew very well that he might be the one conspiring to have his hands on my family riches

Him : I was young back than and I'm ashamed of what I did "

Me : you committed treason you sold information about the royal house you worked for to its enemy "



He looked down

Me : I know that you are an opportunist when you realises that a man who knocked up Silindile is royalty you went against Sli will to introduced the child to me you wanted a reward from me but I only took my child and thanked you ...you have tried using muthi on Zee but that alone almost killed you when you were faced with a lion ... And now you thought that you must use Silindile ... If I marry her that will give you a seat in my kingdom ... So stop me if I'm wrong !!"

The man was sweating ... The uncle knelled before me

" I'm sorry your highness I did not know "

Me : Austin call the guards ... I never want to see you in my house in Silindile house if I found out that you still consulting with your Witch I will not hesitate to kill you ... I'm only giving you your pathetic life to keep because you're Silindile family... And if you think about double crossing me ever again ...Nci....Nci. Nci....uzophambana nezulu "\_

They were bagging me crying and asking me to have mercy on there lives

Me : I have lean that if you allow your enemy's to

live they might regroup and strike again ... I can not risk that I have a child and wife to take care off so watch your back old man ...."

I stood up calling sbahle leaving the man crying

.  
.

Sbahle \*\*\*

We finally arrived in Swaziland Mvelo reserved rooms for us in his hotel I was escorted to his penthouse in the hotel

Mom : wow this is beautiful "I looked around and yep it was breath taking Didy mom and the other aunts were lost I looked at the huge picture hanging on the wall Mvelo was seated on his royal chair he was wearing his royal outfit and on his left it was his grandmother on his right it was her sister and on the floor there was big white lion Mom: next picture he will hang will be of you and him "

She hugged me from behind

Me: is that a real lion ? "

Her : it looks real to me ..." i gasped while she laughed

I still wish to know why his village is called Ngonyama village ...( village of the great lions )

could it be that they have strange relationship with lions ?

Mom : go get ready love we don't have much time "

Didy dragged me by the hand rushed me to the gust room to do my make up one of my Cousin Nosipho took out the dress and stated screaming I looked at them also and I must admit I could not believe this were mine

Didy : I'm glad you like them hope they fit come seat down let me do my magic "

Me : who taught you make up I mean this whole fashion things "

Didy : you were not the only one that was lock up having this blood is curse I tell you so it was pointless in crying about being a prison in my own home so I took classes on line and I guess I was good at it ..."

Me : wow ... I'm so proud of you ..."

Her : yah "

She said feeling down

Me : what's wrong ... "

Didy : For me to get my degree in fashion I must showcase my designs but my father is not buying it ... Next year he told me I'm going to Capetown

to study a cause chosen by him ... "

Nosipho : at least you not arranged to get married"

Didy : I wish I was maybe I can start leaving my life .. "

Nosipho : sister listen hear not all arranged marriage are as beautiful as Sbahle's she is lucky she is loved... "

I looked down I was wrapped up in my own screw up childhood that I didn't even realise that I'm not the only one that going trough this

Nosipho: so you nervous about today "

Me: yep " I looked at nosipho she looks more like our maid then our blood relative's she was really close with Aunt Thabi I still don't know her story but she looks old then her real age

Didy: hayi sisi stop moving around you will make my work of art messy

Nosiho : art is messy didy

We laughed

Nosipho :I heard what Nwabisa did I'm very sorry "

Me : its OK she was influenced by her mom ..."

Didy : but to see herself worthy to have your man and you not deserving ... She is not the kind of

family I want to keep around "

Nosipho : girl don't say that you know behind closed doors you don't know what life's she leaves "

Me :but she is educated and about to marry to a family that likes her being someone's wife is just a bonus for her I still can not get why she said that Mvelo deserves a women like her then me "

Nosipho : again I'm going to tell you this not all arranged marriage are like yours some of us left home kicking and screaming ... So be grateful that you have kind loving carrying man ... Not all of us are that Lucky .. I'm not trying to say what she did was right ... But sometimes we always wish to have what others have ...based on the life we are leaving "

Me : be careful what you wish for ...you don't know nothing about my life "

Nosipho : it looks better then how my life turned out to be .. I got 3 kids with a man I don't love it was forced marriage that I sometimes wish I had strength to take my life and my kids because every time I try to leave something keeps pulling me back " I know I'm not an emotional person no enjoy physical contact but she needs a hug ...

I stood up and hugged her

Nosipho : don't Cry please I'm good after giving him 3\_children he found another young girl that he spend time with in the city ... So finally I have my freedom its not perfect but its my freedom "

Didy : fuck I hate being a Bhengu " she was a crying mess so was nosipho"

Me : you and me both "

Nosipho : I guest I do too because my mom is Bhengu ..."

Me : yaa maybe you right about Nwabisa I judge her before getting to know the real deal about her "

Didy : even so that does not justify what she did "

I nodded this got me thinking about Nwabisa she leaves a veery private life what was her end game in all off this

Didy finally was done with my make up I looked at my self in the mirror and screamed she stopped me just in time before I touched my face

Me: what have you done?

Didy : you don't like it?

Me : no I love it I look so so so..."

Didy:beautiful I know princess you deserve to shine and this is your day don't you dare cry

please just hold it in let me get dressed while your face set .." I could not believe that I looked so amazing mom knocked on the door and she had tears of joy on her eyes she hugged me so tight she was all dressed up and looking elegant as always she looked at me

Mom: awusemhle mtanami

Me: tanks maka sbahle

Mom: we living now Nsika will go with us because you ladies are taking forever to finish Wena

Nosipho asambe ... Mlondi will take you girls and that screaming must stop please..."

We laughed she left and Didy advised me to pick a dress I did not want to were white it was not my wedding after all and yellow was so not my style so I went with royal blue dress the shade of baby blue in this dress was not too bright no to light but a perfect shade it was one arm and had a rose like pattern of glitter that going across the dress it was body hugging and showing my curves the dress was long and had a fish tail design didy jaws could not drop any lower that it was.

Me: so how do I look ?

didy: breath taking

Didy : you got curves?"

We laughed my phone rang and didy answered it

Didy : Sbahle phone hello

she put the phone on loud speaker it was Mvelo  
today he has been calling and blowing my phone  
like crazy

Mvelo : aaah hi... May I please speak to Sbahle  
please"

Didy : she has cold feet I don't think she can do  
this

We giggled

Mvelo: what? I'm coming right there now !

Didy : just kidding tiger we are on our way we just  
need to convince Cinderella to wear hills and we  
off"

Mvelo : people are panicking now kindly hurry up  
please by the way may I speak to Sbahle

Didy : nop..." I snatched the phone from her

Me : hi"

Him : baby where are you ...should I come get you  
?

I laughed

Me : I'm on my way ..."

I heard him breath out loud

We did not talk much as he told me that my  
family just arrived ohh shoot we are late I hanged



up after calming him down

Didy : now that what I call love "

we laughed I toked my shoes there were silver stilettos hills I do not know why girls wear such shoes there are so uncomfortable

Me : didy take my sleepers please I do not think I will last the whole night with this shoes

I grabbed my clash bag looked at my self in the mirror again I smiled to myself we took couple of selfies before we left didy and social media she felt the need to brag about this event and post my pics. we left home around 19:10 yep we were fashionable late I was looking to fabulous and to stunning to care.

## **Chapter 42**

Sbahle\*\*\*

We arrived at the royal house and wow I must say that damn this people are rich the palace was something out of this world I have never seen such beauty the car did not park in front of the house but took another road within the royal realms there were lot of tress decorate in light

that we passed by

Me : where we going " I asked Mlondi

Him : the guards said I must follow this threes I will see an out door lay out "

Didy : wow this place is so beautiful "

Mlondi : keep saying that and you will walk to the event "

I laughed while Didy pouted i continued to do my breath exercise the near we got the place the more my heart rate jumped to my throat was I having cold feel or wedding jitters it was all happening at the same time the car engine stopped and I looked outside the venue And indeed it was an spectacular outdoor event the setting was by the dam or river this right here you only see on T.V or wedding magazines there was a stretch tent and the decoration was out of this world just by looking it from outside the music was playing softly in the background and everyone was dressed up for the event I was glad to see that the guest list was at minimum judging by the cars parked outside.

Fear creped in what does the most hottest bachelor who's also a King see in girl like me I'm just a rural princess this kind of life is not for me ..

Will I fit in ? ... Will this marriage last ... Does he really love me?

Mlondi turned and looked at me

Him : you ready "

I bit my lip and nodded

Him : you know you still have time to stop this whole thing ... Just say the word "

I thought of Mvelo I can not humiliate him like this but throughout the time I have spent with him there was so much unsaid we just fell in love without addressing what love is .. After what my mom went through I can not even think I will survive that I'm no expect in love I mean his the first men I have kissed said I love you and will allow in my father's palace.

Mlondi shook me " are you OK ?" He asked

Me : I'm good "

Him : OK if you say so " he stepped out and opens the door for me

I tried stepping out of the car but I was too nervous Mlondi asked me to step out of the car

I just looked I way

Didy : come on sis lets go"

I kept quiet

Mlondi breath out loud and closed the door

I could not find the right words to say i was scared ... Im only 18 for goodness sake this is too much for me

Didy: this is your day sisi stop shying out for once in your life do you ... Mvelo loves you and he will make you happy this is the day to shine like you were born too"

I shook my head I took out my phone and started typing a message to mvelo

Me : hi I'm outside I'm sorry for coming late but I have so many questions and doubtful thought about us I have no experience in love but I know what I want If you're going to want to earn my love then you're going to have to be willing to do whatever it takes to prove to me that you're worthy of my attention. You are going to have to be resilient and persistent. You can't give up so easily. I need to know that you're going to be the kind of guy who sits and stays even when life starts to get hard and rough. I need to know that you're going to be the kind of guy who is going to be willing to face whatever adversities our relationship may have to face. And if you're just going to give up on me just because I'm making it a little too hard for you then I will have dodged a

bullet.... I just need you to be honest with me I'm not single because I can't be loved. I'm just single because I know what love looks like funny that i don't gave a choice of not settling for anything less because of the blood that runs inside of me . . you call me the chosen one am I that for you or for your kingdom .. I need to know what am I getting myself into so that I will know my role " ...

I punched in send

Didy : no man you can not do this after everything you have been through you going to run away from happiness ?"

Me : all this glitz and gold may not be worth the shine Didy ... Just let me think for once please" \_

I placed my hands on my face

Didy jumped out of the car i'm guessing to call my Mom I did not care less because she was the one that agreed to this in the first place it's like everything that I went trough come rushing back listening to Nosipho story made me realised that this is an arranged marriage after all man change and what will that leave me It's so hard having to deal with the stigma of being unmarried especially when you born with royal blood . It's just so frustrating – as if the integrity of my existence is

merely tied to whether I'm in a relationship or not. I hate that we all live in a society that over-glorifies false loves and mediocre romances. It's as if you're automatically assumed to be living a decent life so as long as you're in a married with someone – regardless if that relationship is making you happy or not. It's sick. It's disgusting... Yes I'm happy now and I feel love but my gut feeling is telling me that heartbreak is knocking on my window am I ready to give a heart to a man that will turn around and break it ?

The voices where to much ... I'm over thinking I can't breathe the minute Didy stepped out of the car I just press auto lock button on the car and locked myself inside my mother came few minutes later i could hear her but was not moved... I hate this feeling of loving Mvelo so much that I even fear of what the future holds for us

My mother called out my name knocking on the window the voices in my head were to loud that I blocked her out she started banging on the window and demanded I open the door I did no such I just put my hands on my ear trying to shut everyone out she banged the window and kept

shouting at me I just sat there and put my head down she even threaten to smash the window of the car I just did not careless I kept saying to myself please just go away I'm sure my brothers were toasting victory to my actions right now ... Out of a sudden it just became quiet I felt relief that they have given up . moment later there was a soft knock on the window I raised my head to look Mvelo was standing there with his hands on his pocket he was wearing a black / Navy tuxedo white shirt with black buttons he was not wearing a tie he was not wearing a tie I looked at his face but he did not show any expression he just looked at me after it felt like a lifetime looking at each other

mvelo : open the door please "

I rolled down the window and did not say a word

Him: may I come in please

I looked at him and pressed the unlock button . he walked towards the driver's seat opened the door and he started the car

Him: let's get away from here"

I nodded and we drove away

.  
.

Mvelo \*\*\*

What suppose to be a family dinner turned out to be something out of control the guest list moved from 20 to 50 the Bhengu rocked up in numbers and then my friends close neighboring royalty family business friends it was just too much I had a feeling that Sbahle might not feel comfortable with this whole thing " too crowded for her " and yes my suspicions came to reality looking at her crying and confused broke my heart she needed air so I decided on a drive to clear her mind .

Her massage was direct and not filtered one of the things I love about her is how she is so direct and speaks her mind

we were not far from the venue but it was secluded we stood outside the car I place her on top of the car and stood in between her legs I placed my jacket over her shoulder she looked very beautiful I'm the luckiest man right now

Her : stop looking at me like that "

Me : you beautiful "

She looked down

Me : do you still want to marry me ? "

She slowly nodded

I breath out loud and ran my hands on my face



Me : why do you compare what you and I have to rest of what the world have ? "

Her : I have never been in love before so I don't know this feeling if its real if its temporally or fake ..."

Me : Sbahle me and you we were arranged to get married for the sake of our villages .. But I fell in love with you I'm not saying ' I do ' to a stranger tomorrow but I'm saying. ' I do' to a women I have fallen in love with look Sthandwa sami ..Love is a risk. When we fall in love with someone we are essentially taking a chance on that person. Why? Because whenever we fall in love we get used to a certain way of feeling; a certain way of looking at the world. However love can falter. Love can fail. Love can change. And when that happens we are forced to adjust. Sometimes love can even force us to let go. And that's always painful. That's always going to be difficult. That is always the kind of struggle that most people wish they wouldn't have to go through. But still that's the truth of love. It can rise but it can also fall. And that's why I only want to be placing my chips in you because i know that you actually going to give me the best chances at not losing it all ..."

She looked at me with tears in her

Me : let me teach you to love babe I'm not perfect but I rather be single then not have this chance with you "

I breath out loud and chuckled

Me : look at what you made me do now ... I just said my vows to you "

She chuckled and buried her face on my shoulders

Her : do you still want to marry me after what happened tonight? "

I laughed and held her waist

Me : of cause I will marry you ... I love how you made me an Ass in front of everyone by not showing up on time and when you do arrive you refuse to get out of the car you send me a long ass massage breaking up with me .. " I bust out and laughed she held her mouth before joining me

Me : you different Sbahle you are your own person if something does not seat right with you you don't compromise. You don't worship me or make me the center of your world you just ... A breath of fresh air "

I held her hand

Me : I know this may sound cocky and conceited at first. It may be coming off that I'm a little foo

full of myself; that I think that I am entitled to all of the best things that life can offer. But when it comes to you is it really so wrong to be thinking that way? Is it really so wrong for us to want only what we want; and to not settle for anything that we feel like we aren't meant for? ... I need a strong women by my side Sbahle I'm a difficult man to handle and I get bored if a women does not challenge me ...you my little feisty princess you keep me on my toes all the time and love that about you "

Without warning she attacked me with a kiss it was juicy heated and so good I found myself moaning in her mouth fuck does this women knows that I haven't had sex in weeks and she does this too me I think she felt my Boner because she pulled out

Her : we can go back I'm ready now "

Fuck I'm horny....I mumbled I adjusted my pants she looked at me and shyly looked away She jumped down and fixed her dress damn Sbahle body is banging I like how her small tummy pushes her ass out that hourglass kind of figure just made my blood hot it's going to be long night with her by my side looking like that .....

## Chapter 43

Sbahle\*\*\*"

The whole time driving back Mvelo was on his phone I have noticed that he is a perfectionist and the orders he was giving made me see that he rules with strict order ... No he was not demanding per say but he wanted to make sure that everything is ready for us.

Me: I still think you making a fuss about this whole thing "

He side smile and kissed the back of my hand

Him : for you I will bring the moon and sun to your feet "

I blushed and looked down

Him: some one has been asking for you for a while now "

Me : who ?"

I smiled thinking it could be Zee

Him : I can't tell you that but can we do Quick stop so you can see for yourself " I nodded but quickly reminded our guest

Me : dinner ?"

Him : that can wait ... She is more important "

Me : ok... "

It was not long drive because it was within the royal realms When we arrived at the venue we did not go to the main entrance but there was some sort of log cabin at the back of the stretch tent it was beautiful big house you know if this people were not rich I will say it's there house but I guess to them this is just another outdoor cabin nje my shoes were killing me now and I'm guessing Mvelo notice because I kept saying

“ ouch ... shuuu “ while walking to the door

Without any warning he scooped me up

Me : “ Mvelo ! “

Him : “ you in pain ... “ I smiled and rested my head on his shoulder he placed me down the minute we entered the cabin and took off my shoes he has an obsession with my feet every time he touch them he will rub and run his hands gently as if giving me a massage

Him : better? "

I nodded I walked around the house the inside was more beautiful but way to manly it looked so warm and cosy the brown timber and brown leather touch made it look so earthly elegant for an office environment or jazz bar

Him : when I first got here this was the place I

called home ... then we upgraded to the palace  
you saw when you drove in “

Me ; was the deco always like this ...? ”

I frowned no women will live in such a place he  
just laughed and shook his head

Him : “ well I made it a men cave after we moved  
to the new royal house this is where I escape too  
when I feel like the world is weighing me down “

Me : “ like you feeling right now ?“

Her squinted his eyes and cleared his throat I  
know that his going to act as if he did not hear me

Me : “ I will let it slide for now but I need you to  
tell me what’s going on before i walk down that  
aisle “

Him : why do I feel like you not giving me any  
choice here Mabhengu ”

Me : because as much as we can fight it we are  
very much connected what I feel you feel and  
right now I know something is not right I can see it  
in your eyes as well"

He kissed my forehead “ I promise I will tell you  
but first let me show you “

He held my hand and we walked through a long  
passage till he opened the door

The room looked like a hospital ward with

machines beeping I notice Sbu seating on the chair next to the bed I looked at Mvelo he sniffed his eyes changed he squeezed my waist a little bit hard I did not move I just took it all in and allowed him take out his pain on me he then walked past me heading to the other side of the bed who ever is their must be really tiny as I can hardly see them from where I was standing.

I found my feet leading me close to the bed following Mvelo he set next to a frail beautiful lady laying lifeless on the bed she smiled at him I know this face...

Mvelo : “ hey princess “

She lifted her hand and touched his cheek she weakly smiled at him

“ where is my Queen “ she asked it came out as a whisper Mvelo looked down before lifting his head to look at me Sbu stood up when he notice my presence

Mvelo :” hi sisi ... please meet my Queen Sibahle Bhengu ... “ he looked at me ... I have never Seen him like this he was broken “ baby come meet my one and only beautiful sister Pamela

Nonkwenkwezi Mnguni Ngcobo “ ooh my God it Pam

Pam : wow did you really have to call out my full names are we in home affairs or something ?

I smiled now I see the attitude I was warned about she slowly raised her eyes to meet mine and I smiled I felt like crying I know I have never met her but I felt like I knew her for years

Mvelo talks about her all the time .

But why did Mvelo not tell me about her condition he just told me that her pregnancy is complicated and she could not travel that's why she did not attend my Zibizo ceremony in my house I moved to where Sbu was seated she offered me her hand and I held it it was soft and so tiny.

Her: ooh my God you are so beautiful “

Me : “ thank you ... You also beautiful ” indeed she is she maybe sick but her smile small lips her eyes and an afro of curly hair enhanced her beautiful features

Her : ungazo dlala wena ... You should have seen me in my times yooo bengibaba girl ”

I laughed I like her free spirit

Me : I have heard so much about you I can not believe I'm finally meeting you “

Her : I hope this douchebag told you all nice



things about me"

Mvelo laughed " how can I not when you bully me every time you get "

They laughed

Her : " are you sure you can see kodwa makoti wami those eyes of yours are not normal for a black girl "

They bust out and laughed while I pouted My whole life I got teased a lot for having small eyes never thought that my own sister in-law will make fun of me as well and my men will actually laugh at me too

Mvelo : let me leave you two before she tells me she's not marrying me for laughing at her "

Pam : you got it bad bro "

Me and Mvelo chuckled since me and him get the joke

Her : "boys can you give me time to talk to my sister in law while I pouted My whole life I got teased a lot for having small eyes never thought that my own sister in-law will make fun of me as well and my men will actually laugh at me too

Mvelo : let me leave you two before she tells me she's not marrying me for laughing at her "

Pam : you got it bad bro "

Me and Mvelo chuckled since me and him get the joke

Her : “boys can you give me time to talk to my sister in law we have a lot to catch up on ...and baby can you pass my phone “ sbu gave Pam her phone Mvelo looked at me and I just nodded that he may leave he kissed Pam hand and Sbu kissed her forehead Sbu showed me an emergency button and told me that Dr and nurse are in the next room they left leaving me with pam she smiled at me.

Her : so where do we start since I really don't have much time "

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

“ how is she ? “

I asked Sbu as we set in the lounge

“ she is stable ... the Dr just confirmed that the baby is restless and she will do a C-section after the wedding “

I nodded

Him : “ so you and Sbahle you really are doing this ? “

I smiled and nodded

Him : “ look Bro marriage means life time commitment and to be honest I don’t trust Sbahle brothers the way they look at you they waiting for to you to slipup and they will be on your throat “

Me : “ I know “ I set there thinking about Sbahle and the Pink elephant in our relationship that we have to address

Me : “I'm really scared to tell Sbahle about Sli “  
He looked at me

Him : “ do you still have unresolved feelings for her ? “

Honestly I don’t Sli was my first love i was 18 when I fell in love for the first time. It felt like all of the movies TV shows and love songs finally made sense but back of my mind I knew the success rate of high school relationships was way low and to top it up Sli was older I was 18 she was 27 I was student she was my teacher she was a widow and I was a fuck boy she was lonely and I was there and shit happens both hormones and love’s disorienting effects made me think this could be it.

When me and her parted it felt like a break up I guess I wanted a sense of belonging from her and few years later it hit me that the very first person

you love is usually just that " the first" I felt stuck in cynicism and sadness for about a year or so I looked for a girl that has her personality and screwed up very badly.

Me : nah man I have crossed that bridge she is a good women no doubt but looking at the person I am now she was just going to be another Becky in my life a clingy cry baby ...you know i realise that The notion that love is not eternal is not shocking nor original so at times i ask myself that why do I still struggle to grasp it?....well It makes sense intellectually but how do you accept it emotionally? "

Him : you move on I guess ... You got a good women in that girl and I see her growing up to be a woman that can tame you "

I chuckled that so true you know I've spent the past year thinking about how to let go of a first love Sli looked as my forever because I have told myself I will never find another one like her I was ball of mess but being around you know fucking around she just remained a memory and after she started to feel like just another girl I have screwed.

sbu : aish bro she is still link to you via Zee what

you going to do about it ?"

Me : I don't know ... Sbahle is young and frankly I don't know how she going to take this "

Him : be honest with her tell her everything trust me I know the importance of honesty when it comes to women I kept Sne mother a secret from Pam for years and when I found out that Pam was digging information about us and why I took full custody of Sne it almost broke our marriage ... You know why because I took the child from its mother because of our messy break up that was never resolved and it almost destroyed my current relationship with your sister "

Me : what ? Pam never told me about this ? "

Him: because she is a wife and Ngcobo marital dispute are locked in our bedroom ... It all start with talking to each other ... No matter how dark the secrete is if love is a light there is a way "

I nodded I know that I respect Sbahle enough to keep my distance from Sli but how do I do that when she is a mother of my child and somehow resent Sbahle for being around in my life instead of her how are we going to parents to Zee all three of us without biting our heads off

Me :Sli is just another different person this day

and dahm she makes me so mad "

He bust our and laughed

Him : " this might only mean that you outgrown her face it Mfethu you were young back then she might have been the best thing to happen in your life then but values change look at the men you turned out to be she would have not lasted a month with you but she would have chose to stay because of Zithelo she would have agreed to a whole lot of shit that you would have dished up to her and girls like her are too weak to just walk away and that would have turned you to different men all together "

I clicked my tongue as he laughed at me thinking about how it was so easy for me go back and forth between her legs while she knew very well that I had found interest in Sbahle has proven that she was never in control of this relationship from the word go but I was.

The door swung open

Me : what going ? " it was Zoe with Veli

Zoe : non of your business " .they walked past us made there way to the kitchen I heard veli instructing people to put this here and there I made my way to the them I saw few catering guys

doing there thing

Sbu : and then ?

Veli : Pam can sure order me around on that bed I only had few hour's to do this " she breath out loud and held her waist

Sbu : what going on ? "

Veli : last minute bridal shower "

Me : what ? " ....

Zoe : bye boys .... " she pushed us out as we passed more girls coming in she closed the door on our face

I looked at Sbu who was about to explode

Me : hay don't look at me like that .... your wife did this "

.

.

to be continued ..

## **Chapter 44**

Sbahle \*\*\*

I heard noise outside my room or should I say Mvelo room in the penthouse it's already morning its my wedding day Bitches but I feel the weight of

the world on my shoulder pushing me down I'm debating if I should get out of bed or not my head was pounding my throat so dry .

I turned around and looked at time it was 04:30 am in the morning it's my wedding day and I have bags under my eyes due to not sleeping I cried so much last night and Pam being Pam made me laugh it out by hosting my surprise bridal shower it was nothing big but I was grateful for all the gifts I got and hanging around with crazy girls I wish that I was a drinker maybe just maybe I would have forgotten the talk I had with Pam early.

But when I got back to the hotel I was filled with mixed emotions that I ended up having an insomnia i cried so much I don't even want to look at myself in the mirror right now... My mom thought it was wedding jitters or me having cold feet but if only she knew.

Mvelo on the other hand was blowing up my phone non stop I don't even know when he stop he was worried sick about me but I assured him that I'm ok

“ Sbahle you're heart is heaving I'm even getting chest pain and you sniffing I'm coming there right



now !!“

I could not let him abandon his friends that had decided to throw him a bachelor party this was my budded that I needed to deal with headstrong and alone besides he was the last person I wanted to be with from what Pam told me about him and his baby mama I just needed space to digest everything. Am I ok now ? On this very same day of my wedding ? Not by a long shot but I kept my promise to go ahead with this wedding no matter what

So here I am looking at myself in mirror it's The morning of my wedding its a special and highly emotional time for everyone accept me the bride Not only is it the last morning I will have as an unmarried person it's also a small window for me to pack all my belongings check everything is in order with my Membeso ceremony and get to the ceremony in good time. An array of emotions just surface and each one i debated if I should honour as I prepare to start my new life.

With all the hair and make-up to perfect time-keeping and last minute preparations mom told me its normal to feel a bit disoriented few hours before the ceremony she saw right through me

that I'm not ok but again she still believed that its jitters.

" why your eyes so red " Mlondi asked

" just missing dad " I lied I knew he was not going to ask me further he hugged me and told me he is proud of me .

The drive to the Mnguni palace Everything just seem a bit unreal – the big day is finally here! I'm trying so hard to handle the confusion by staying grounded I take a moment to have a cup of tea but can't stomach anything I'm nervous excited and shit terrified.

I can't believe that everything was planned for me yes Veli did an outstanding work looking at the deco and my outfits but i still feel some kind of a way because not once was I asked what I like or don't my point of view was not considered...but I doubt any wife's point of view matter when the marriage is arranged . Apparently Mvelo wanted to do the whole wedding in one day and tomorrow we suppose to go on our honeymoon I don't know what's the rush was but his the king and his word is final.

My traditional wedding was a white and African print theme people came out in number to attend

this wedding and to celebrate with me I was tired of smiling and waving Mvelo on the other hand was over the moon it was good to see him like this but i had a lot on my mind to be in that happy place with him one look at Pam's kids and Sbu I felt tears building up in my eyes My body was there but my mind was miles away

If anyone told me about how sincere a person dying wish list is I would have not listened to Pam I would most probably have said that

“I’m too young to fulfil a dying person wish “

yesterday events started played in my head like tape recorder on repeat Pam really poured out her heart to me it was our first time meeting each other but she already knew what to say to me and what is expected of me in this family

“ Sibahle I know that you young but if you marry Mvelo you not only marrying him but you marrying his family his people his entire life as well I may not live long to be there for him or my family but I trust you will be there I know that you love him I see it in your eyes and in the way he looks at you Our family is a circle of strength of love Sbahle with every birth and every union the circle grows ... keep my family safe from harm's

way make the royal house feel worm ... never ever make my kids see that there is something missing ... they are young they will soon call you mom teach them about love ....make them know that Love is patient love is kind. It does not envy it does not boast it is not proud. It does not dishonour others it is not self-seeking it is not easily angered it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects always trusts always hopes always hopes always perseveres. Love never fails.... Teach them about faith show them how to pray make them fear God “

When she spoke about her children her face will light up she told me that when she says her children Zithelo is included and I must never make her feel like an outsider she may not be my biological child but If I love her father I need to love her unconditionally too.

As I sit here looking at happy faces feasting drinking singing and all the speech and gift offering I fake a smile I'm carrying Pam's weight on my shoulder she expected a lot from me she trusted me with a lot of things am I even ready for such responsible ? but yet again I think Pam left

me with no choice she was not pleading or bagging me she had this planned for months now she gave me instruction on how to run this house when she is gone you know If granting the dying person's last wish will help appease her mind while dying then it should be done regardless of me being ready or not I can not go ageist the promise I made it's important for Pam to let go of all worldly attachments to rest in peace and I pray to god that she does not die but her mind is made up she told me she is tired she told she knows her fate and I must not cry for her but rejoice the life she has left for me.

Him : “ Sthandwa sami ukahle ?” I wiped a tear on my eyes and smiled He held my hand we were seated on the throne seat I was crowned his Queen and Him my King he was holding my hand I felt powerful the seat was mine its a feeling I can't explain but I could not sit and enjoy it reign as I was a ball of emotions have you ever meet a person for two seconds in your life but had this undistinguished bond with them like you have known each other for years that me and Pam.

Me : “ I just need to use the ladies room please “  
Austin walked to us

Austin : the garden is ready for the royal white wedding ... "

Him : we need to get ready "

I nodded I hate this I have change my outfit for trillion times now since this morning and no doubt I'm tired Mvelo has tendencies of leaving people he invited behind to do his own thing the same thing he did last night he will do today our white wedding is an intimate ceremony with only family members and few close friends the royal garden is a sacred place and not everyone is allowed there. He kissed my cheek a girl that was appointed as my ward escorted me to one of the guest room I was followed by my makeup artist hairstylist and my designer with lot of guards .

You may ask yourself why I'm not using the main bedroom ? well tradition says that I can only go to the main Bedroom after my wedding festivity we still had a white wedding something to do with blood moon that will bless our union and I thought that amaZulu are traditional but Mvelo's family is worse ... it's tradition this ... tradition that ...yoo it's too much.

My ward asked me if I needed anything the minute I walked inside the room I shook my head

No

Me : “ can you leave me please “

She bowed “ yes her majesty “ she told everyone to wait outside thank God I can finally breathe I can never get used being called ' my Queen my Lady her Majesty 'but I guess it is what it is I took off my shoes and threw myself on the bed I was woken up by massive cramps on my abdomen I tossed and turned when I opened my eyes I was on my wedding dress I felt something wet when I looked down I was soaked in blood I tried to stand but the pain was to much I screamed till I felt hands shaking me I shoot my eyes open and they landed on Pam she was carrying a baby she walked to me and placed it on my arms

Her : “ her name is Naledi ... take care of her “

I looked at her she was glowing she was beautiful and looked healthy

Her : “ I have to go my Queen I love you so much ...I'm with you in spirit “

I called out her name when I shoot my eyes open I found Mvelo looking at me his eyes were bloodshot

He did not say a word to me but engulfed me in a hug I cried my lungs out as he brushed my back I

could feel my shoulder getting wet he was also crying ...

.  
.

To be continued

## Chapter 45

Mvelo \*\*\*\*

I could not shake the feeling that Sbahle was not well one of her servants rushed to me and told me that she is crying in her sleep I rushed to her room and found her shaking as if she is having a seizure her eyes turned back and only a white part was showing Makhumalo walked in and took Sbahle left hand and she inserted goatskin wrist band and some red and white beads

Makhumalo : we don't have enough time you need to wake her up “

I nodded she left the room I held her hand and I saw her dream I was there the pain she felt it looked and felt so real when she finally woke up her tears just gushed down I pulled her into a hug I hate Pam for telling Sbahle about her being sick



not only that but her throwing in the towel When one hears the word cancer it can elicit a variety of reactions. Personally the only word that struck a deeper chord was hearing the word “terminal.” To be told that even today with all this modern medicine the world has to offer it is the saddest of realities that people still do die from cancer. It did not make me any more prepared for what the actuality of that statement truly meant. As she continued living life despite the looming diagnosis of terminal hanging over her till came the day when she was too tired to fight she didn't want to be alive and to feel pain anymore she was just fucken half-dead- alive and I could not do shit about it .. I'm haunted by our past memory and the future we planned together This was almost a pre-grief seeing her in that bed A sadness that we knew would befall those closest to her due to the fact that we knew she was going to lose her life. How and when it will that happened we had no idea but prayed for a miracle The advice that was given was to fight and Try our best to enjoy the time we had with her . To try and stave off the grief until she was really gone. This morning My sister did not feel like waking up

she said she was tired she told Sbu to enjoy the wedding she had few minutes chat with Sbahle and hugged her children dearly she requested to go to hospital She was in pain and blamed it for not resting last night .. she was happy she looked better then she was days back due to my wedding taking place she made me promise to visit her once me and Sbahle are husband and wife Pam's word is always finale she is stubborn and hotheaded I could not disagree with her even if I could .

Sbahle : I hurts so bad Mvelo “

Me : “ I know baby ... “

Her : “ I need to see her “

I just held her tight I broke down and cry fuck the statement that man don't cry we talking about my one and only sister here we had our upside down fought like any other siblings but she has been the only person that was holding it down for me for years she was a parent to me I am who I am today because of her how do I continue? how do i go on it was quite complex situate We are facing losing a sister and a daughter within our family that had been beyond close to each and every one of us but was not quite shattered since cancer had

come into our lives. The structure of our family had shifted and changed as each of us has coped drastically differently as time unfolded. So how do I cope stay in this place how do i look at Sbahle and tell her everything will be ok while I don't know if I'm coming or going I'm walking around an open bleeding heart.. what do I do where I see that there might be no future for my sister and it feels like there's no future for anyone in this house without her really? How do i put my clothes on in the morning and look in the mirror without screaming? How do i show up to her kids when it feels like I'm dying inside? How do i keep pretending keep tolerating the blindness of everyone and everything around me "

“ Ngonyama and Ndlonkulu ... we are ready for you “

It was my grandmother I slowly untangle myself from my wife arms

Me : baby ... We need to do this now"

She looked at me as if i'm crazy

Her : “ what ... we cant I need to go to the hospital right now !! “

I just looked down

Koko : “ Ndlonkulu ... Nokwenkwezi is fine I just

finished talking to Sbu and he told me she in surgery as we speak the baby was restless so they doing a C-section “

Me : “ Sthandwa sami ... we need to get married “ as much as we traditionally married it is important that we have this white wedding the ceremony need be blessed and legally I need Sbahle to be my wife I wiped her tears as she jumped off the bed

Her ; No!"

Me : baby calm down please "

Her : calm down ....Mvelo where is Pam....??"

Me : baby the wedding ... " I knew the importance of me and Sbahle sealing our Union under the blood moon by tradition this needs to happen as well

Her : “ that all you worried about Mvelo ... this wedding Pam is fighting for her life and you busy forcing this marriage into my throat !!! “

I stood up and look at her

Me : “ SHE IS MY SISTER SBAHLE DON'T YOU THINK I KNOW THAT !!”

Her : “ooh finally you realise ! ... wedding or no wedding she still fighting for her life and from what I whiteness that baby needs me than those

people outside that I have to smile at and pretend that I'm ok ! “

Koko looked at me and I looked at Sbashe ... she was angry fuming I had no come back I just froze she put on her sleepers and walk pass me I held her hand we looked at each other she did not blink or look down

Her : “ Sbu is alone in that hospital Mvelo he needs us “ the way this women holds my balls I just swallowed hard and nodded

Me : “ will use the back door .. “

Koko: Mvelo ... the if you do not do this now ....your ancestors will not bless you union ... “

Me : “ its risk I'm willing to take family comes first koko ... tell Zoe and Austin they will know what to do with all people outside“ I looked at Sbahle “ lets go “

I asked one of the guards to escort us out the royal house was still buzzing and it took forever to leave the premises Sbahle looked at her wrist band and looked outside the window her sniffs were evidence that she was crying

.

.  
Sbahle \*\*\*

I'm glad that they booked the whole floor for Pam in this hospital because it was mass the minute we walked in we heard Sbu screaming the machines were going wild

Sbu : No .. no .. no come back to me you promised you will never leave me !! PAMMMMMMM! .... Dr do something !!! “

I just saw that one line going of and I looked at every one in the room and I just held my mouth .... Mvelo just sank down

Sbu : “ how am I suppose to raise our children on my own ... please .. please Dr do something please ....” Beeeep ... beep beep the machines went off “ I'm sorry Mr. Ngcobo time of death ....” I just held my chest I could not hold it in any more so i rushed out and held my head I screamed and cried but not as much as Sbu and Mvelo I have seen men cry before but what was happening right now I could not take it in anymore my first thought was to go to Mvelo and comfort him one of us need to strong.

I heard a baby crying and it alarmed me that it must be baby Naledi I wiped my tears and

followed the sound Wires tubes and monitors are being juggled between half a dozen nurses In the middle of it all is a tiny fragile baby born too soon a baby who shouldn't be alive but survived due to her mother's bravery

the Nurse's look at me with eyes full of sorrow and pity but they quickly smiled

Me : " may I come in "

One of them smiled and nodded Naledi was in NICU she is 17 weeks premature I didn't get to hold her but was told to sanitize my hands I looked at her through the glass my little fighter ... the lone survivor I sat on a special chair tears welling up in my eyes Excitement fear and anxiety consumed me all at one

she was beautiful she a premature baby she was skinny and all wrinkled up seeing a baby for the first time takes on a new meaning . The constant beeps and alarms hum through the dimly lit room. she looked like Pam the nurse gave me her bottle and she sucked it for her dear life I smiled I had a purpose now ...

## Chapter 46

Two weeks later

Sbahle \*\*\*

My alarm went off i turned around and was welcomed by an empty bed and noticed that I was alone yet again this days I go to bed alone every night I feel him holding me at night and when I wake up his not there my husband is grieving alone and I don't know how to get through to him I am trying the best I can to take over some of the work my husband had done so he can have time to grieve. I don't know if I should encourage or push him to jump back into work not that I know where he goes off to everyday but I know its not work .

I just don't know what to do but I want to do whatever is best for him I never knew that love comes with so much compromise I have put Mvelo before my needs.

How do I help him grieve? How do I help him still run our business our house ? How do I make sure he doesn't fall into a depression? He does not talk to me I know I can not detect how he must grieve or not but I feel like this silence is causing



detachment between us

" have patience my child " my mom will say when I cry to her in the wee hours

Mom : Your partner will return. The grief will integrate into his life and psyche and be less of an overwhelming force that shrouds each day. Grief doesn't ever go away; however it does subside and your partner's "normal" personality will come back be patient Sbahle ... Kuyabekezelwa emshadweni your husband needs you now "

I just wish he could tell me how he feels cry if he had too but he us just plain ignoring me as if I don't exist

the last time we spoke was the day of Pam's funeral

" please wear this "

I looked at it it was a big diamond rock my wedding ring I expected a hug a smile even a kiss but he walked past me

Me : Mvelo..." I called out for him he stopped but did not turn he breath out loud and continued to walk away taking a chunk of my heart with him. we hold hands in front of cameras and take pics for the media to write a perfect story about us but inside this house we strangers I miss Mvelo no

doubt and this house is just too crowded for us to talk or have a one on one conversation.

" you need to give him his cake " Zoe said

Me : I can't we still in mourning " I lied through my teeth I'm know Jack about sex and Mvelo is big I don't think I'm ready for his thinking inside me ... That does not mean I will refuse him if he wants his cake either.

I had hope that since I woke up early today I will find him in our bed I rushed to his study but he was gone I sigh and made myself coffee I heard chatter on the other room

" ooh God I'm so late ...the king will skin me alive ... His coffee is not done "

Another voice : you better thank your God because the king left early today "

" are you sure ...? I'm even scared to walk in " I heard shuffling and two of servants walk in shock was written all over their face when they saw me they bowed " Ndlovukazi "

I nodded " can you not cook breakfast today I will do it "

" Ndlovukazi " they bowed and walked out the tension in this house even got our servant walking on eggshells because of Mvelo I hear them talk

about his temper and that makes me so mad but I have never whiteness it myself .

We all gathered on the dining room koko the kids and Veli a lot was said but no one opens there mouth.

Sne : Aunti are we still going to see baba today ?" I wish I could say yes but Sbu is a different person and I don't want his kids to see him like that he hates Naledi and blames her for taking his wife we have exchange hateful words me and him and I decided not to attend Pam's funeral it happened that the very same day of the funeral Naledi was being discharged

Sbu wanted his wife close to him and the funeral was held in Durban. Somehow I had hoped Mvelo will asked me to go but he just walked away the tears I have cried for this man can flood rivers now my spirit were lifted up I finally held Naledi in my arms and came back with her home they call her Simangaliso because after 2 day in an incubator she was all alive and out of danger. She is my smile keeper I still have a lot to learn about baby's but the Nanny I hired is great help and I'm getting there .

After breakfast the kids went to there playroom

and I took Naledi to my room I read my book rocking my baby till she fell asleep I looked at the beautiful view outside thinking about my life and married how did it get to this ?

You know I wish had a chance to prepare for it but just one horrible day changed my husband to a man I don't recognise the love of my life lost a parent sibling and friend. As i go trough journey in time that looked like it was not moving I wish I could hold his hand and tell him I'm here for him . I have taken all in and tackled the silent abuse it even feels like i'm going through a course of surviving being a wife a queen a mother to his kids and his shoulder to cry on this are true trying times for me .

" if its not working out buya uze'ekhaya " Nsika will say

" if he ever makes you cry I swear to God he will meet his sister sooner than he thinks " Mlondi will say

Decision ...decision ... Do I stay do I go ? Does he still love me ? He does not even touch you what do you think ?

My marriage life is dead with no life I feel like I'm losing my mind but at least I have found my own

personal coping mechanisms the kids give me a reason to smile everyday and remind me why I'm in this house.

Its afternoon and without fail I must take my afternoon walk.

after jumping out of the shower I jumped into my long black body hugging dress and black and white head scarf first thing first I make my way yo Naledi nursery she was still sleeping

I kissed her forehead and walk out.

I made my way down stairs I heard Zee and Junior ( Pam son) talking there the are the same age group and there stories always get me laughing like crazy they were seated on the couch watching cartoons the house was quite I wander where everyone was.

They noticed my presence

" Aunty " I kissed them on the cheeks and hugged them

" have you eaten "they shook their heads I smiled  
Me : what do you want to eat ?"

" kellogs and eggs " Jr said I giggled

Me : and you zee " she giggled

" I don't know ...maybe cake " I laughed

Me : ooh my... why cake Princess "

Zee : because it sweet ..." I laughed

Me : come let's go make you food "

I would not say I have the best of relationship with Zee or Pam's kids it's only been a two week with them but they are good kids no doubt Pam was a good mother

"Ooh I'm sorry I didn't know you up "

I looked up and she smiled

" kids come eat I made you lunch "

What the fuck !!

Zee : thank you mommy " zee let go of my hand ran to her and she hugged her I was frozen what is she doing here in my house and in my kitchen the devil is testing me

"Silindile !"

"\_Ndlovukazi " she said bowing her head I looked at her from head to toe she was wearing high waisted grey skinny jean with pink shirt tucked in and killer hills she tossed her weave back

Me : go and eat I'm coming I said to the kids " I smiled and when they were out of site my eyes locked with hers and my smile disappeared

" you were in my kitchen ?"

" with all due respect you were still sleeping "

I laughed

" what does that suppose to mean? " I asked  
Her : I found my child all alone and you were  
sleeping so as a mother I took it upon Me to make  
her food "

" you do know that this kids have a Nanny right ?"

" it's only lunch Sibahle what's the big deal ? "

Me : its my kitchen Makazithelo as a wife of this  
house yimi angi shaya u5 lapha siyezwana "

Her : I just thought ..." I cut her off

Me: ufunani LA ? "

I was mad ever since I knew about sli she has  
done this small things that rub me the wrong way  
and it did not help that she is Mvelo business  
partner and Veli's bff

Her : wow Trey is the father of my child so I came  
to check up on Zee "

Me : so you come and go in my house ?"

She side smile ooh help me god I'm about to catch  
a case

Me : you not answering me ... Ngingakusiza ngani  
Kwami ! "

She set on the couch opposite me and folded her  
legs did I say she mast sit down ?

Her : I'm sorry Ndlovukazi to step in your shoes  
I'm actually here on business I was hoping to

Speak to Trey as well" ooh my God what !! This woman is driving me crazy not only must I tolerate Mvelo silent treatment and now his baby mama is walking all up in the very same house I leave in

Me : what stopping you from calling him ? Nawe uyazibonela akekho "

Her : we spoke at Pam's funeral about Zee ..." She was talking alone now I was still at that point when she said ' we spoke at Pam's funeral ' I was annoyed and I don't know what game this woman was playing or what my husband is still doing with her ...

Veli walked in she frowned noticing Sli

Veli : ooh I thought you said will meet at the restaurant "

Sli : I was in the neighborhood so here I am " they hugged and talked like I was not even there .

Me : wow " I laughed and shook my head Pam did tell me that no matter what I do I must never get to close with Veli now I see why here loyalties are with Sli

Me : I'm sorry ladies I got Royal duties to do so can you take this chit chat outside my house .... "

Koko walked in she did not have to say a word but



her eyes said a lot after we all greeting her they  
said goodbye to koko and walked out giggling and  
talking

I felt sick

" Sibahle " she stopped me as I was about to walk  
out

Me : koko"

Her : hold your head up high...dark clouds are  
closing in "

Again she talked in riddle I just nodded and  
walked to my room I felt the walls closing in this  
room this is not happening to me No ! did I really  
Marry into this chaos? Why because of love ...  
Fuck sli will be involved in our life for at least  
another 11 years will she be this pain will i control  
my cool around her ? Why do I feel like she still  
got this hold over Mvelo ...I felt like I was  
suffocating Mvelo can't do this to me ... I took my  
laptop I keep thinking of accepting to enroll in I  
UCT maybe it's best me and mveli separate a bit .  
This is his problem not mine let him figure it out  
he is old enough to make babies so he should be  
old enough to figure out how to handle his ex's.  
I'm too found for this drama.

I took pain tablets and I was off to lala land

I must have doze off because I was woken by eyes looking at me I try to shake the feeling but shoot my eyes open he was sitting in the dark and looking at me I looked at the time it was after midnight I have seen him happy sad disappointed but this eyes I have never seen ?

Him : you enrolled in UCT?"

I set up straight I wanted to find words to say but his look scared me I found myself looking down

He stood up taking of his shirt

" Awuyi lapho ...Siyezwana ( you not going there do you hear me ) " I didn't say anything I just looked at him his back was facing me

Him : siyezwana !!!" I nodded but realised that he did not see me

" yebo " he walked out and I pulled my knees to my chest placed my hand on my mouth and cried

## Chapter 47

Sbahle \*\*\*

I was tired of crying and questioning myself where I went wrong I wiped my tears and set up straight I heard the shower running and I made my way downstairs I checked on the microwave and yes his plate is still there I warmed it up sniffing and hugging myself its time I put myself together Mvelo has too much control over me and I don't like the women his turning me into .

" hi " I looked up I was meet with uncle Mzamo gaze he was still on his formal work clothes I'm guessing he just got back from the UK he frowned I guess he saw my red nose and baggy eyes you know that look of sleeping with a broken heart that how my face looks right now

Him : you can't sleep "

I looked down

Me : yes something like that " I sniffed

Him : mmmm"

I sniffed again

Him : Sbahle are you ok ? "

Me : yes I just have blocked nose "

Save by the bell the microwave beeps and I

quickly attended to it

Me : can I dish up for you ?"

Him : no thank ... "

I took Mvelo plate placed it on a tray all along I was moving around and his Uncle was just looking at me this man aura is so not settling I was about to go and say goodnight to him but he decided to talk

Him : Sbahle ... You may be a Mnguni now because of that ring on your finger but remember that your blood is Bhengu never allow a man to take your identity of who you are ..."

I looked at him and he looked at me I nodded

Me : thank you Malume goodnight "

Him : mmmm tell your husband that he must meet me in his study in 10 minutes "

I nodded again and made my way to our room I placed his food on the side table he came out with only a white towel wrapped in his waist he was drying his hair with another towel I looked at him longer than normal I still can't get used to how hot and ripped up his body is I only moved my eyes when his towel rose up oh shit is that an erection I swiftly moved to the closet

Me : uncle Mzamo wish to speak with you in your

study "

I made my way to the closet and took out his pajama pants his white T-shirt was far and I could not reach the top shelf I tip toed

Me : damit ... "

I felt him behind me Instead of him taking his T-shirt from the top shelf he lifted me up I got it and he placed me down

Me : thank you "

I was looked down facing him will kill me even more I could tell his eyeing me but not today we not doing it today I went to the bathroom picked up his clothes that were scattered on the floor and shoved them in the laundry basket when I turned he was standing by the door looking at me his still walking around half naked and I don't trust my body around him at all fuck the silent in this room was getting into me he was blocking the way and I wanted to past I wasn't going to allow him to see me breaking down or filling vulnerable under his mystic look I pushed past him

Him : Mabhengu "

He called out but I was not doing this with him I slammed the bathroom door on his face and locked it I took off my dress and thought about

long bubble bath but I was too drained shower it was then .

I was crying my last tears under this pouring water two weeks I have not seen him talk to him and when he opens his mouth today he tells me shit God knows I love Mvelo but loving him it's so exhausting I'm tired after taking a shower I made my way to the closet I jumped into my bum short PJ and matching vest good he's not here and he took his food I breath out loud and jumped under covers I remembered Pam's words "when it gets too much Pray baby I know my brother his difficult person to be with he loves you but don't cry never show him you weak because he will walk all over you ... Always pray asked God to give you strength ". I got down on my knees and Prayed

.

.

Mvelo\*\*\*

“ I need you back at work “

I looked at him as if his crazy

Him : “ tomorrow we doing a cleansing ceremony and you are going back to the UK “

Me : “ what do you mean I’m going to the UK ...

AS IN ALONE! “

Him : “ you self centered and you putting yourself first so go and figure out if you still want to be married to that girl or rather be alone “

Me : “ so is this about MY wife ? “

Him : “ last time I checked she was the only one holding this house together if you cared you would have noticed “

I looked down I just got married but I feel like I just attended my funeral I'm scared to love Sbahle the way she deserve God Knows I love my wife and I hate that I'm the cause of her tears

Me : “it's just hard to let go off of pam I feel like I have lost my best friend I feel like I have no point to leave “

Him : “ we all feel like that but ask yourself if Pam was here would she have wanted you to be like this ? “

I just looked down

Him : I want Sbahle to take over Pam's project ? “

Me : “ she wanted to builds that Business with Sbu “

Him : “ it will take years for Sbu to be back on his feet losing a soulmate is not easy ... so you have to talk to her about going back to school you can

not make her your house wife she's too young for this responsibility you have placed on her shoulders “

I just nodded

After we talked about how bad of a husband I was he gave me mouth full about work and reshuffling that need to happen it was official I'm going back to work this man was not taking no for an answer I finally went to bed after 3:00am and he told me he is going for a Jog my uncle never sleep I walked in my bedroom and I looked at my beautiful wife God Knows will never cheat on her but I just can not be happy when I feel so empty I don't want to fight with her or shout at her so I just avoid her I have been looking at her every move from afar the walks she takes every day I bugged her Pc and phone I have cried with her when she cried but I was just not there to hold her hand or talk to her she the only normal thing in my life the way she has taken a role of being mother to my kids I could have not asked for any better women than her she is humble and dedicated to her royal duties the people love her and I like that she is hands on whatever my grandmother throws at her . I got under the cover and pulled her close to



me I love how she smells it's so fruity I kissed her neck I could feel her trying to push me but I held her tighter she is my harmony

.  
.

Sbahle \*\*\*

I felt his hands pulling me to him he smelled of alcohol and toothpaste I wanted to untangle myself because he was suffocating me

We never speak to each other no kiss but every night he will creep in my life and hold me for his dear life he was holding me even tighter tonight there was a lot I wanted to tell him right now but I just could not felt him breathing heavily and I knew he was fast asleep I held his hand and breath out loud

Me : " Laying in bed in our bed without you still proves to be an excruciating thing even with you in it There isn't one night that I don't cry myself to sleep from pure loneliness. There isn't one morning that I haven't rolled over expecting to feel your warm body next to mine. I spent the first two weeks of our marriage lost without you after losing you to grief I would sometimes sleep on the couch because the thought of being in a bed was

too unimaginable. I wouldn't even briefly lay down on it wouldn't sit on it to tie my shoes. Even now that I have forced myself to try to get some sleep in an actual bed in your arms I can't bring myself to go lay down until I am thoroughly exhausted and I know that sleep is imminent. It's a strange concept of almost being afraid of your own bed because I fear that one day you may not come back or hold me like you do because that the only time I get feel that I have husband that comes in the night and hold me tight and leave But aside from the torture of the actual bed its you being physically here but not here at all I miss you Mvelo “

I don't Know when sleep came but I was woken up sun heating my face I scoffed and rolled over but bumped into Mvelo I shoot my eyes open I was meet by his dreamy eyes looking at me wait am I dreaming ?

## Chapter 48

Sbahle \*\*\*

He looked at me and yes its him his alive he is really here with me in my bed he smiled at me and I don't know what got over me but I slapped him

Him : what the fuck "

I jumped on him and I hit him I was mad

" Sbahle ... Babe ... Stop it ..." I was on top of him and I was just punching him

" him ... I'm sorry... Baby I'm sorry "

I was crying I was mad

Me : I hate you !! "

Him : I know ... I know ...fuck baby my eye "

He held both of my arms and flipped me over he pinned my hands above my head he was holding them with his one Hand and the other was on his eye the fight in me did not care I was trying to untangle myself from his hold

Me : fucken let go of me ... Fuck you Mvelo yezwa .." I was twisting my legs till I felt his body weight on top of me

Him : I'm sorry ... I'm sorry " I felt his wet lips on my neck

Me : get off me !!!..."

Him : mmm " he just kept on leaving wet kisses on my neck

Me : I hate you .. Uyezwo!!"

Him : I love you too ... " his voice on my ear made my body betray me

Him : ngiyaxolisa Hle..hle .. " he looked at me I did a number on him his eye was red he had a cut on his cheek and his face was red

Him : Mabhengu "

I shook my head I hate that I love him like this

Him : babe . . . it me "

I still did not look at him

Him : hle-hle please "

Shit this tears are building up fuck

Him : shuu baby don't cry ...I'm here " he started kissing my tears away the feeling of his mouth on my wet face made me realise how much I miss him I felt his lips on mine I missed him ...I love him and he feels like home his boner was Pocking me I didn't care I was holding on to his face he was exploring my body with his hands he cupped my breast and he moaned

Him : I love you ..."

Me : mmm" his top was off and i just could not

control my moans and the way his kiss and touch  
was taking me places

"Daddy !...."

Me : ooh shoot "

He Pulled down my top that was almost out of my  
head

Him : Princess !"

He got off me and Zee jumped on him and landed  
on his bulge

" ooh...fuc...."

Me :fat cook !!!! " I said fast before he cursed  
He closed his eyes in pain and I laughed

Him : I swear to God the women in my life are  
going to kill me today "

I bust out and laughed Zee was on top of his  
father chest

Him : how are you doing princess "

She giggled This child here has the most amazing  
spirit ever .. I Decided to take my phone and take  
a pic this was a beautiful pic he pulled me to him  
And took my phone and we took selfies off the  
three of us

" where you going "

Me : I need to bath and check on Naledi "

Him : we can do that together "

I pointed at Zee with my eyes

He gave Zee my phone

Him : baby play game here ...My Queen needs a bath "

Zee : I need a bath too " I laughed his hands were moving up and down my back and will land on my ass

Him : I'll bath her and bath you princess "

Zee shook his head

Him : baby you killing daddy's mood " he squeezed my ass and looked at me Zee giggled and was just happy that his spending time with her dad I jumped off the bed I walked to the bathroom my bum showed him left him with no imagination at all everything was out there for show and I owned my walk

when I turned he to look at him he was biting his lower lip I wink at him and ran into the bathroom

.

.

I was done dressing up and made my way to Naledi room I found Mvelo rocking her to sleep I stood by door and smiled he gently placed her down and when he turned I round he saw me

Him : she is so big "

I smiled

I made my way to the baby court and looked at

Naledi she was sucking on her hands

Mvelo held me from behind " thank you " I rested  
my head on his chest

Him : damn I missed you "

I turned around and looked at him

Me : I was right here "

He smiled as he slowly took my mouth to his

.

.

Veli \*\*\*

He is on top of me again his been on it even  
longer than normal I want to touch him but he  
refusing his hitting places I have never thought  
existed I'm screaming his holding my mouth his  
good and he knows this his moans feel me up I  
feel another explosion Coming ooh Bawo I splash  
my juices on him he hit it even hard on making my  
eyes roll back his not giving me time to recover his  
not giving me time to recover his close and he  
give me a last kick and realise he let go of my  
mouth and my hands he gets off me and took off  
his condom

Him : go to your room and call someone to clean

this " he disappear to the bathroom as I take my soaking pussy out it all started when I told him I love him and he said ok I though if I give him a baby he will change but he told me he don't want a baby but I fell pregnant I miscarriage and that was the last time he smiled at me or did something nice to me he changed and only fuckes me without giving a shit about me I looked at how Mvelo and Sbahle look at each other and I hate love why must all man use me like this I wish Mzamo can love me his my only ticket to a better life He walks in and look at Mvelo the queen mother looks happy today and this are more noisy today than normal this is perfect family breakfast I wish I had a ring on to call my self family too Mzamo : what happened to you ?" He asked Mvelo Mvelo looked at Sbahle and they had a mini joke session I was here but was not here my phone buzzed "Im on my way is he gone ? " " no . . . I think they resolved things " " what ?... Did you talk to Mzamo " I wanted to shake my head but realised that I'm



on a phone with her

"Sly I'm still trying "

" ooh come on Veli ... If she falls pregnant its over for us remember that Pam wanted you out of that royal house and that girl ... Is not going to want you there you not there family but just a girl who was a victim that they saved..."

I looked at Sbahle she does not like me I have seen that and she is royalty what ever word she say they will obey I need Sli to be a second wife she will have my back even if it means that I need to give Mzamo pussy everyday till he falls in love with me and do what ask him to do .

.

.

To be continued \*

## Chapter 49

Mvelo \*\*\*

The kids went out with their nanny to the park Koko left for Durban to speak to Sbu about the cleansing ceremony that will take place in 3 days'

time from now I'm still hurt and to be honest I don't know when I will ever feel ok and accept that Pam is gone sometimes I even find myself calling her number and just ball up into a crying mess when I recall that she no more I will listen to her voice on the voice mail and just cry even more I swear to God and to all my ancestors that her death just took a chunk of my life.

So part of moving on is for me to be grateful of the life I have and to be better Husband to Sbahle I decided to take Sbahle out its been awhile since I spend time with her and I hate that she is doubtful of my feeling for her i know I'm the one to blame for that I was just an ass but I wouldn't be a good man to her if I do not humble myself to her and apologize I'm also planning on talking to her about what going on with me they say women love to feel needed and to see a man cry and pouring their heart out no doubt I am about to become vulnerable to her i owe her that much vele I have put her through shit and took her for granted just because I was a coward and afraid to talk to her

" Come on Sbahle we don't have the whole day "  
Her : I'm almost done "

she told me she wanted to change and she has been in that closet for hours now .

I was busy chatting to Langa ( Zoe husband ) while i waited for my wife he was laughing at me when I told him I got a beating of my life this morning

Him : I told you same birds flock together "

Yep Sbahle is like Zoe in every way no wander they became good friends

Him : so when you coming this side "

Me : I have to ask my wife first but maybe after the cleansing ceremony because soon after I have to go back work "

Him : where ? ...UK ? "

Me : yaa and I don't know how Sbahle will take it "

Him : you leaving her behind "

Me : oh fuck No ..."

Him : that girl Got you by the balls "

Me : yap shit got real very quick for me "

Him : that's called growing up ...

. Look let me rush to a meeting will chat later say hi to Sbahle for me "

We said our Goodbye and I logged out of what'sup and received a notification message it was a picture that I took this morning of me Sbahle and Zee " Stop playing happy family using

my baby with that women " I just looked at the  
massage and blocked her number once again it  
must be a 6 number that I'm blocking and she still  
send me fucked up massages Sli just does not get  
that I moved on and I'm madly in love with Sbahle  
no matter how much I tell her and reason with  
her and the fucked up part is that she using my  
baby to get to me.

" ok let's go "

I looked up " wow "

Her : too much ? " she looked at her self

Me : you look perfect ..." She looked hot in her  
nude above the should dress that was above the  
knee with a slit in front her juicy thigh will show  
when she walked its body hugging and it just  
made me sweat I kissed her

Me : maybe we should stay indoors " I said  
running my hands on her tight ass

" wee uyahlanya asambe "

.

.

Sli \*\*\*

Some may look at me crazy lusting over a man  
that is married that does not even think about me  
but trust me what I have with Trey is real he may

be in denial right now but we share true bond and love.

I have never done this i was always a person who gave up so easily and rolled over but never again I'm in a mission to get back together with my daughter's father. We didn't have the best relationship not that it was a relationship there were lot of red flags but now I believe we have a chance I waited for this man most probably made him the man he is today gave him a child I would be damned to just give up ...

Our relationship started out great but very quickly his demons began to show their faces when I came back I understand he was angry that I kept zee existence from him for years that he even started to be emotional and sexually abusive towards me . The relationship became stale and we both stop putting forth effort into making it work.

He was getting married and I was just tired of crying over him he ended up falling in love with another women that when I realise that I cannot live without him one morning I woke up with a mission to get my baby daddy back before either of us spoke up about needing to make some

changes to make things work.

Without him I have become successful and confident but I still miss him every day I miss seeing my daughter every day. I miss everything. We still have a connection even when he told me his getting married after our breakup he was still seeing me behind his fiancé back for sex and just friendship in general....which should probably tell me he hasn't changed at all and is always going to have a cheating problem but my heart just doesn't care I just want my family to work I want him and only him so I'm here at the restaurant looking like a million bucks trying to show him what his missing out on ...

.

.

Sbahle \*\*\*

Today was so beautiful the outing was just what the good Dr ordered my man over here was just amazing to me I must say I missed him so much this day here we just connect he had opened up to me about his grieving and how much he miss his sister we found each other crying together and holding on to one another

Him : damn you women you just made me a

pussy”

Me: you my pussy so what “

Him : fuck that sound so wrong “

We bust out and laughed walking hand in hand from the park

Him : so movie or jazz bar “

I looked at him like he just president Mgabe is not dead

Him : what ? “

Me : a movie is boring it will not give us time to interact to I'm thinking art gallery or museum : He was the one that was giving me the look now and I just drag him to the nearest gallery there was a launch of some new artist that was up an coming.

Him : this is your more of your element “

I nodded “my father was an artist he used to have visions and put into paintings “

Him : calling ? “

Me : I believe every great king need to rule with the guidance of his ancestors bathi indlela ibuzwa kwabaphambili “

He nodded and agreed with me we walked hand in hand some people will stop and great us some people will request to shake our hands or take pic

he bought me two paintings that I just looked at and fell in love with the artist was horned to have us in his studio he requested to do a sculpture of me and I was blown away

Me : wow are you for real “

Him : yes your highness “

Mvelo : as long as the queen will be fully dress maybe I can allow that “

I nudge him

Mvelo : we have to get going Mkami “ he pulled me by the hand and I did not like the look he gave that poor guy the minute we entered the car he was a bit pissed

Me : did I do something wrong ? “

He held my hand and kissed it “ I trust you but I don't trust them “ ok what does that supposed to mean ?

I was now hungry and he decided that we driving to his hotel he had booked a table for us he was too touchy and kissy on the way there I hate driving with a person who does not focus on the Road Mvelo was worse kind he will sing song from the radio look at me and kiss my hand I was red with blushing by now love feels so good when the universe is on our side he said and I just smiled



His one hand was holding on to my hand  
Him : but babe Zithelo really crushed my balls you  
laugh now but this means that I might not make  
you pregnant "

I didn't know how to respond to that thought of  
sex and him inside me made me freeze he looked  
at me and side smile

Him : I didn't marry you for your pretty face ...  
And that brain of yours I need you to carry my  
seed Mabhengu "

I open my mouth and closed it we have never  
talked about sex ever

" it will be painful at first but relax girl ...you will  
love it when he is doing it "

Zoe said he turned the music up and His hands  
moved to my thighs no he was now moving in to  
my inner thigh remind me why I'm wearing such a  
dress with easy excess his hands were rubbing  
on my bare thighs moving up and down while his  
other hand was on the steering wheel he is the  
first man to touch me in that way. Although he  
went a bit further up on my thigh I was surprised  
to be honest with you but i enjoyed it his hand  
just awaken something in me i this rush inside of  
me I closed my thighs together

Him : you blowing my mind with this dress " \_  
My first thought was simply "Oh! That's different.  
Ummm... okay".

. If he'd be a person I'd only talked to a few times  
and didn't have an intimate relationship with I  
probably would've lost my head not allowed him  
to speak dirty on me and make me sweat and also  
b shot of breath

Me : I need to use the ladies " that was the first  
thing I said to him when we arrived he walked me  
to his office that looked like a room itself I did my  
business and when I came out he pinned me on  
the wall and was kissing me and touching me all  
over he was in between me my lags and I was on  
top of his desk ooh shit he just socked my panty  
liner again

Me: aaaaaaaaaaaaaahh"

He could feel that he was biting my neck damn  
that will leave hicky I read somewhere that you  
can tell by the kind of sex you going to have just  
buy the way your man kisses you my heart was  
beating on my throat right now trust me his my  
first in everything... kiss love and relationship but I  
can tell that Mvelo dominates in the bedroom his  
hands are to strong the animal in him just came

out to play funny thing is I like it so much I wish he could not stop there is nothing that I love more than anything in this cruel cold world? like his lips on mine I'm obsessed with kissing him. If I'm not kissing I'm thinking about kissing. I can't look at pillow lips without imagining what it would be like to kiss them. I live in between kisses with him but I can tell by Mnguni that is knocking on my flour that I'm yet to experience something different. Him: I love you .... “ was out of breath while I was coming-down of my high I just saw an animal in him  
Him : lets go eat before I eat you up “  
Oh god I'm so horny right now is this even normal

## Chapter 50

Sbahle \*\*\*

Dinner was good and Mvelo was talking but my head was miles away I was listening to my lady part twitch and at some point I just wanted to put my hand down there I look at his dreamy eyes as

if his got contact lances his pink mouth his skin so clean his beard so perfectly shaved his white set of teeth I was fucked up horny I can not still believe even today that this God of a man is mine sex was a difficult topic that my mother failed to talk to me about on my wedding day she just said " indoda kumele idle Sibahle ... Never say you not in the mood ... He is the man and will teach you on how to be a women in the bedroom ... Trust him and as a wife feed his appetite " there was a lot I wanted to ask by that that how do I know he will love his food ? those he want it hot or warm ? Him : sithandwa sami "

He held my hand

Him : you miles away what's up ?"

I looked at him damn this man is Hot

Me : Sex how do you like it"

He chocked on his drink and started coughing yini? Did I say something wrong ?

Him : what ? "

I shrunk my shoulders I want to know his been lusting over me I can see it in his eyes but always stop himself from taking it far and with Pam's death that also caused a void between us there was no wedding night sex or staining of a sheet

ceremony held boy was I glad that did not happened its so humiliating and degrading for a women while man boost up there egos waving a stained sheet for every one to see that he just deflowered his wife.

I wish we have already done the deed and I know how it feels the suspense is killing me and it does not help that right now a have Victoria waterfalls between my legs feeling awfully horny - so horny it is making me do stupid things I even think about touching myself

I am very conflicted about taking the first step in losing my virginity. As much as I would like for him to have sex with me to relieve me of all the hormones raging wildly inside I also want to experience making love for the first time.

My mind is making me feel extremely guilty that I should not be thinking of doing any of these things but Mvelo awaken thing inside of me my mind travel back to this morning when he cupped my breath ooh father God that felt so good also when his hands moved to my inner thigh this afternoon and

on his office when lifted me up grabbed my ass and roughly kissed me shit ...I felt my self getting

more wet ... This is not me I never felt like this ever what is he doing to me .

I blame him for making think and act like a bietch Perhaps this is because I am brought up in a rather conservative environment where sex is a taboo subject. Any small controversy about anything related to sex blows up and becomes a nationwide topic. In my social circles sex is either never spoken about or often made fun off usually so when I hang out with my best friend Zim My family never discuss sex with me and when they do they always warn always to be careful when going out or around guys and often imply that i should not have "sexual intercourse" before you are married. I know my country and its people are still not very liberal and are rather narrow-minded. I wish this could change but this is how we have been brought up. I think my circumstances and experiences has become part of my personality that I can't help but feel awfully guilty I would give away my virginity like that to a man I love . I have read about it online giving up your virginity to whom you choose is your choice and never others. I completely agree but I just feel so guilty and so conflicted with what my body and

mind wants that I don't know what to do.

He narrowing his eyes and side smiling ooh shoot I just asked him out loud about sex his amused he like seeing me this way on his Mercy I want to run away now this look his giving me is making me regret thinking out loud

Him : tell me what you feeling right now ? what happening to your body right now ?"

His voice so bold So sexy he rested back on his sit undressing me with his eyes I'm uncomfortable right now

Him : Hle -Hle talk to me "

Ok FAM I'm screwed right now he took his glass of wine and looked at me

Me : I'm ...I ... Mvelo ..stop it " I looked away he chuckled

Him: You don't need to tell me that I make you body heat up because I can see it in you face and you body language your body changes when you're turned on and it all foreign to you that you feel like screaming because you don't know what to do with yourself . Your breathing speeds up you get wet your nipples are even hard your brain turns to total mush you desire me to help you take off the edge ...you scared but yet you so

ready Blood rushes to the walls of your vagina so much so that it causes fluid to pass through. The rush of blood is also what makes you all flushed in the cheeks and on your chest and neck areas.

Causing you lady parts to release juices "

I was not breathing normal and he could see this he came close to my face making his way to my ear

Him : I just gave you mind blowing sex in your head and I love how your body

Just responded to me Sithandwa sami you are sexual aroused just by looking at me ... And guess what I feel the same .. " he kissed my neck shit I need to pee his eyes were red and squinted he kissed my lips so soft and stupid of me I moaned I felt him smile "

Him : let me check on the kids ... We spending the night here "

He stood up ran his hands on my face and walk away his eyes were red and squinted he kissed my lips so soft and stupid of me I moaned I felt him smile "

Him : let me check on the kids ... We spending the night here "

He stood up ran his hands on my face and walk



away I breath out loud once he was gone what is he doing to me I gulped down the content of my juice and was about to fan myself

I looked up as I sense someone presence standing over me I was meet by her smile I frowned what the fuck does she want ?

Me : Maka Zithelo what a pleasant surprise unjani ?"

She was about to seat down but I stop

Me : ooh sweetheart please don't my Husband is occupying that sit say what you have to say and Go please " I faked a smile as

She frowned she did not like this cocky side of me  
Her : I saw you while having dinner thought I come say high you know phela we family " I hated the sound of that I bet she waited for Mvelo o move to piss me off and guess what she doing a good job at it

Me : Hi !" I responded dismissing her she must not mess up my Good mood

Her : I was thinking I can have a Word with Trey .... You know talk about Zee education and medical needs she is special child and need both parents to work hand in hand ... I pass by the house and he was nor there so I just thought I will

still him for few minutes just to have a quick chat  
"

Me:mmmmmm I see try calling him tomorrow  
because right now this is my time "

Her : I will do ... Infect since I'm here for a while i  
might as well go out on that outing he suggested  
with him and Zee you know how he is with the  
outdoor "

Me : outing ?"

Her : well since we coperanting Zee Dr suggested  
we do family date just me and him and our  
daughter ...so that Zee will get use to the change "

Me ; angizwanga !"

Her : ooh we talked about it while he was in  
Durban about us having family dates didn't he tell  
you ? "'

I folded my arms this women is getting on my last  
nerve she is such a thorn in my relationship

Her : you know when I look at you I see that you  
young you his Queen and all but Trey Needs a  
women a mother to his child...so enjoy it what it  
last he will come back to me he always does ...

Good night princess "

He clicked her hills and walked out I was fucked  
up mad

" was that Sli ?"

I looked at him he had this look of guilt or nervous I stood up " aish I'm tired babe now we may go upstairs " he held my hand and kissed my cheek we walked with my arm blocked under his my had resting on his shoulder I was not going to act all crazy in front of all this people being the lady that I am I made my way to penthouse with him looking like the perfect couple in perfect marriage.

Him : babe are you ok ..." I smiled and nodded took off my shoes the minute we walked into the main bedroom

Him : what did she say to you ..."

I looked at him and shook my head I did not want to talk about that woman I'm angry heartbroken but I don't want to talk to him about this but knowing Mveli he won't let this go

Him : Sbahle I can see you mad .. Talk to me "

Me : will it always be like this ... Me you and her ?"

Him : Sbahle my heart belongs to you Silindile is my past uyakwazi nje lokho "

I shook my head " she your baby mama your business partner ... Veli friend its not enough you

made her comfortable in coming in and out of the very same house I call my home she is now leaving in your hotel and you planing on having family dates with her ... When were you going to tell me about that !!"

Him : I..."

I stood up "she was at Pam's funeral ... The very same funeral you came back from a changed man ?.... Are you still sleeping with her ? "

Him : No !! ... I will never cheat on you with her "

Me : what is she doing here Mvelo!!!"

Him : I don't know ... She Zee mother babe she maybe came to help Zee with grieving ... She just lost an aunt she needs her mom as well

Me : Wow !"

Him : baby please why you letting that women destroy our night .... Can't you see that she is intensionally causing a drift between us and you allowing her "

Me : she walking all over me Mvelo ! And I'm suppose to just roll over and Smile because she is your baby mama!!!"

He looked down I clicked my tongue and made my way to the bathroom banging the door Jumping right into it a shower I'm too angry to cry and hate

that Sli feels like he has power over Mvelo from what Pam told me they have unresolved past I came along just when he found out he has a child with this women and there breakup was messy and somehow I'm the one to blame.

Before he met me he was with was dating some white girl he never loved her because he was still in love with sli but they dated with that girl for years He broke it off with her because she wasn't fulfilling his needs or wants in a relationship He told me the only reason why he stayed with her for so long was because she was a distraction sli came back while he was arranged to marry me ... He never gave me any doubt about not loving me that why I agreed to be his wife but I guess when you not leaving with a man you really do not know what going on with his daily life till you share the same roof with him he is NOT the problem his baby mother is. He has one child by her and I fear that he may run to her for sex if I don't give him my fruit.

its been only two weeks in this marriage and I must admit I'm drained Recently me and him has been getting into it because of the things she would do when she comes over to check up on

Zee unannounced. I know that it's NOT my house to be the boss but I feel as though if you are in a relationship with someone but have a kids by somebody else your ex shouldn't be able to do whatever she pleases when she comes over especially if you have a woman living there. He says the reason for him not speaking up to her is that he's trying to keep the peace between them so she can see her child ... But that women's intention is not about seeing Zee she want to have the seat ...my throne. Its midnight and I'm yet alone in his bedroom I thought we getting somewhere but its back to square one again I sigh and switched off the side lamp.

.

.

to be continued

## Chapter 51

5 day later

Sbahle \*\*\*

Its the day of cleansing ceremony today well in most African families this is done a month after a burial of a love one and the spouse will only do it after 6 months to a year I just finished making the traditional beer yes guys my mom thought me well I am what you call "the wife material " and was busy with cooking baking

I hate people going in and out of my kitchen so that place is mine and mine alone I cook for my family and I do my husband laundry and cater to his needs no one else but me today I was wearing a long floral dress with head scarf and another scarf on my shoulders just your topical makoti look.

" mam where do I put this " its was a case of drinks I pointed to the cold room

She bowed and walked away the Mnguni people are the liker of things where i come from ceremony like this suppose to involve close family members only but here it just another big event. I heard a baby crying and stopped what I was

doing and ran outside Zee was down and crying  
Me : baby I told you to stop running " I picked her up and walked with her inside the house we made our way to the bathroom in my bedroom where I wiped her tears and attended to scratches

Me : all done baby ... You promise to stop running "

She giggled and nodded

Me : come give me a squeeze " we hugged

Her : thank you Hle -hle "

I smiled I blame her father for calling me that now all the kids in this house are calling me by that name .

I felt his presence behind me he smelled so good I haven't seen or spoke to him for Two day he was in the mountain with Koko and Makhumalo doing sum ancestral prayer Zee hugged her dad and they had a mini conversation with him I was about to walk past him but he pulled me into a hug and kiss my forehead no matter how mad I am with him I still allow him to hold me and kiss me.

Him: Zithelo go check if Jr is not finishing your chips "

Zee climbed down from his hold and ran out

Me : no running !!"



Her : yes Hle-hle sorry " she said running I shook my head and was about to walk out but he blocked the way and closed the door this space is so small with him in here

Him : Mabhengu ... " I looked at him we have been fighting like crazy ever since that day of Sli's encounter I don't know what he said to her but ever since that day I have not seen or heard from her .

I use to crack my head trying to figure out what happened that night but he did come back home on the wee hours and cuddled me smelling of alcohol the next morning he apologized for not looking at things my way or considering my feelings yet again I took him back I blocked any bad thought about him and sli together I'm naïve right.

So when we arrived at the royal house I almost lost my mind when he dropped another boomshell that he want us to go to the UK " why must I help you build your career when you don't want me to study "

Him : I don't mind you studying but not in cape town "

Me : I'm not going to the UK "

Him : you will go to the best law school there  
babe come on meet me half way here "

Me : I'm trying but I feel like you detecting my life  
first I had no say to this marriage your baby mama  
issue I need to understand I need to study law  
because you say so Sbahle do this do that ...  
where is my point of view in this marriage???

Him : don't raise your voice at me !!"

Me : I'm tired Mvelo ... Loving you is draining me  
.... I think maybe I should stay at penthouse !"

Him : what !!"

Him : I can not put my foot down in this house  
because its technically your ancestral home I want  
a place where I can be free walk around in my  
underwear I can not even talk to you around the  
house because we got lot of eyes and ears looking  
at us "

Him : where is this coming from? .... So everything  
I try to do for you is not good enough !!" "

Me : I need my own house Mvelo ...my space... I  
feel like I'm drowning in stress "

Him : that's why I'm saying come with me ... New  
life and new environment "

I shook my head

Me : i want to studying art .. "

Him : I can make that happen for you you can  
Even study in Italy they got the best schools there  
"

I need air he just does not get it I don't want to  
leave I walked out i banged the door in his face  
and left him there I did not even make it to the  
gate and I was already on his shoulders kicking  
and screaming he Then placed me on the bed and  
got on top of me as he kisses me senseless ... We  
kissed before but today what he was doing to me  
made me loose my mind I was left with my bra  
and he was sucking and licking my every part  
awakening things I did not know there were there  
he was hard I could feel him in between my legs  
my first thought was that we doing this today ...  
Making out with him was mind blowing he was  
kissing my neck and nibble on my ears Caress my  
butt ooh shit were is my skirt his hands were on  
my hips and thighs he looked at me for a moment  
I was on my black bra and matching underwear I  
have never been this naked in front of him he side  
smile I was out of it ... I was a ball of mess and did  
not stop when his hands work down on my lady  
parts his hands just rub me and I screamed his  
name can I have sex with him with cloths on ?

The rough jean material was grinding against me my thigh or pelvis. Even after his pants were off he kept on teasing me Leave my underwear on and trace his fingertip up and down my labia i was aching for skin-to-skin

" mvelo .... Please .." I felt a build of foreign explosion and suddenly he blew air on my face I was breathing heavily and he was chilled what just happens

Him : I need to fuck than make love to you so you will listen and obey me ... Never walk out on me when I'm talking to you "I nodded

I gasped " let me horner my sister memory and moan her for this few day and will finish this after cleansing ceremony " he kissed me and walked to the bathroom " damn his good "

Back to the present day I looked at him and he looked at me

Him : I miss you ..."

I looked down and he held my waist I placed my head on his chest and he breath out loud

Him : I love you Sbahle and I know I suck at showing you this but I really do I want to leave you behind but I can't you are my world "

Me : but Mvelo " here we go again

Him : I'm not leaving you behind uyezwa ... Your married to me you leaving with me the kids will stay behind .."

Me : but..."

Him : I'm not finished ..."

Him : will take Naledi with us ...every after three months will visit back here to check on the kids and the kingdom Koko is doing a good job and may continue while we gone ... "

Me : No !"

I pushed him away and opened the bathroom door

Him : Sbahle I'm too tired for this "

Me : before I am your wife I'm Queen my King I don't know how you people do things this side but where I come from my people are my life ... This royal blood in me makes me the women i am today and I need to pass it to our children your heir that will rule with the same straight and wisdom that I have ...This is how its going to go "

He set on the edge of our bed and looked at me he is so hot when he has a bandana on his heard ' focus Sbahle ' I cleared my Throat Men find confident women sexy so telling him what i want with a straight face will make him listen. I didn't

have to go full-on dominatrix on him but I was firm and direct

Him : not happening " he finally said and kick off his shoes

Me : you going to go to the UK and build your career and our company but in few years time i need you back in this house permanently ... "

Him : uyazizwa ukuthi uthini ? "

Me : give me a chance to explain "

I need to make him relax his too worked out so i lifted my dress and I set on top of him in squatting position he held my but I wrapped my arms around his neck

Me : Koko need me she is old to be alone in this house and having kids around gives her joy so I will stay with her ... "

He was about to answer but I packed his lips

Me : Veli needs to move out I can not do my my duties with her breathing down my neck she need to build her own self and stop doing royal duties Pam is gone I'll take over her duties from her i don't think its appropriate for Veli to continue doing them ... "

He placed his head on my breast and breath out loud

Me : Zee and her mother may meet not in my house but visitation right will happened somewhere else .... Pam kids need me I'm the only thing close to being there mother you can not take that away from them too "

Him : you asking a lot " he did not look at me

Me : ooh my house I need it to be by the sea for summer vocations with my kids ..."

Him : and what do I get ... "

Me : you get to knock me up before you leave "  
he chuckled

Him : you got lot of demands "

Me : you once said there is nothing sexy then women who holds your balls "

Him : your hand never even went down to touch then ..."

Me : Mvelo " his hands were under my dress now he tossed me over and I was giggling and we were disturbed by a nock

Him : shit ....start looking for that house "

I laughed as I got off him to open the door

Makhumalo greeted me she stood by the door

" i see isithunzela in your life Ndlovukazi some one is planning ukuchitha umuzi wakho ...( i see dark entity about to destroy your marriage ) please

follow me to the ancestry room "

Me : yebo ma " she nodded and walked away

.

.

to be continued ...

## Chapter 52

Sli\*\*\*

" damit he blocked my number again "

Nola just looked at me and shook his head she is not that Nola I used to know she has change she moved out of my house few months back and we only see each other at work if I woke up to go to work that day I don't get why I must be hands on I'm the CEO and she runs it so why must I show up anyway beside I got better things to do like getting my family back together

Me : are you eve hearing me ? "

I looked at her she was busy typing on her laptop

Her : what ? "

She looked like a real Arabic / Islamic women with that headscarf on I thought she will give up being



Islamic or what ever religion she is following since has permanent citizenship here in SA

Her : when last did you do one of your sermon "

I huffed and threw my self on her couch

Me : I can not face people while my life is falling apart I need to find a way to back with Mvelo I regret even taking that morning after pill because if I was pregnant he was going to be mine "

Her : Sli he is married "

I laughed

Her :I feel like that girl took what belong to me that was my life Nola I worked so hard to get it even make sacrifices but I was fucked over and tossed as side ...and beside it an arranged marriage there is no way that he loves her I just need to play my cards right to get back with him "

She break out loud and packed her things

Her : Sometimes in life people may hurt us it can be strangers friends and even family members. Regardless of who it is Christians should never wish death or harm upon anyone. We should never seek to hurt others in any way It might be hard but we must forgive others who wronged us. Let God handle it on His own. When Jesus was on the cross He never wished bad upon the people

crucifying Him but instead He prayed for them. In the same way we are to pray for others who wronged us in life.

Sometimes when we keep on dwelling on something someone did to us that creates evil thoughts in our head and opens a passage for dark spirit to consume us. The best way to avoid this is to stop dwelling on it. think about things that are honorable and seek peace. I encourage you to continually pray to the Lord for help in your situation and keep your mind on Him. "

God does not listen no care about people like me I devoted my life to him and did everything hr asked of me but he still tossed me aside

Me : you don't understand "

She laughed and took her things

Her : why because I don't know love and have never been with a guy ?"

I felt bad and looked Dow

Me ; I'm sorry Nola ... "

Her : I understand ... And don't mind you say that you know why because I don't need love to shape the way I leave my life ...I'm sorry but I got a meeting to attend to "

Me : Nola please we hardly hag out "

Her : because I run your company while you cry for lost love and plot to destroy his marriage just know that Luke 6:31 said : Do to others as you would like them to do to you. And Matthew 15:19 For out of the heart come evil thoughts—murder adultery sexual immorality theft false testimony slande ...you lost your footing your belief and I feel like that was the only thing that kept our friendship strong your faith so please I got to go " she opened the door wider stood by the door and waited for me yo walk out she locked after that and walked the opposite direction why do I feel like I lost my best friend walking to the parking I opened my car I looked at my self on the window and saw an old women behind me her half of her face was bunt and she had grey hair I screamed and turned around no one was there but I could see something that looked like ash on the floor.

.

.

Sbahle

We did not actually go to the ancestral room with Makhumalo but we walked around the yard she wanted fresh air

Me : you look pretty good mama are you sure you

are a Sangoma? "

She smiled and I admire her dress this women always looks like she going to some event you can not tell that she is a traditional healer

### **Sponsored**

Mvelo once told me that she had Phd a Dr by profession

Her : I just love looking good that what happen when you grew up with nothing once you make it you hide under your designer cloths to hide the hush upbringing "

Me : ooh I'm sorry I did not mean to sound ..." She cut me off

Her ; baby don't please ... I'm just outspoke when I'm outside the ancestral high "

I nodded and laugh

Her : why don't you want to go to the UK with you husband ? "

Me : I don't know ma... I feel like when me and Mvelo are together we fight a lot "

Her : that sound like any married life to me but how is that going to help you when you not next to him ? "

I just shrunk my shoulders

Me : you are Zulu right ? And im sure you know

culture ..And you know that being a royalty comes first than putting your person needs first ... But Mvelo side track everything ... His responsibility this marriage... His job ... His family ... "

Her : so you want to be the glue to his life "

Me : ain't all wife's suppose to be like that? "

She laughed

Her : If you prefer he called you wife for the rest of your life "

I frowned and looked at her

Him : storm at coming Sbahle you need to by his side always he needs you never allow space between the two of you ...Never ! ...have you seen how my son looks his an eye candy every women wants him and what will happen when you next to him ...man are weak and easily give in yo temptation "

I never saw it that way this love thing is complicated

Her : look baby While all of us are called to be helpers to others the Bible places a special emphasis on this responsibility for wives. Genesis tells us that God realized it wasn't good for man to be alone and that He decided to make a "helper suitable for him" (Gen. 2:18). "

I looked at her I'm so amazed right now this women knows her scripture

Her : well my daughter is a prophet and before the beads skin and impepho I was a Christian i still am in fact"

We set down and she smiled at me

Me : so what must I do I'm so young and half of the things that are expected of me as his wife and his Queen I don't know if im doing the right thing or not "

Her : there is no manual for the perfect wife love ...but it all start with communication "

I nodded " you mention something about a darkness about to destroy my marriage "

Her : what I'm going to tell you will need to keep it to yourself and learn to pray because this dark cloud hanging over your house is powerful and no muthi or herbs can lift it up "

I shifted and looked at her

Her : do you perhaps know who you married to ?  
"

I don't know what she means by that

Her : when I first meet him he was sickly looking boy with no direction his calling was bigger than anything I have ever seen ... He is the most

powerful seer I have ever known his divinity makes the heaven stop and listen when he prays ... His connected to heaven and earth he has isithunywa that allow him to control elements ... The underworld call him the prince of light and he has declared war with them in the past years "

I was confused this sound like a fairytale or sci-fi movie scene he can not be talking about Mvelo his my arrogant stubborn husband

Me : what do you mean he caused war "

Her : he is the prince of lite and where there was darkness he shined light ... "

Me : mama I don't understand .."

Her : this dark cloud they talking about is not directly coming to you but to your husband you the light in his life as his the light to the world if the darkness destroy what you and him have it will shatter him leaving a door open for the underworld ..."

I looked down

Her : I can not see the face of the entity that is trying to cause a drift between you too but I feel it in the house or when I look at you "

Me : mama kwenzakalani "

Her : I don't know ... I'm just a Sangoma my

powers can not see past spiritual entity "

Me : a what ?

Her : demons shadows ? ... Evil? ..Angel .. God ...

Satan "

I stood up

Her : you need to see a prophet you and your husband ..."

Me : so you can't help us ... "

Her : I'm a Sangoma ... You need a person with high anointing in faith and that has Divine spirit ...

Mbali is on her way she will know what to do ..."

I sat next to her shocked what kind of a man did I marry ?

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

Sbahle has been gone for a while with mama and I was so tired my eye leads were so heavy that I will close my eyes I was consciously sleeping it was as if I'm taking a nap and I heard footsteps and whispering in my room I opened my eyes and saw a shadow person by the window when I rose up from the bed it disappeared and just like a drugged patient I doze off my head was heavy and it felt like some one was pushing me into deep



sleep i have been having strange dreams of late and I thought it was because of Pam's death the dark forest the whispering and shadows I'm in dark place and dark energy is following me yet again I did not think it was out of the ordinary because I just lost my sister but today i felt a demonic creatures came into my dreams and gave me nightmares. They came right up to my ears and tried to intimidate me. I was desperately trying to invoke the protection of Archangel i tried to pray but it block my throat i couldn't get out a sound from my mouth I barely managed to whisper Gods name and calling on the warrior angels to help ... I was woken up by Zithelo crying I shoot my eyed and I saw Sibahle hushing her besides me

Her : she has been like this for the past few days she will wake up screaming in her naps "

Zithelo : something was trying to touch me daddy "she was absolutely terrified.

Me : something is wrong " I took Zithelo from Sbahle

my phone ranged I looked at Sbahle to pick it up

Her : hello

.

Her : yes his with me "

.

Her : I will tell him ..ok bye"

Her : Mbali is downstairs and she wish to see you "

She took Zithelo from my arms I stood up and when I was by the door she spoke

Her : fix this Mnguni ". I nodded and walked out

.

.to be continued ...

## **Chapter 53**

Narrated

At Zithelo logistic/ development company

Nola looked at her email again held her mouth

this was not a coincidence any more she took her phone and called the head of finance

" my office now " she took her water and drank it

" you called for me " he stood by the door looking mighty tall and handsome with his white shirt

folded up on his arms

Nola : we lost another partner "

Him : I know ..."

Nola : what happening Mpilo how could you allow this to happens ? "

Mpilo : we loosing partners Nola not money so what do you expect I do I handle the finance side of this company not making sure that our partners do not sell there shares "

Nola : Mpilo you not helping "

Him : why do you expect I do ?"

Nola hated the fact that Mpilo is so cocky and arrogant he gives a rat ass about anyone but himself yes his top at his game and Sli insisted they higher him she still think that Mpilo only agreed to work for them because he was interested in Sli and Sli was drooling over the guy . Nola wished that this will work in there favour because Trey young and now married Sli needed a man in her life strong African man she needed a destruction but little did she know that Sli had more of an obsession with Trey she wish that if only the tall handsome Mpilo can try and pursue Sli they would have made the perfect couple  
Mpilo : when is the Boss lady coming back to work "

Nola : I don't know ... She not feeling well maybe

you can check up on her after work "

Mpilo raised his eyebrow and looked at Nola who looked at him without giving anything away "

Mpilo : ok I'll think about it can I go now "

Nola nodded she set down and looked at her laptop again there is something fishy in this whole thing and how Mpilo did not act surprised about the company loosing partner .

.

.

Back at Ngonyama royal house

Koko\*\*\*\*

Koko found Veli on her phone laughing and skimming with Sli she shook her head as she walked back in the house she was disappointed in Veli and she knew that as much as she loved her as a daughter she must let her go ...all along Pam was right about her but she turned a blind eye because she felt that Veli deserved a second chance in life ...but what she doing now is illegal talking to outsiders about what happening in the royal house is crime.

Veli \*\*\*

" all I know is that he may be going to the UK alone this your chance my friend to get what you

want "

Sli smiled everything is falling into plan now this your chance my friend to get what you want "

Sli smiled everything is falling into plan now she will finally have Trey and her family back together

.

Veli noticed that Sli was not asking her about Mzalo so she decided to tell her

Veli : Mzamo has been grate too you know .. Not in a love kind of a way we still working on that but he is not giving me time or day I guess I'm getting somewhere the sex is so good but I wish we could spend just few hours talking and cuddling "

sli rolled her eyes Mzamo was not in love with Veli never was never will but wanted to come on her cunt that's all Veli is no different then a seventh in that house and Mzamo being powerful he has power of sleeping with all the girls working in the royal house with no string attached

Sli : is Trey still fighting with that girl ?

Veli : I don't know friend they look pretty close this day and they spend lot of time locked up in there room .. So back to me and Mzamo as I was saying "

Sli was not interested in hearing how Veli is

loosing her morals by being in love with a man who only want sex from her she was worried about Trey and Sbahle locking them self up she feared the worse what if she falls pregnant ? she got the news she wanted and she told veli she has to go Naïve veli believed that Sli is her best friend and she looking out for her best interest she told her everything about what happening in the royal house ... Her dream was for her to have Mzamo heart but she was failing dismally in winning him over... And wish that Sli maybe can help her

.

.

At some restaurant

Austin set down and ordered His drink he browsed on his phone checking his emails

" sorry I'm late .." Austin smiled and nodded

Austin : let's order drinks so we can get to business "

Mpilo : sure .."

Austin : you have the contacts for me "

Mpilo : if I may ask why you buying out all the company shareholder "

Austin : if I have to tell you I will have to kill you "

Mpilo laughed but Austin had a straight face

Mpilo cleared his throat and handed him a file

Mpilo : I don't think he will give it up "

Austin : I'm a very persuasive man trust me he will "

Mpilo : his name is Abdul his from Egypt his handling all the Zithelo foundation project that side "

Austin : you have been a great help ... So you thought about my proposal "

Mpilo : the company will drown without me already Nola is not copping "

Austin : Mpilo aboard the mission I need you back at the law firm "

He nodded

Austin : I need to go ... Keep me posted "

Mpilo nodded

Austin made his way to his car and called Mzamo

Mzamo : how did it go "

Austin : like stealing candy from a baby .."

Mzamo : let the take over begin .. "

Austin : I'm flying to Egypt ... Tell Trey that Menzi signed the contract I hope he knows what his doing "

Mzamo :the things we do for our friends " they laughed it "Look I need to go "

.  
.

Mzamo \*\*\*

" thanks for joining me " Sbahle said

Mzamo : how can I say no to my Queen "

Sbahle looked down

Mzamo was still puzzled why Sbahle asked that they meet outside the royal house but he always like that she is smart and thinks on her feet

Sbahle : I know you are a busy man Malume so I will just jump into it "

Mzamo nodded and adjusted himself on his seat

Her : what going on between you and Mveli "

Mzamo like how she is so direct he found himself laughing

Me : she just another girl that works in the royal house "

Sbahle : have you not taken interest in her "

Mzamo laughed " I'm too busy to settle down and take interest in a women ... Her services are remarkable no doubt but that all she is to me a servant "

Sbahle : than what I'm going to say won't cause any drift in the family ...I need her Diary all the duties she has been doing for royal family must



come to an end she need to stay in her lane and do what required from her "

Mzamo smiled she like what he was hearing

Mzamo : you sound like Pam ... I like the fire in you but my Queen I'm not the one to convince I'm with you on this ? "

Sbahle frowned " I'm nor following "

Mzamo : you see when Velile came to our lives

Ma took her in as her own daughter she never made her feel like an outsider that why you find her walking like royalty in that house "

Sbahle looked down as much as she wanted to horner Pam last wish she can not destroy a family bond the family has with Veli

Mzamo : you the first Lady of the house your word is final "

Sbahle : I can not use that power and disregard respecting my in-laws "

Mzamo nodded " just speak to Ma and see what she will say " this was going to be hard but there is no harm in trying she than looked at Mzamo and wish that her request can be taken into consideration

Sbahle : malume ... I love my husband and the past few week was not easy for us for the family

...I'm trying to rebuild my relationship with him but I feel like him being across the world from me will cause another voids between us "

Mzamo : its his legacy that his parent left for him ... I was only given a task to look after his firm till he graduates he need to know how to run it and he can not do that leaving in my shadow ...the name Mnguni was once the most respected powerful name that was know worldwide after his father died it became a memory ... Build the name with him and you will see the man he will be ... "

Sbahle : I can't go to the UK ..."

Mzamo : I don't think you have much of choice in that matter ... Its either your husband or the royal house ... Should you chosen the royal house he may come back with second wife ... Sometimes the strong wives are the one that are submissive to their husband ... " Sbahle thought deep on what Mzsmo just said and was disturbed by her phone ringing she looked at it

sbahle : I think I'm in trouble "

Mzamo laughed ... Come let's go I will cover for you "

.  
.

To be continued...

## Chapter 54

Mvelo \*\*\*

The minute I got downstairs I saw Mbala talking to koko and she stood up when she saw me I rushed to her and gave her hug

Me : how you doing"

Her : I should be asking you that "

I sigh

Her: I need to show you something before the sunset "

I frowned

Koko : please don't take long Makhumalo is preparing a cleansing after sunset "

I nodded

Me : ok Koko ... "

I looked Mbali " I need your help mfethu kunesimo engingasiqondi "

Her : I got all the answers you need truest me I know "

I nodded we walked out and got in her car in the car we talked about life in general nothing heavy I

could see that she is tense but brushed it aside

The minute the car stopped I looked at her

Me : what are we doing here ?"

Her : your Aunt has all the answers you seek so come "

I was very hesitant I mean we talking about a women who wish death upon me for years and tried numerous times to kill me

Me : this house was never sold " I asked walking in

Her : its royal property so yaaa"

Its looked clean then I thought she walked in and stood on the middle of the room

Her : I will need your hands ... She said I must show you something first we held hands and she started praying and I felt something cold on my feet like water just like that I had a vision

I saw Sli in some forest not just any forest it was the one close to the royal garden the trees were dense and showed little sunlight I moved in further I saw her saying hello she looked nervous I saw the water moving and I know that Gogo Ndoni was here

Sli started running in circles she was terrified no doubt the water started moving aggressively in circles making something that looked like a

tornado or twist the wind was powerful and sang its own tune Sli remained paralyzed in one place something appeared from The big wave of whirlwind it looked like a snake ... Massive big yellow and white snake Sli screamed when she saw Gogo Ndoni for the first time as she slowly turned into a human she was wearing long white and yellow dress with lot of beads on her neck wrist and arms she descended from the water walked towards Sli sli panicked and she was crying trying to move but was stuck

Ndoni: why you so afraid mother of lioness "

Sli:..... "

Ndoni: I'm not here to harm you "

Sli looked at her as she calm down she believed Gogo

Sli: where am I ? "

Ndoni: home where you will rule you were destined for greater things in life and the devil knew that you my child are Gods highly favoured child a miracle baby it took your parents 18 years after marriage to conceive you your mother prayed days and night to have you God granted her wish by touching her stomach and you were born "

Sli face showed shock only few people knew about that including me

Ndoni: even when you were in your mother's womb you were a target marrying to the evil family was a test from God your strength doesn't come from winning. It comes from struggles and hardship. Everything that you had to go through prepares you for the next level for he prepared you to be the neck of the head of kingdom "

Sli : I don't understand "

Ndoni: you love him I get it ... You his mate I see it in your heart and soul but his spiritually not ready to be in your life his journey has just begun but yours is almost at the finish line all you have to do is Wait for him to reach the finishing line"

This was all so shocking I can not believe my own ancestors spoke to sli and promised her my heart .. I tried to pull away from Mbali's hold but she held me tight

Mbali : look ..." My focus went back to vision

Ndoni : you beautiful inside and out we happy to have you as one of our own challenges are soon to come let them not break you but make you stronger ... " Ndoni opened portal to the future in the river i looked at it and saw green fields where

sli set on the blanket it was picnic theme she was pregnant again and was very big when i looked up i saw Zee laughing and talking non stop she was holding my hand I looked at sli she was happy i looked happy as well

Ndoni: you the neck never allow the head to lose balance.. allow destiny to lead you not your heart .. His your destiny and you are his ... remember that God's love is patient persistent and persevering Spiritual growth is not like fast food. It takes time for its roots to grow and that requires you to be receptive and patient.... He will find you do not look or seek for him "

I let go of Mbali ..I was mad really mad

Me : if they told her this than why we not together why do I love another ...is that the reason why she resent Sbahle the way she is acting like this was of the promise made to her by my ancestors"

I was walking up and down the room trying to figure everything out i suddenly head footsteps I stopped and I looked at Mbali

Mbali " please show yourself " and just like she commanded it started of looking like a shadow Have you ever seen what appears to be a shadow

person or dark figure stationary or moving with your own eyes that what I saw The majority of shadow figures that people experience seem to be negative malevolent and parasitic. Some are possibly demonic creatures or even evil spirits or entities. But this one was peaceful Mbali said a prayer in tongues and it slowly shifted from shadow to disturbing half burned face it look old on one side and gray but soon transformed to a beautiful women typical African women with her brown skin glowing she looked at Mbali and Smiled her eyes shifted to me no doubt this was my Aunt Nomakhwezi

Her :Mvelo "

My mouth was dry I could not talk or move lightning strike on my feet and I saw light rushing to me when I opened my eyes its was my mother she was very tall wearing her gladiators sandals and white dress she also was carrying a sword on her left hand

Mbali : this is not good "

Mom : you summoned an entity ..."

Mbali : I can explain "

Mom : evil can not be in same room with good you just broke the code of heaven prophet Mbali



"

Aunt : Jane please I mean no harm "

Mom : tell that to the Saul's you offers to the underworld "

Me : mom please I need answers ... She is willing to give tharm to me "

Mom : she is evil any truth she will give you she will need something in return this thing bargain with human souls "

Aunt : I'm between two worlds Jane I need to cross over but I can't I need Mvelo to help me I can not get in the ancestral land because I still have the evil mark ... But I know who wants to cause him harm... the dreams the unsettling feeling you have been having I know what caused it "

I looked at mom the unsettling feeling you have been having I know what caused it "

I looked at mom she is defiantly a warrior angel she was the one that passed on her divine power to me

Me : please mom I need to know " she nodded and stood behind me

Me : I'm listening "

Aunt : I believe and know for a fact that slindile

the mother of the lioness is attacked by spiritual entity .."

I looked at Mbali

Mom : that impossible she a highly favoured child of the heavens "

Aunt : she was but destiny was not fulfilled and that left her vulnerable

... Let's all face it she is the most weakest person I have ever Seen to have such power and not fully understand it "

Mom huffed and I looked at her to stop

Me : I don't understand ..

Aunt : Psychic or spiritual attacks aren't always easy to spot. For some people the attacks are so subtle or have been going on for so long that the person isn't aware of the attack.

Some attacks come from people you know.

Others may come from the dark forces you let in with your heart this spirit have bad intentions and are targeting her or you for any number of reasons "

Me: attack ? "

Mbali : a war was declare to you and your family ..evil Vs divinity"

Mbali looked at Mom

Me : you knew about this ?...and did not warn me about this ?? "

Mom : its complicated son "

Me : I'm listening "

Mom : it all started when you meet Slindile meeting with her was fate .. Zithelo was suppose to be created as per heavens orders she has spirit of higher being Silindile was protected when she was with Zithelo because of the power she possesses we tried separating you two for years because love often makes a person weak we knew that Slindile faith was not strong enough to be with you and she was once married to a high ranking pagan witch so it was going to be easy to use her to get to you ... If you started sharing the same bed "

Me : you separated us ?"

Aunt : yep They did " mom looked at her

Mom : we had no choice ..Mvelo because of you we as warrior angels are not fighting evil left right and center you closed the crack but the underworld did not just roll over and accept defeat they waited for an opportunity and it came when you ended things with Silindile and took your baby because she was not fully expecting of

God orders direction and her faith was compromised

she is emotionally unstable and has allowed spirit of anger jealousy hate and envy into her life "

Me : you promised her a happy ever after with me and you tossed her aside ... I would feel the very same way too !!"

Mbali : we do not always get what we want Mvelo ...the Future that God plan for us is not permanent he works in mysterious ways the Bible says that After Joseph endured extreme hardship and ended up in the palace he told his brothers "As for you you meant evil against me but God meant it for good ..." (Genesis 50:20). He had the wisdom and trust that everything he went through was because of God's good plan for his life' so why is slindile questioning Gods plan ??"

Mom smiled

Aunt : ok prophet we understand that but back to the matter at hand there is a devil or demonic being that has been knocking on Slindile soul and waiting for her to accept should that happened or hell will brake lose ..."

Me : but nothing can harm you or invade you without your permission"

Aunt : True but have you seen your baby mama of late ? Its a matter of time before she allows it in ...

Mvelo you need to help her ... If she turned this mean that Zithelo soul may be harmed ... "

Me : shit !! This is all my fault "

Mom : you only followed your heart baby you fell in love with Sbahle you had no control over what your heart wants "

Me : what is this demon "

Mbali : I only saw the glimpse of the future and it bad mfethu if the demon infuse in Sli soul the work we have done over the years will look like nothing "

Me : Mbali who is it ? "

Mbali : When the fifth trumpet is blown the 'abyss' will open and demonic locusts will be released to torture those who have not received God's seal. Their leader will be Abaddon one of Satan's high ranking demon "

Mom : Abaddon will have a simple mission inflicting pain and suffering on those who have not responded to God and accepted Jesus Christ as their savior . . . so son look at the world how many people believe in God and how many don't ... This will be war ?"

I set down this was to much mom came crouched down before me and held my face

Her : we can still defeat this my son "

Aunt : yaa but sacrifice need to be made

..Depending on the source there are different approaches for dealing with the attack. There are things you can do for yourself and there are things you can do to address the attacking entity. . ."

Mbali : we can cleans and trap it but if sli heart is still wounded it will be no use so Sli will need to stop it "

I shook my head

Mom : Prophet Mbali is right ... There is so much we can do but Sli will need to stop it ..This dark spirits and entities can move into physical bodies affecting aura polluting what sli think speak do desire and feel. If sli is invaded by these spirits or entities she can take on the physical attributes illnesses and behavior of the spirit or entity occupying her body to such a degree that there appears to be a complete personality change. . . she is already changing and she is loving the evil inside of her because it comes with so much power so you need to help her get read of it and banish it "

Me : me ? !!!"

Aunt : someone is listening I need to go ... mvelo please stay safe and don't be afraid when I come to you ... I'm only trying to help .. Jane thank you for giving Me time to speak to my nephew the great Ngonyama king .. " she smiled and shifted to a shadow and disappeared "

Mom : I will get information from heaven will talk later ...." She held my hand and disappeared

Mbali : let's pray to close the link "

.  
.

Driving back home I had a lot to think about this was bigger then me then us

Mbali : what you going to do " she asked the minute she switch off the engine I looked at her as we packed outside my house

Me : this will brake Sibahle but its my calling ..."

Mbali : No ... Let me do it "

Me : she will never let you in ... She wants me it's always been me ... I will need to get close to her to save her from herself ..." I didn't Waite for Mbali to answer i jumped out of the car I just needed to hold my wife when I got in the house she was not around I tried calling her she did not

answer

" Mabhengu ukuphi !!"

.

.

to be continued ...

## Chapter 55

Sbahle

The festive season was came and gone I had tragic sad wedding day death happen to my in-laws fight and toxic event brewed up Veli left the house kicking and screaming after the day of the cleansing ceremony they say she committed treason and was burned from our village i have a feeling that she is leaving with Sli most probably plotting ways on how to kill me but I really do not give a rat ass about that.

Sbu mother decided to take my kids away from me my smile keeper she told me I'm too young to take care of four kids and well it was hard saying Good-bye especially to Naledi  
I can't sleep I wake up and go to her room and



when I get to bed I have difficulties sleeping I miss her so much sometimes I think it would be better to not even bother sleeping. How many more nights like this do I have to endure? How many more 4a.m's will I have to see flashing on the clock? How many more mornings will I wake up with swollen blood-shot eyes from my not sleeping How many more nights will I have to dread thinking about going to sleep all I hear is her baby cry its like what ever I love God takes it away from me .

My marriage life is just fucked up I understand that it's a arrange marriage but we fell in love and I honestly thought it will be different but little did I know that it was just not meant to be I have had events were i just wanted to trow in a towel and go back home but he will blindsight me and make me believe that the wild fire will soon died down.

me and Mvelo we still... What's the word ' ok' I found my self calling mom and telling her that I can not do this any more I want to come back home ever Since the day of cleansing ceremony my husband has been cold towards me " Whether you've been dating a short while or

many years relationships experience ebbs and flows and if you're in an ebb and noticing that your partner is distant it can be really painful it may be that you need to give your partner space but it may also be that there's something wrong and he doesn't know how to talk about it By bringing it up you make it possible for the two of you to hash things out." Mom said

She is firm believer In marriage maybe the reason why I stayed is because of her " umfazi uyabekezela " beliefs and I did not want to be seen as a failure.

I have been giving him silent treatment it not as if his around to talk to me any way but frankly I'm tired of fighting and trying to talk to him

" I can't do this anymore " I said to him a weeks back my clothes were packed and I was going back home he cried and bagged me to stay he promised me he will change he told me He's stressed out It work the pressures of family life being in a relationship and university deadlines he told me his trying to balance everything and he needs me I put my bag down and stayed with him Tree day back same thing happen I was about to leave he made a scene at the airport told me I'm

exaggerating when I told him his shirt smell of women perfume he was sad and sincere I saw it in his eyes and took him back again " we can make this work Sbahle please don't walk away from me " he pleaded with me silly of me I believed him its true what they say love is so blind

Falling in love can be likened to someone falling from a high building. The possible result will be unconsciousness if not death. Take it that anybody that falls in love is either unconscious or dead.

His still saving my purity for what I have no idea he has been up and down doing business related things ...I suspect something is up I see it in the faces of the people in this house and I'm still the one who is in the dark. . . his hiding something big from me my suspension say there is a women involve but I have no proof and he has not given me a reason to believe his cheating.

.

We leaving for UK in few hours time yes i agreed to go I love Mvelo and being with him will be the best thing do for us for our relationship and besides I'm also excited about schools I'll be

studying Art an building architect ... I'm excited yet nervous about leaving ...I suspect something is up I see it in the faces of the people in this house and I'm still the one who is in the dark. . . his hiding something big from me my suspension say there is a women involve but I have no proof and he has not given me a reason to believe his cheating.

.

We leaving for UK in few hours time yes i agreed to go I love Mvelo and being with him will be the best thing do for us for our relationship and besides I'm also excited about schools I'll be studying Art an building architect ... I'm excited yet nervous about leaving change is good right .

" wake up sleepy head " I heard him walking in and placing what smells like food on the side table he did not come back last night he told me its was work but his phone was off when tried calling him when i battle with sleeping alone . what happening with me ...with us I feel like I'm sinking to depression this man is killing me my eyes are still heavy i did not sleep a wink last night I can't begin to count the amount of times I have laid awake and sobbed into his pillow at 4 a.m over

the last almost month is it normal to cry for a person like this ?

Out of the entire day of pain that is when I am at my weakest in my bed at night And I hate it. Just like out of a movie I will sometimes get up and stare at myself in the bathroom mirror as I splash water on my face willing myself to stop and pull it together. Just like a damn movie. And that makes me hate it the grief of the love we once share my sadness myself even more he has changed me I'm too soft and weak when it comes to him . It makes me feel like I have totally lost my mind like I am a totally ridiculous person like I am trying to "act" a certain dramatic way when that couldn't be farther from the truth. It just happens. I don't even have the words to truly explain it...I'm tired of having no one here to comfort me to hold me and to tell me its going to be OK. I'm tired of being without him I'm tired of my 4a.m tear-soaked pillow.

But looks I'm not the only one having trouble sleeping at times I will wake up to him sobbing in bathroom when I ask him what wrong he will hold me and tell me " no matter what I chose you I love you " a lot is said in our tears but not on actual

words

He looks at me with his dreamy eyes and wiped my lone tear

he promised me it will get better once we in UK  
he kissed me on the cheek he moves to my mouth  
and he kissed my lips I held him close as he  
deepen the kiss I miss this I miss him I ran my  
hands under his T-shirt I have not felt his skin on  
me for a while now but he pulled out and looked  
at me

he looked good very Good

Him : stop undressing me with your eyes " he ran  
his hands on my cheek I miss his touch but his  
eyes are showing sadness

Me : what going on Mnguni "

Him : I love you so much "

I didn't ask him that he wants to cry he wants to  
hold me what ever is happening with him his  
afraid to lose me I'm snuggled under his hold his  
sniffing i want to see his face but his holding me  
tight I pushed him off I'm tired of him making me  
his cuddle pillow

Him : Sbahle "

Me : get out of my room and come back when you  
ready to talk to me "

Him : babe ..."

Me : what the fuck is eating you up ??"

He looks down

Me : its been a whole month Mvelo you acting like this I did not sign up for this uyezwa !!! "

He was looking down he was not talking

Me: get the fuck out off my room !!!"

I rolled over jumped off from the bed

Him : baby ...."

I'm not in the mood to be with him only this ring on my hand is the only thing connecting me and him.

I heard him breath out loud

Him : I'm sorry ok ... " he said outside my the bathroom door I took my ever long bath I looked up pushing my tears away

I jumped into my jean and T shirt

my hair is mess I have no time for it .

He was not in the room when I got back as much as I miss him and wish to hold him I can't seem to do that with so much distance between us I

dream about the painting of him hugging another women constantly this days is he cheating on me

? Could it be the reason why his distance? I brush it aside as he never gave me a reason that his

cheating I pray a lot this days and meditate also  
...it seams to be working some days and someday  
I feel like dying

I set by the couch by the window holding my  
knees to my chest it hurts so much I had to get  
out of here I took my cap and car keys I was going  
to use the back door so that he will not stop me  
but I found him standing there with his phone in  
his ear

" come on Sli .."

...

" I know ...I know I promised but I need to take  
Sbahle to the UK "

...

" I'm still married to her you being unreasonable  
right now "

...

" I was with you last night ... "

I held my mouth as tears gush down my cheeks

...

" ya I miss you too ... Look I have to go ...I will call  
you later "

...

" I know ... I know ...kiss Zee for me ok "

I held my chest he turned around and saw me



Him : No ..no ..no Sbahle please Bby its not what you think ..."

I turned to run off but he held me in his arms I broke down into a loud cry .

.  
.

To be continued ... 6 months later...

## Chapter 56

Sbahle

.  
.

If you've ever been through a bad breakup you know that the struggle is real. For the weeks possibly months it does not get any easy I feel like I gave up to early I mean isiko lithi ngumkakhe ... Ngathelwa ngenyongo I'm going against culture and my belief by choosing me by staying i was only going to destroy me Break up is saying goodbye to the person you were once close with and deeply in love with.

I wish some one would have told me that it hurts

so bad " I can't live without him " I sob holding my pillow tight my heart is broken into million pieces and I don't know where to start to pick myself up personally seeing my self like this is just devastating some may relate but i doubt they know how I feel they aren't in this moment this pain this loud voices in my head saying why did I leave Sometimes it feels like I'm completely helpless and I will never get past the suffering.

" I have run you a bath water baby ... Come "

He said I ignore him he open the blind's and I just pull the covets over my head I heard him sigh he warned me about this

" I don't trust this boy ... His a fuck boy and he will brake your heart"

Him : I know its really bad baby but everything happen for a reason ... Its looks bad right now like your life is in the dark

but there is always light at the end of the tunnel. "

I lifted the covers off my head and looked at him I bust out and laugh

Me : you really suck at this "

Him : hay I'm trying here "

Me : i feel like i was I such a fool ... You told me not go through with this "

Him : hayboo unzenzile akakhalelwa but look at me I'm busy crying with you "

Me : will the pain stop will it go away ?"

Him : i don't know Baby girl but I'm here will get through this together ok " I nodded in his shoulder

Me: it still hurts so bad Mlondi ... I feel like I can not go on "

Him : Cry sob your eyes out scream and yell. As long as it doesn't hurt yourself or anybody else" I chuckled is he ever serious

Him : ook ok but just find ways to release and let go of the pain you feeling.

. I should have killed him"

Me: Mlondi !!"

Him : what ?! come your bath water is getting cold "

I smiled and jumped of the bed

When people kindly and humorously tell you all break ups are hard it's because they are just that that what I have realised . " Don't take this part of the healing process away from yourself or it will grow and fester within you. You will naturally feel some negative emotions no matter how easy or hard your break up was. Honor your feelings and know that they will get less intense the more that

you let them out. It helps you move past them! "

Mlondi said there is truth into that and its six months without communication from the outside world and I'm slowly letting go I can smile I can talk and I can even take my long walks without crying yes some days are worse then others but I'm getting there

You most probably wondering why I'm with Mlondi well I called him 6 months back when I found out that my so called husband was Having an affair with his baby mama

I called my brother after Mvelo confessed to me about Sli ...

~~flash back ~~

" I don't love her I'm just trying to protect my daughter "

Me : how long are going to be seeing her "

Him : I don't know Sbahle right now I'm her link to the righteous passage "

Me : wow she still in love with you and you toying with her won't that make it worse "

Him: I just need to try I need her to see a light my ancestors fucked her over and right now she's a women scorned and that alone is causing her to self distrust ... Before I'm king husband I have

calling Sbahle you know this "

Me : but this is too close to home...why don't you let any one help her ?"

Him : Zithelo life is in danger Sbahle "

Me : does Sli know that or she just too selfish to get to you that she does not care who she hurts in the process it was first Veli she lost everything because of her and Zithelo life is in danger not forgetting me ... I'm hurting Mvelo you can't do this to me ... To us "\_

Him : I'm sorry ..."

Me : you should have told me that you will be playing happy family with you ex fixing her up "

Him : I was scared to lose you "

Me: it doesn't matter at all now because you already lost me "

Him : Sbahle ...please don't say that I love you... only you " he held my hands

Me : I can't wait for you Mvelo "

Him : please baby you my life I need you "

Me : " you lied to me !!!"

Him: I was scared to lose you ... Baby please ... Give me second chance ..." He pulled me to his arms

Me : I can't... "

He kissed me I tried to push him away ...but he pulled me to him " I love you Sbahle .. Please Mami "

I shook my head this tears just continued to run down like a water fall

Him : don't leave me please "

Me : I have too ... I'm your second best in all off this "

Him : Sbahle please ..."

His hands traveled under my T-shirt his mouth was on my neck he was on top of me my T-shirt was off I always pictured my first time with him to be different rose petals candle lite soft music playing kissing under a moonlight you know like they do in the movies but no it was break up sex literally break up sex that was about to happen there was too many emotions the sobbing kissing with his shaking hand he was able to undress me and

I was only left on my underwear we were both crying he was in between my legs and he suddenly buried his head on my shoulder and let out a loud cry

Him : not like this "

I wanted to feel him inside me at least he was so

so close he ow me that

Him : not like this ..." He jumped into his sweatpants and walked out leaving me a crying mess I took my phone and called Mlondi " Ntombikayise "

I didn't say anything but just cried

It was midnight when I head gun fire I put on my gown on and I rushed downstairs

I saw koko and sunny looked at me no Waite he winked at me

Koko : uyambulala umtanami Sbahle... Please help him " she was crying and my head was buzzing

I looked at sunny

Me : where is my husband !! " he chew on his matchstick and just looked at me

I heard lot of commotion and breaking of things it was happening in Mvelo study ooh god no

" Mlondi !!! ...Mlondi ... Please ..." I was crying and banging on the door what felt forever Mlondi unlocked the door

Mlondi : come near her I swear to God I will kill you ... Udlala ngengane Ka ma ...wenanja !! !!"

His T-shirt was full of blood I saw Mvelo body on the floor he was badly injured I could not recognize him his face it was swallow there was so

much blood ...

Me : ooh my God " I try running to him but Mlondi threw me over his shoulder and we left ~~~end of flash back ~~~

it's been six months since last time I saw Mvelo I cried most of the time I wish I did not have to involve my brothers to my marital dispute but Mlondi has help me a lot with moving on his crazy no doubt but he was just there I told him I don't want to go home so he took me some beach house close to Graham's town I told him I don't want to go home so he took me some beach house close to Graham's town he said that this was my dad place he will hold me down when I cried out for Mvelo and told me he got me. .. I still wonder how his doing if his still alive the state I left him in was scary but Mlondi told me that he is ok ... He just roughen him up its a boy code.

Today marks the exact 6 months of my brake up I was sick and tired of crying for Mvelo and my roommate was to cocky at times I wanted to do something with my life to take my mind of things Him : where are going ?"

Me : when you going back home "

Him : you fuckin kicking me out of my fathers



house "

Me : no ... But I need my trust fund money to start something... And I need my space "

Him : I can give you money ... And angiyi ndawo "

Me ; what !!! Mlondi ... I'm 19 stop babysitting me "

Him : aaaah wrong you only turning 19 in November and that's about 4 months from now ? so technically I'm still your guardian "

Me : I want to go back to school ...and I need my trust fund money guardian !!"

He smiled I guess he likes the idea that I'm going back to school

Him; mom will need to sign for it and it must be wired to your account "

Me : I'm sure you can make it happened big brother "

Him : when are you planning on telling Mon about your fall our marriage "

I frowned

Me : I don't need her lectures Mlondi "

Him : its been 6 months ...and frankly I'm tired of being Dr Phill in your life "

Me : I didn't ask you !!"

Him : well I'm telling "

Me : hàaaaaaaah you so annoying can you leave me alone please !!!" I walked out banging the door He chuckled

Him : I love you too

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

Depression is killer no doubt what I ever I tried to do with sli did not walk after my brake up with Sbahle I didn't see the point of leaving I moved to the UK and focused on work I talked to Zee everyday but just not visiting her Sli will cry and tell me he miss me but I will tell her I'm too busy will see them when I come back honest fact I been busy but reality will kick in the minute I come home " Sbahle left me " I have been writing her letter every night just to stop thinking about her to much and I will sleep on my study wake up go to work and do it all over again ... Tonight is no different then any other night I'm in my study and writing a letter to her

~~ A letter to my wife ~~

I will never forget the beauty I saw when I first set eyes on you. Your small eyes that carried so much fire

I never tired of telling you how beautiful you were I'm sure you still are I remember how you use to get so irritated when I told you how beautiful you are .( I smiled )

You were ambitious; it was infectious. You made me promises I never imagined you wouldn't keep

...

Life was exciting. We enjoyed nights out exotic bedroom talk I felt loved and wanted. We married and planned to have children it never felt like arranged marriage because this day I still say it was love at first sight .. I bought smile in your life you use to say but soon took it away from you Then everything changed. I fucked it up I took you for granted I thought you will stay even I fore one wouldn't have stayed if tables were turned I made so many mistake I regret them because they just pushed you away from me

I no longer have any zest for life no interest in anything other than your thinking about your voice shouting laughter you telling me you love me . Conversation is one-way now with this letter in my hand "

I looked at our wedding picture I took it and kissed it I placed it back on the table and took my

pan and continued

" this there are no million questions asked that i have no answers for I miss your cocky responses that followed by a paired of grunt and a roll of those small yes ( I smiled )I miss your cooking the way you took care of me my bed is lonely and do cold I moved out from the main bedroom because everything there reminds me of you its been 6 months I was at home what the point of being a king without a king .

I don't cry myself to sleep any more my tears don't get me anywhere no one can hear me but I wake up with a wet pillow ...

I placed my pan down as I head the door bell ringing I drag my leg its still gives me problems and taking forever to heal

I opened the door and I was meet by a slap shit another one and another ... I lost my balance and fell down hurting my self even more I cried in vain

" masimba Mani lawo awenzayo ... I'm gone for Botswana for few months and you act crazy "

I looked up its maKhumalo

" mama "

Her : wenzeni Mvelo !!!" I tried standing up but fuck my leg was killing me

Her : yini !"

Me : I broke my leg playing soccer " was not about to tell her that my brother in law hit me with a golf stick that will be embarrassing she helped me up

Her : kwenzakalani ..."

She placed her bad on table and looked at me she flew all the way to UK to ask me that ? Isn't it obvious

Me : its long story "

Her : I'm on a vacation so shoot away ..."

I breath out loud looked at her she was not budging so I told her the whole story

Her : do you love Silindile "

Me : NO...she took everything away from me I Hate her so much I wish I never meet her !! "

Her : where is Ndlonkululu "

I wanted to find the right words to say that she gone but I just cried its all I do this day cry I see her in my dreams everywhere I go I can't believe she is gone she placed her hand over my shoulders

Her : you know what I see here is you being a coward you no longer love sli I understand .. She is the mother of your child I understand that too

but you not honest with her you stringing her along Mvelo she needs to know that you and her can never be stop playing hero in her life first you rescued her from her abusive marriage you were her shoulder to cry on when she was a widow she fell pregnant with your child and she felt entitled that she must be your wife because you went back and fourth in between her legs... Mvelo grow up ... You are king now not a teenage boy that's control by a dick "

Me : she had a vision about gogo Ndoni "

Her : baby idlozi only looks out for there own ...

Dreams and vision may look like something you wish them to be but integrating something else all together ... She only believe what she wanted to believe ... The main focus in her dreams and visions is the princess she gave birth too "

Me : what !"

Her : Zithelo is the first female lioness in your family ... That why she must never leave the royal house ... Lamasimba owenzayo no Slindile ayangicika because she can't even take care of that child busy running after you "

Me : mama they say that she was possessed "

Her : so what if she allowing a demon into her life

impilo yakhe she should know that with every action there consequences  
stop walking on eggshells with this women she old enough to accept rejection and walk away what the fuck is wrong with her nxa... You know what akangazi kahle lo ngizodila naye "

Me : what about Zithelo "

Her : Will speak to Pastor Majozi about this ...

Indlela ibuzwa kwabaphambili my boy "

I laughed and shook my head

Her : " what's so funny "

Me : Sbahle once said that very same line to me"

" She is smart women ...young but smart ... You lost good one there my boy "

She stood up

Her : let me make you food .." She was busy talking to herself as she made her way to the kitchen

Her: you and Mbali may have the powers but you still Need guidance ... Just look at this mess you created what if Nomakhwezi wanted to destroy your marriage and you played right in her trap "

I pooped my eyes open

" never trust this things they always bargains with peoples life "

Me : ooh thixo "

Her : yini "

Me : it something that mom said "

.

.

Sli \*\*\*

" congratulations miss Zwane you 3 months pregnant " the Dr said wiping the gell

Veli screamed " ooh my God Sli you finally did it "

I just held my face and cried no ...no this can't happen

Veli : ooh Wait till we see the Queen face now ... You finally got your seat baby "

Me : it's over its all over "

Veli : what's wrong ... You carrying the next Prince there ... And Mvelo will have no choice to marry you now "

Me : its not Trey baby "

.

.



## Chapter 57

Sbahle

" why you looking at me like that "

Him : nothing "

Yoo Mloni is so annoying I know he wants to say something but he is just looking at me

Me : yini !!"

Him : ok ... Ok ... I can not tell you but I can show you "

I rolled my eyes

Me: I hate surprises Mloni "

Him : I know but this not a surprise Ok ...maybe its kinda is ... But either way I'm going to show you... So while you were out I did some digging "

Me: digging"

He bit his lip... Yoo lady's my brother is hot but only if he did not have that attitude he will just a catch

Him : this house is big and I wondered why it was not sold like the rest of my dads assets and why my uncle never knew about it

Me: wena how did you know about it "

Him : let's just say I have my ways "

I stood up took our plate the sink he followed me

Him : have you checked out other rooms in this house "\_

Me : ooh dear brother if only I wants depressed mopping over my the break up of my marriage I would have "

Him : ha...ha ... Ha funny "

He made a face and I laughed at him

Him : so remember those cups you bought dad for fathers days and his birthday with does goofy quotes .."

I nodded and smiled

Me : he love them "

Him : off caused he did and somehow I think coming here was no coincidence "

Me: haybo what is this all about "

He pulled my hand " come let me show you "

We walked to the basement he switch on the light and I held my mouth

Me : my cups "\_

Him : its true what they say A father holds his daughter's hand for a short while but he holds her heart forever..."

Me : ooh my God Mlondi "

I ran my hands to the displayed mugs I read them out

One of the greatest gifts I've ever gotten came from God. I call him daddy." happy father day ...love Sbahle

"Dad. He can play like a kid give advice like a friend and protect like a bodyguard. My hero ... Happy birthday

"Daddy thanks for being my hero chauffeur financial support listener life mentor friend guardian and simply being there every time I need a hug." – get well soon Sbahl ...oh my

Ohh my god I look at each and every one of this cup and I looked around it was his art studio

Him : you still think this was not coincidence "  
He held my shoulders

Him : you the only one that has his talent why don't you try and embrace it

Me :Mlondi I haven't touch a paint brush over 7 years "

Him : you still have that pain from the break up soon it will turn into anger you my sister and we Bhengu we laugh hard and hate even harder I was glad that boy "

Me : Mvelo "

Him : ya what ever him he pull you out from that dark whole you were once in but life is never a

straight line and I will hate to see you get back into it ... This is your escape let me carry the anger the hate the bullshit for you but I want you to escape here this must be your happy place "

Me : Mlondi I don't know what to say "

Him : just honor your father Sbahle if you can't do this for yourself then do it for him .. Make him proud "

Me ; ... I don't know" I looked at the new paint brush and paper I was shocked

Me: you did all this ? "

Him : yaa .. But still kept the old in that corner "

I nodded

Me : I don't know what to say "

I was feeling very emotional now ...

Him : ok stop making me Dr Phill or Opra but the thing is you always had great relationship with dad I've made it my business to observe you two the while growing up And I've seen some incredible beautiful things. Like the little girl who was not very cute – her teeth so funny with braces and her hair doesn't grow right and she's got on thick glasses – but her father holds her hand and walks with her like she's a tiny angel that no one can touch. He gives her the best gift a

woman can get in this world: protection. And the little girl learns to trust the man in her life. And all the things that the world expects from women – to be beautiful to soothe the troubled spirit to soothe the troubled spirit heal the sick send the greeting card bake the cake – all of those things become the way we pay the father back for protecting us so am I wrong ?"

I ran to him and hugged him

Me : thank you "

Him : I'm not a hugger Sbhahle you know that "

Me : you and me both big brother "

Him : aaaah man !

.

.

Mvelo

I'm swamp with work and I suddenly heard a knock on my door

Me : go away I'm busy "

" that's the reason why you have not been returning my calls and massages "

I looked up and Smiled " Austin ... Hay what's brings you here'

I limp up to give him a bro hug

Him : so now i need yo have reason to check up

on my friend "

Me ; i guess you don't "

Him ; obviously ... Look I'm only here for few night  
so let's grab a drink "

I looked at the paper work on my desk

Him : I'm not taking no for an answer "

Me : fuck "

We walked to the nearest pub down the road  
from the office and settled down for some drinks

Him : hows the knee"

Me: I'm dreading surgery but I think I need to see  
Dr now "

Him : told you that Mlondi is nut case "

Me: trust me I know he crack my jaw broke my  
nose broke my knee fractured my leg and guess  
what I got two broken ribs so I'll drink to that "

Austin mouth was on the floor

Me : and you know what I don't mind getting  
another beating because I plan on getting my wife  
back "

Him : dude are you crazy ... He did tell you he will  
kill you next time "

Me ; if getting killed is the only option to getting  
my wife back so be it "

Him : what the fuck man No !"

Me : look man Not all relationships survive the test of time and there will always be moments when you would feel the need to finally give up and let go. However it's not also that easy to just drop everything and leave because you're talking about something that once made you the happiest person in the world – so im stuck in the frustrating and heartbreaking dilemma between staying and saying good bye. And dude I ain't saying goodbye

Him: so how do you plan on doing that "

Me: I will wait ..." He chocked on his drink

Him : what ...?

I nodded " I'm just going to allow Sbahle to Take a break and I know deep down she has not said goodbye or close our chapter but her heart is still bleeding from what I put her trough I will never give up on my relationship just yet because as long as we both believe in our love for each other there will always be a rainbow after every storm.

Maybe we just need a break from everything?

And For her to Take all the time that she need "

Him : yooo! who the fuck are you and what did you do with the Ass I called my friend "

I laughed

Me : you know that saying that you never know what you have till its gone mfethu loosing Sbahle made me grow up over night you only have that one girl ... That one girl that just completes you "

He nodded

Me : I'm in no rush in fixing us ... She is my Queen all will fall into place when I make my move "\_

Him : yoooh!

Trying an fix an almost broken relationship while the bruised are still visible it can be emotionally taxing and it can even affect her physically and emotionally so I plan to take it easy. She deserve to breathe – and remember that at the end of this remedy i have her and she has me

Me : so tell Me about Menzi how is he adjusting "

Him : dud I can't believe you made me his boss the guy is killing us his loosing cases as if he did not go to law school... I'm thinking of putting him on performance management "

Me : naaa give him family law cases ...I think he may win one or two "

Him : Trey you killing me here ... If you were not my boss I would have said fuck you "

Me : we outside the office ..." I looked at him

Him : fuck you !!! "\_



Me : ooh well thank you bro !"

We bust out laughed I missed this white redneck

.

Sli \*\*\*

" I hate office meeting they are so formal "

He set on the couch so I decided to fold my legs under my desk

Him : what is this meeting about boss lady "

I really do not like this guy and it does not help that his aura makes me so uncomfortable I fixed my hair my hands are sweating and his noticing this he stood up and set on my table

Him : dinner at my place tonight "

He licked his lip and ran his hand on my face

Me : Mpilo what happened between us was a mistake and it has to stop ... I'm fixing things with my baby daddy "

He laughed and stood up " a mistake is a kiss " he locked my door " you touching my dick ..is a mistake ."

I stood up " what are you doing "

He closed my blinds

Me : Mpilo please get out right now "

Him : make me boss lady "

He whispers in my ear my " a mistake is not you

come back over and over over to ride my dick  
...this " I felt him raising my skirt he pushed me to  
the couch ... Why am I not stopping him why am I  
even wet for him I feel my wall opening up for  
him

Me :mmmm" I held my mouth

Him : this is me pleasuring you and you like it "  
I shook my head

Him : do you still call this a mistake"

He did not move his big black cock that was  
buried deep inside of me locked in by my walls

Him : I can stop if you feel like its still a mistake "

He slowly pulled out

Me: please don't "

Him " yes Boss lady .." he went in for the kill my  
virgins was on fire ... He fucked me like a whore  
he never kissed me or touched me but just  
devoured me

"" hello Earth Silindile " I looked up Nola was  
waving her hand at me

Me : I'm sorry I'm not feeling well I need to go "

Nola : Sly come on . . . we need this account you  
can't just leave you just for here

Her : Nola please .. "

Nola : ya sure Sly its not likely its going to be the

first time where I singly run this company on my own"

\_I was a crying mess as I ran out how can I be so stupid out of all the guy I could have sex with I chose the Durban play boy to fuck me and make me pregnant ...

.  
.

To be continued

## Chapter 58

Sli \*\*\*

I walked into Zithelo bedroom she was kneeling down and praying I looked at her and smiled my baby is growing up so fast and I hate that I caused such drift between her and her father I wanted Trey to love me and take me back so much that I lost my self in the way he told me he hates fighting with me and requested that we go to therapy for the sake of Zee but still again I was under the infatuation that he will be mine he told me time and time again that he is in love with his wife and he will never take a second wife Sbahle

completed him and he wish that I respect his wife because Sbahle also respect me ad his baby mama

.

He told me that its not easy letting go of someone you taught you belong to but Gods plans are never what we want but what he wants from us he reminded me the importance of prayer but I was just too far gone him being in my house and talking to me more like counseling me made me see the light that he was never mine to claim but I had hope that God can just listen to my prayed and give me this perfect family I so badly wanted ... But yet again I never took time to kneel down and ask God for that ... I hated him for taking my dream and giving it to another women.

The day Trey left he told me he can not help me if I can not even try to help my self .. He was broken and told me he lost everything because he wanted to be there for me as the mother of his child that was 6 months ago ... I lost him and my daughter suffered in the process I seek comfort in another mans bed but came out with a baby that was not planed and it turned out to be very ugly when I confronted Mpilo about it .

" are you trying to trap me with the baby ? ... Fuck

women you better kill that thing ... Or go tell who ever made you pregnant about this baby ...this was just sex ... You must be crazy if you think I'm in love with you " Mpilo denied the baby not only that he resigned from work ... My life just went from sli the motivational speaker to sli the whore ... Mpilo posted a video of us having sex " my boss the motivational speaker with a tight pussy she even screams Gods names while I'm fucking her brains out" the video is going viral ... I just wish to pack my things leave south Africa my life is finished this is just too much .

Her : in Jesus name Amen " I looked at my baby and wiped my tears

Me: Amen " she looked up at me and smiled

Her : why you crying mammy "

Me: mommy is sad baby "

Her : come "

I went to her and sat on get bed

Her : kneel mommy God need you to respect him when you Specking to him "

Me : ooh ... Who taught you all of this "

She smiled

Her : Hle -hle she said that when we cry we must never forget to prey she said that tears are a

windows to sadness and if we pray God will wipe our tears and make us happy so try it mommy "

Me : I think I made God mad "

She giggle

Her : God is forgiving God mommy .. You want to know how you can pray but also have a chat with God ? "

I nodded

Her : Hle-hle said that when we pray we need to Start off by thanking God for being with us and for providing for our family thank him for his great unconditional love "

Me : wow ... What else did she teach you about praying"

Her : that we must

Ask God to forgive our mistakes.

Then present our needs and requests to him

Close with thanking and praising him for all of his blessings to us

Do you you want to try it mommy

I nodded

I wiped my tears and held my hands together

Me :

Lord God I trust in you today. I thank you that you keep turning the pages of my life. Everyday you

give me a new beginning. . .

O Lord I am so sorry. I lay before you my regret my guilt and my heartache. I ask for your forgiveness and trust in your everlasting grace to redeem me and guide me in the right way. Thank you for your goodness to me Jesus. I love you.

Amen.

Her : you will be OK now mom ... Remember as a Gods child only you can allow the devil inside of you Pray every day mom and you will be ok "

I felt this wave of emotions running over me I cried in my daughter arms and I felt a huge burden being lifted off

Me : thank you baby " she jumped into her her bed

" don't thank me thank God "

Me: who teaches you all this things "

Her : hle -hle ...she my Queen goodnight mom " she turned her back at me as I looked at her and felt a glimpse of guilt all along I have been hating on a God fearing women ...

.

.

Sbahle \*\*\*

I took a long walk down the coast and I must say I

love how the breeze hit my face I set down and looked at the sea and looked at my ring I smiled Everything inside me wants to scream and yell to the entire world how much I hate Mvelo and how much I never want to see him again. But that would be a lie I couldn't live with. As much as I want people to think his the biggest asshole deep down I don't.

For the past months that I have known him. He has been my rock. The person I looked forward to talking to every single day the one I could trust with my life and the one I would never stop loving I miss him so much his laughter the way he hate wearing his T-shirt

" babe put a T-shirt on we got maids in the house that unable to work with you walking around with you perfect abs "

Him : this belongs to you they can look but they can't touch ...besides I got a crazy wife that will put them to order if they start having and ideas " I missed how much he loved to call me " mkami .. My wife ...Mabhengu Ngiyakuthathanda"

Growing up after my father died i never thought that they will be another man who will love me the way he used too Mvelo has taught me so



much more than I could imagine. He taught me to love unconditionally and I can never thank him enough. Days like this I miss everything about Mvelo . I miss waking up next to him and hearing his silent snoring the way he held me tight and how his boner made me feel uncomfortable but hot and horny at the same time I see him smile when I close my eyes his touch I wish to feel and his kiss. I'll miss our adventures and all of the crazy times we had together. I guess all things really do come to an end. . . but how can God give me man that was sent from heaven to love me and he take him away ... Was I never enough for him that's why he chose her over me was I not sexy enough that's why he never wanted to have stay with me ...I know for a fact that he was my lesson a lesson to never love someone so much because they can always leave. . .

" he must have really broke your heart for you to cry out loud like this in public "

I looked up there was some guy standing over me offering me his handkerchief

I did not realise that I was crying out loud I snatch the handky wiped my teas blow my nose and gave it back to him

Me : thank you "

I stood up and walked away leaving him stunned at my actions . well the unapologetic Sbahle is back I laughed to myself

The minute I got home I was welcome by shouting

Me : mom !"

She was mad really mad

Her : what's this I hear that you left your house 6 months ago !!"

Mlondi : he hurt her mom !!"

Mom : angikhulumi nawe wena "

Mlondi : yeah what ever I'm out of here " he walked out leaving me with dragon Lady

Her : talk "

Me: mom I took all your advise but he still chose her over me "

Mom : why didn't you come to me"

Mom : kanjani ma when you keep telling me to bekezela .. Emendweni kuyabekezelwa "

Her : its figure of speech Sbahle every mother says that to their daughter when they face merital problems I was not going to chase you away uma ufika ekhaya .. Mtanami ... Kodwa umthwala ubunzima kangaka and you did not come to me ?" She started crying

Me; I'm sorry ma ... I just wanted to leave that house and never look back I knew that his family will look for me at home and I was not ready to face him "

Her : baby ...I'm so sorry I failed you yet again "

Me : no mom you made me stronger I was someone wife ...a Queen of his land your words did not brake me but they made me but I could not stay with a man who's heart belong to another "

Her : oohh baby ... I'm so sorry "

Me : I love him mom " I could not stop the tears I just cried there something about being in our mothers arms that just makes buried pain come rushing back out

Her : its ok My baby mama is here "

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

" thank you Banzi "

Him : yah what ever don't mention it so how long are you going to stalking her "

Me : non of your business bro ... How long did you stalk Mpume "

Mpume is his wife

Him : well that was fate bro ...its a whole different story "

I chuckled I had asked Banzi to look for Sbahle location and with his special oops background he can track a person just in few minutes and boom he got everything

Him : you really doing this ? "

Me : ya I need my girl back "

Him :Mlondi still has tight security over her he is watching her every move "

Me : fuck ... Its been 6 months bro what the hack ? "

Him : she still is his baby sister so it can even take a years for him to let his guard down ... "

I looked down we were talking via Skype

Him : you know I can abduct him for few day and you work your charm on your wife and win her back the minute we let him go she will long be gone and in your arms "

Me ; what ... Fuck no .. "

Him : hay just think about it ... "

He had straight face on which means he was not bluffing well him and Mlondi did not get along from what Sbu told me and looks like it was more of personality thing they just so alike ...

Me : how's Sbu ... ?" I had to change the subject thinking about Sbahle just got me angry she so far and I have no clue what she thinks of me ... Will she even take me back if she does will she ever trust me a lot was going through my mind and driving me crazy I looked at Banzi on the screen He scratch his head " bad man really bad ... You need to speak to him bro "

Me : I don't know he said he don't want to see me or my Baby because we remind him of Pam .. I think his not yet moaning or grieving for Pam but pretty mad that she left him .. I saw whisky bottle shattered in pieces on Pam tombstone the last time I was there "

Him : what !"

Me : its like he fighting with her ..."

Him : no wonder Zoe hired a cleaning company she said the house was a mess when she got there "

I knock disturbed me it was my P.A

" sir you need to be in court in 15 min "

I nodded " look man thank you again for the pics and my wife's location ..I owe you one ... I need to go duty calls "

We said our goodbyes and I looked at the file he

gave me first thing I did was look at her pictures I  
ran my hands on my laptop screen  
" I miss you so much "  
" you so beautiful .. I'm so so sorry "  
I smiled wiping the tears on my eyes she looked  
so innocent and I fuck up and broke her heart  
There will never be a day that goes by that she  
won't run through my head. With every word  
that's said something about it reminds me of her  
my beautiful wife When I think about her last  
words I'll always feel like screaming "Don't leave!  
... I need you .. Don't do this to me ... To us " ill  
always remember her crying but I still chose  
another women over her it was selfish of me  
asking her to stay in such a situation I just wanted  
to have my bread butters on both sides not  
considering her feelings  
She watched me cry and and she still had  
everything in her to look me in the eyes and say  
you don't want this anymore. . . I was such a fool  
how can I allow Silindile to manipulate me like this  
after everything I have done for her she still had  
to take away the only thing that gave me joy yes I  
fucked her over but she allowed me to and when I  
said it over " its over " God damit

The fact that Sbahle left me everything inside of me was left broke. It's still hard to breathe. And it's all because of the person I love I'll hate to think that she don't miss me. Even if I do every second of the day .

I try to believe that maybe this is for the best that she let go of me maybe it would make her realize what she had. That maybe she needed to lose me for me to find her again. I know timing is important and maybe she ain't ready for me. I know for fact that She was my lesson that I need to spend all my days in this life showing her how much I love her ... Should she gives me me a second chance

.

.

To be continued ...3 months later

## Chapter 59

Sbahle \*\*\*

I wiped my hands and looked at it and It was the same as the one in my dreams It took a lot in me to paint and when I finally do I paint a picture that looks the same the one in my dreams I have no idea why but my hands started painting and I could not stop its been almost 24hrs in this basement and I finally finished ...

Mlondi : wow !"

He said behind me

Him : sisi you did this ?"

I rolled my hand and took his plate in his hand wow food I bite in his stake sandwich ..mmmmm it taste so good

He took a picture of it and talked about talking to guy who knows a guy and we can sell this

Me: mmm no "

Him : Sbahle this is good ... You need to show this to the world "

Me : its my first painting and I don't know its not even that good "

He looked at me as if I messed up my face

Him : let me be your manager and baby girl I will



take you places "

I laughed at him what does he know about being a manager in the first place

I laughed

Him : ooh by the way there is guy name Zuki ..zuls or something looking for you ? "

Me : ooh my God and you telling me this now ? "

Him : well ya ... "

Me : Mlondi !!"

I rushed upstairs well Zuko is the guy from the art gallery I went to with Mvelo on our last date ...

Yes it was anyway he was doing his other showcase in grahmtown art gallery mom took me there three months back when she was here and we bumped to each other well his been great help with getting me back in the game of art well I will not call him my friend but we hang out his showed me few tricks and lucky for him I learn fast

Him : sorry to come to your house announced ...

Your highness '

I looked at him

He chuckled

Him : I'm sorry Sbahle "

That's more like it

Me : what's bings you here ? ... I hope my brother did not give you a hard time "

He tried to hug me but stopped he knows how I feel about this hug shit

Mlondi : I did .. Who is this Zuli ..."

Me : its Zuko .. And I told you about him his art teacher " I call him that because I can actually say we friends we only meet in public places like parks Beach malls and museum and he teaches me few things and later on we grab something to eat and we part ways .. Well Didy calls what I'm going with Zuko going on dates but how would I know I have never been in date before I'm just an 18 who did not last a month in her marriage I only kissed one guy and only been with one guy being with Zuko its deferent his not close to being Mvelo not that I want him to be but his open outgoing and lot of fun

Mlondi : so art boy ufunani la ?"

Me : And what's in it for you... you know what don't answer that ...Zuko let me go fresh in up will be with you shortly and wena behave " I pointed at Mlondi I rushed to the bathroom took quick shower put on my denim dress and white kicks and fixed my hair took my slingbag my phone and

lip gloss yep I'm good to go  
and I was out I found Mlondi giving the poor guy  
an intimidating look ooh brother please  
Me : come let take a walk "  
He did not think twice but he was up on his feet  
Mlondi : you touch her I cut your hands "  
Me ; mlondi !"\_  
Zuko : is your brother always like that ? "\_  
Me : no .. You caught him in a good mood today "  
Him : what if that is his good mood ... I don't want  
to know what his bad or normal mood is like "  
We laughed  
Me : he just too overprotective ... But don't mind  
him ..so what brings you to this part of town "  
Him : was hoping we could check out the graffiti  
and maybe hand out in the beach some surfers  
decided to throw a beach party "  
Me ; what I never been to beach party "  
Him : come you will like it "  
I smiled well we walked there and o must say I  
love how colours infuse with each other in graffiti  
this mad skill no doubt  
Him : let me show you how easy it is "  
He took a can of spray and did his thing and  
looked like my name at the end

Me : wow "

Him : try it ... "

Me : noo I'm not in your league as yet "

Him : oh come on Sbahle live a little and try it "

I took spray paint shook a bit and wrote on top of Sbahle ' HLELO' \_ that the name me and Mvelo plan to give our first baby

Him ; and that?"

Me ; just a name ..." he nodded we walked to the beach and my mood was already sour now I wanted to go back home and cry ... I miss Mvelo so much and it does not help that everything I do reminds me of him

Well the beach was packed and its still chilly because we just got out of winter month but girls here are swaying what there mother gave them good Lord

Him : ooh come let's go sit over there that my causing the one I told you about that was having 21 first birthday "

I nodded and felt guilt because he invited me and i bluntly said No

I looked at him

Him ; I understand and trust me I'm over that "

He may sound assuring but he was pretty sad that

day "\_

Me : yes off cause .." Sbahle what did you just do you agreed to sit with a bunch of loud mouths ... Hello you hate crowds ... But how will I know I hate crowd if I don't try this experience ... I kept telling my self ... "

Well it looks like people came in couples here and this guy was holding my back now if I'm counting heads there were six people here

" ooh handkerchief girl is that you " I looked at guy and frowned

Him : don't tell me you forgot about me ... So guys remember when I told you that I meet this girl in this very same beach crying her eyes out and when i offer her my designer handkerchief she blew her nose in it and handed it back yo me and said ...wait for it " tank you " " they all bust out and laughed fuck small town people don't you just hate them everybody just knows every one

Zuko : wow really was that you ?"

He looked at me

Me : I had no use for it any more so back to the sender "

They all bust out and laughed ... There are really loud ... Zuko introduces me and I suck with names

and never paid any attention to them I'm rude like that so bite me I set down on what looked like a beach towel but decided to dust the sand of first "\_drink " asked a girl in purple braids ... Bold colour for her skin tone but hay I'm not hear to judge ..

Zuko : no Sbahle does not drink .."\_he gave me a can of coke ... Ooh boy really I will be burping till kingdom come I miss day when Mvelo surprised me with thick cocktail juice and the quite environment only our heartbeat will do the talking

Zuko : are you ok :

Me : yap "

Him : are you sure ?"

Me : yes " ... No I'm not sure about this but I feel like its the least I could do for him for the work he has put in into helping me connect with painting again ... So this is my thank you to him since hr refused I pay him funny that we have 7 mouths speaking all at once but my mind was on the man I can not be with They were laughing and joking around well if this what drunk teenagers do I rather stuff my face with food and watch Netflix in my room

Zuko : you sure you ok "

I nodded and smiled as he put his arms around my shoulder

Zuko is just those guy that never pay any attention to how he looks his mouth indicates that his a heavy smoker and his hair Jesus I don't want to go there his dirty look looks cool for most girl .. You know the Emtee kind of a look but he just not my type

Him : thanks for hanging out with me "

Me : I'm sorry for cutting your fun short but you know how my brother is like "

So after spending the long hours of my life with the loud crew I made Mloni my escape goat

Him : I know ... But thanks any way ... Breakfast tomorrow?....pleeeeeeese ? "

" I don't know "

Him : please Sbahle " he was tipsy and him being on my face was just annoying me now

Me ; ok kwl ... But I got to chose the place "

He hugged me ... Bloody heal ?

Him : thank you " and he kissed my cheek he winked at me and ran off what the fuck just happen ?

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

I came back to South Africa for damage control my plan was to come next month to do something special for Sbahle on her birthday month and try and to win her over but yet again Austin decided to hid the sex tape scandal news from me not just hide it from me but do nothing about it ... Come on we talking about the mother of my baby here if it wasn't for Menzi loud mouth I wouldn't have know so here I am in some where house beating the shit out of this mother fucker and he had the audacity to tell me his sorry

" you just massed up my shirt you asshole " \_

" I didn't know she was your baby mama i swear "

Me : you missing the point here " I gave him another blow I was mad I was really mad.

I knew there was something fishy when Koko told me that Sli left baby Zee and she was not in her right state of mind she asked me if i was the one responsible for her being pregnant again that was shocking new to me as well because I never touch Sli or even slept with her I may be everything but I respected my wife and went out the wrong way to help sli I was not going to cheat on my wife



with my baby mama never ! I respected Sli to much to make her the other women all i did was just try and help her to get back to the right path and I hopped by talking to her and therapy with her was going to do the trick but she was just far gone.

when I asked Austin about her he said he doesn't know but Menzi and his big mouth decided to send Me the sex tape and spill the beans about this guy I was fuming regardless that me and Sli are not together she is still the mother of my child and I will forever respect her she gave me a gift a life and she will always has a special space I'm my heart I know I am ass a Jack but I was brought up to know the true value of a women and that why that when ever I get into heated argument with a women I work away A woman should always be treated with respect. Under no circumstances should arguments escalate to a point where you're attacking and bringing her down. These acts of disrespect lack respect and can easily turn into emotional and physical abuse. No matter where an argument takes you you should practice self-control and openly communicate what's bothering you. Give her the same respect you'd

want If you're doing anything that compromises that than just walk away

Me : you made her pregnant ... You denied the baby ... And if that was not humiliating enough you spread her ass on the social media you know how much money I had to spend to remove that link from the media !!"

Mpilo : im truely sorry I did not know ..for one I'm going trough stuff I was not thinking and I was ...'

Me: Austin your hired this filth to work in my company..... My company!!! "

Mpilo popped his eyes out

" ooh yes mother fucker I'm the " Mnguni " on the Mnguni and associate ... That is on the wall of that building that my firm my name and you Just kissed your career goodbye "

Him : please sir I need this job ... "

He held my leg and kicked his face

Me: you should have thought about that before you scared my baby mama for life get this piece of shit out of my sight my guards took him I took off my shirt and made my way to the nearest tap to washy bloody hands

Me: what you connection with this Mpilo guy Austin ?"

Him : ah...aaah "

Me : so there is a connection ?'

Him : look Trey ... I did not know he was seeing Sli that was not what we agreed on ... So Mzamo ..."

Me : what the fuck ... I'm so fuck and tired of my family meddling in my business ... If its not my ancestors its Mzamo and koko.....I'm busy doing damage control now while I should be busy trying to fix things with my wife !!! ...and bona where are they now !!! "

I received a text from Banzi with Sbahle and some fuck boy

" looks like your girl is dating "

Me : what the fuck !!!" I threw my phone across the room

.

.

To be continued

## Chapter 60

Sbahle \*\*\*

I found Mlondi with sunny in the house there eyes were fixed on the laptop and as soon as I came walked in Mlondi they shut the lap top

Me: are you guys watching porn? "

Sunny : Something like that "

Mlondi : no !!"

They talked at the same time and I just laughed at them

Me : uphekile? "

I asked Mlondi and he looked at me funny and walked up to me and sniffed me

Him : you smell of weed "

Shit the loud crew were smoking it

Me : i wasn't smoking it '

Him : ooh yeh I know that ... But that high mother fucker took you out to where he smokes ...Sbahle come on ... What if something happened to you "

Me : like what when you got people following me around "

Him : ....

I kissed his cheek " goodnight "

Him : I'm still going to kill that high head ... "

Me : no you won't because you only try to kill people I'm in love with ... "

Him : people ? ... Dude you only in love that that Mnguni guy "

I looked at him

Me: what ? "

Him : I know you still do I'm not stopping you from dating or anything but try choosing guys that are in his leagues this art teacher is not a right fit for you "

Me : if I didn't know better I will say you liked Mvelo for me "

Him : what fuck no ... Why you twisting my words... "

Me : and for your information i was not dating Zuko he was just helped me with finding my long lost passion "

Him : ya what ever you have been out and about with this high head and trust me that called dating if you not interested in him just call it quite "

Me : I got you to do that for me ...what is that you do you roughen them up right "

Him : Sbahle don't act smart with me ..."

He called out

" goodnight sunny "

Sunny " Nkosazane " I got into my room and took my phone and texted Didy about today's event I wish I was her she is enjoying the varsity life and doing herself I don't know how she convinced her dad to continue doing fashion but she doing what she loves and she looks very happy I can say proudly now that she the only friend I have me and Zim hit rock bottom and I haven't heard from her in months and I just stop reaching out for her. Didy was laughing like crazy when I finished telling her about my outing tonight

Her : so you going to do breakfast with him? "

Me : nop Mloni will scare him off I know "

Her : you such a snob it was a beach party for crying out loud you were bound to sit on the sand and drink fuzzy drinks "

Me : ooh hell no ..."

Her : you my friend its true what they say princesses are not made there are born wena you so used to the finer things in life and no man will top Mvelo game " she is right

Me: last time i was at the beach it like the sea waves the sea breeze and the sand under my feet spoke the same language Mvelo walked next to me with his hands on his pocket and told me

about his life school and family he was in no rush and listened to me when I talked I stuffed my face with lot of junk food and he made fun of how my eye closed when I laugh

he will stop and move the hair from my face he was gentle with me and wanted to get to know me he complimented me on how beautiful I look and the smell of my perfume he paid extra attention to detail to my every move which made me fall for him I will never forget how he washed my feet and took off his T-shirt to wipe my feet with before putting my shoes on ... That my first date I enjoyed with a guy at the beach and I don't see no other guy topping it "

Her : will you take him back if tomorrow he will show up at your doorstep "

Me : I love him "

Her : i know that but would you ?"

Me : I don't know Didy ..."

Her : they say if you still holding on to someone like you still do chances are his holding on to you too just prepare yourself sweetheart because one of this day Mr Mnguni will come and claim what his "

.

.

Mvelo \*\*\*

" I'm sorry " \_ I was on a call with Sli this women is so stupid and I'm done cleaning up her mess she only know how to cry and say sorry

Me : you don't ow me no apologise you nothing to me Silindile ... You the most naive women I have ever known all you good at is running away when the tough get going did you think how this will affect Zithelo ..? \_ "

She was crying and did not answer

Me : don't get me wrong I did what I did for my child not for you you whoring around is non of my business but I don't want my child to be labeled as a daughter of whore that will scare her for years just know that I'm cutting all ties with you fix you self up and stay away from me and my baby "

" but Trey she's my daughter "

Me : you should have thought about that when you were sleeping with man who makes sex tapes in the very same house my daughter was sleeping under he is pervet "

I closed my eyes just thinking the worse what if Mpilo decided to hurt Zithelo...while Sli was fucked up passed out



I should have never trusted Silindile with my daughter the rage I have for this women eight now I'm just glad I'm not next to her because God know I would have lost it

Me : the problem with you is that you don't think you love the title of being a victims fuck mam I don't even know what I saw in you you disgusting Silindile "

She continued to cry

Me : I'm taking full custody of my daughter you will hear from my attorney "

Her : " please Trey no !"

Me : God gave you a second chance to be a mother hope you try and do that right ...Good bye Silindile "

I dropped the call and tossed it aside

Me putting Mpilo on the line had nothing to do with how I feel about Sli which I feel nothing for her but I have girl child what I saw made me hate being a man a women violated and spread out and showcase to the media is just sick to see that I thought about how this will affect Zee and my image the media will have put two and two together and found out that Silindile is my baby mama how was that going to look to my people

I'm multi milliner business man and any bad wrap can affect my business I'm linked to Sli vie my child but its best I cut those ties with her she has caused me nothing but trouble and headache I'm selfish for taking my daughter from her I don't give a shit how people will label me but from now on my family comes first . I looked Austin next to me he was busy holding on to his nose with a cloth filled with ice

I looked at him and clicked my tongue ...

The take over will brake Sli I know but that non of my business .. Its business she should have paid more attention to her business then whoring around

Beside that what we do the Mnguni logistic company buy out small company's and turn them to money making machines its not personal but just business she will get over it

Austin : did you have to punch me "

Me : did you have to lie to me ?"

I made my way to the pilot " how far are we on landing "

" 10 min tops " he said

Me : Good "

I called Zee and she answered she was very chatty

as always I need to find the best school for her the level intelligent in her scares me at times ...for her age its just not normal .

after talking Zee i buckle up we finally landed in Eastern cape .. Its time I took my wife back .

## Chapter 61

Mvelo

I just landed in eastern cape me and Austin we booked in some hotel . after taking a long disserving shower I dressed up in my ripped jeans rene lizard black and white T-shirt and white airforce Snickers

Austin : so what your plan ? "

Me : I don't have any "

He laughed at me as set down

Him : I doubt she is seeing that guy "

Me : I don't know man I hurt her pretty bad "

Him : you are a cute guy not to forgive look at how I just forgotten that you punch me few hours back "

Me : Austin can you focus please ...I need your help in this "

Him : ok ...ok so looking at Sbahle we know that she is a culture girl and value the man in her life ...so to get to her you need to apologize to Mlondi "

Me : what ?? fuck no ... He is going to bust my balls "

Him : he must trust you to take Sbahle back you are a good guy I know that Sbahle knows that but his brothers not so much "

Me: so what do I say to him "

Him : your intentions with her little sister "

I ran my hands on my face now how on earth am I suppose to do that ?"

Him : speak from the heart dude you an attorney and have never lost a case so you got convincing skills to your advantage"

Me : let me get going if I don't pic up my calls in the next hour just know that he has just killed me

.

He chuckled as I walked out we rented a car so here I was driving to there place a million thoughts were running trough my mind what do I say what do I do but I was not backing down I

wanted my wife back maybe Austin was right I need to gain trust from my in-laws for them to see how worthy I am to be there daughter husband a wise woman by me saying a wise woman I'm referring to Pam she told me that  
ing

" you need to honor your wife at all times she is bringing value to your life not the other way around never think by paying lobolo for her you own her but always thank your in-laws for giving you their most priceless jewelry " back then I had no clue what she meant by that but when looking at it now I fully understand The word honor means to show respect. It involves treating others with kindness and dignity. So here I am I just packed outside their yard debating in my head what will this guy do to me I'm nervous and I feel like peeing myself

" what the fuck are you doing here "

I swallow hard as the blood buffed guy stood in front of me eyeing me up and down Whether you are recently married and trying to set the right tone or have spent years working to win over your spouse's hand in marriage getting your in-laws to like you is the

most hardest thing ever. I have spend four days trying to speak with guy and every time he does the craziest thing ever the first day i came here he slammed the door on my face after shitting on me and swearing me like his life dependent on it I swallowed my pride and walked away I came back the next day he was washing his car with his hosepipe before I couldn't even open my mouth I was already wet from head to toe the 3rd time he pointed a gun on my face as if that was not enough he fired the gun missing my head with few inches " next time I won't miss " he told me I must stop testing him ...Build bridges of trust is not done in one day I just need to be persistent and annoy him to core till he finally gives in for him show interest on what I really have to say . so here I am its the fourth day and I'm holding my breath I'm glad that all of this humiliation I get from Mlondi Sbahle is not around to whiteness it Speaking of Sbahle I have never seen her at all its like she locks her self in that house whole day I don't want to think the worse that she is depressed but what if she is ? Austin : what your plan this time " he asked as he

walked in my room

Me : to get killed "

He bust out and laughed

Me : I wish he could just hear me out bro "

Him : by showing that you not giving up proves to him that you fight for what you want no matter how arrogant he is towards you he can see that "

Me : dahm I hate that guy "

Him : its not about him ... Put your mind back in the game don't get easily intimidated he is just a dog with no teeth now "

Me : I don't know bro "

Him : First of all you just need to win his respect by showing him respect you not fighting with him but just trying to Put in extra effort to regain his trust. Don't act like a victim here you the one that broke Sbahle heart

You have done something to threaten the trust between you and Sbahle and most specially her brothers who play the role of being her father they will always try by all means to protect there little sister so show Mlondi that you are trying to rebuild that trust . Keep in mind that this relationship may be for life. Being standoffish or dwelling on giving up will only leave you miserable

as well so make an effort to move forward and regain his trust " \_

Me : Mlondi is not budging"

Him : Truest me he is ...and he like the power he has over you " \_

I nodded after putting my wrist watch on I walked out

Him ' : just remember the easy part is getting Mlondi on your side the hard part is yet to come where you need to face Sbahle to regain her trust by apologizing for your stupidity that caused the break up asking her how you can make amends addressing the behaviors that compromised your relationship in the first place and assuring her how you can avoid similar problems in the future."

Me : I don't like you to much this days "

Him : its must last day in this fucked up place anyway make use of my advise "

I nodded and walked out while waiting for the elevator I was praying saying that God I know I have done you child wrong but just give me a second chance I almost fainted when the doors of the elevator opened my heart skipped a million beats and I thought I was going to pass out



Me : Mlondi "

He looked at me and frowned

Him: yah"

He pushed me aside and walked in front of me he stood by my door and i took out the excess card and opened

Him ; I don't have the whole day say what you need to say because I need you leave when you done " \_

Austin walked in and looked at us he greeted Mlondi who did not respond he turned and walked back to his room shit this is going to be tough

Him : khuluma ndoda " \_

Me : first of all I want to say I'm Sorry "

He chuckled

Me : I love you sister Mlondi and i know i wronged her I made her cry it hurt me more than it hurt her ...

Him : bull shit !! Love means you never having to say you're sorry ....is that the reason why you have been all up in my space you wanting to say sorry " \_

I looked him he was angry really angry

Me : look Love means a lot of things to a lot of

different people sure. But one thing nearly everyone knows about it is that it gives you more reason to apologize. Mistakes disagreements and transgressions happen all the time especially when two people are married and It's essential to apologize for mistake made I'm only doing this with you because Sabantu and my wife value culture...I'm sorry that you had to pick up her broken heart after I have shatters it in million pieces ...I'm sorry to brake the trust you had in me to protect and love her while I went and did the opposite "

Him : don't be smart with me Mnguni you were gone for what 10 months not even once you called her to apologizing she was broken you chose another women and left my sister like used tissue ..why now ?"

Me : I know that Sbahle would have not taken me back or even headed me out if I came when her wounds were still fresh "

Him : you wait till she ok and you come to turn her life upside down again "

Me : I love her !!"

Him : Yazi wena I shouldn't be here because Ngizokubulala for real ... When did you realize you

love her after or before that whore you call a baby mama did a sex tape with another man "

Me : I don't give a shit about that !!"

Him :....I should be making my fist do the talking because you talking shit ain't you the one that was going back and fourth to that women "

Me : it was not like that ! ... Mlondi I'm not here to talk about that women to you ...ngize Lana to tell you that I want my wife back !!!"

Him : you left her ....

and its making me more angry that she went trough that pain over and over again with you she loved you damit ... !"

Tension were rising he was shouting I was shouting

Me: look Mlondi i screwed up and — whether accidentally or on purpose fact remains i hurt the person i love. Hell even if i convinced myself that she is too good for me and I need to let her go I can't because believe it or not I'm in love with your sister too ... I know my flippant “I’m sorries” will not make everything o'right over night but I'm willing to take any blow to win her back so take your best shot !!!"

Him : what did you do ?" \_ actually what happen

because Sbahle just cries when I ask her "

He walked up to me and grabbed me by my T-shirt he looked me straight in the eye

Him : did you cheat on her ?"

He asked grinding his teeth

Me : no never !! " I pushed him off " I went about to doing the right thing the wrong way fuck I can kick myself right now "

I told him everything leaving out the part about my ancestor and demons

Me : I didn't tell her right away because I was afraid to. I didn't want to hurt her and I didn't want to lose our marriage. But eventually that guilt just eats away at me and i had no choice but to come clean. I love my wife and I told her that when I apologized but it didn't matter. The damage was done and the trust was broken. I've avoided compromising situations like that ever since so I kept my distance from my baby mama and my child . But apologizing for that life-altering fuck-up was easily the scariest most difficult thing I've ever had to do ... I just wish I was not a coward to let her walk out on me ...I just need her to give me one more chance "

He looked at me for a long time and he finally set

down

Him ; how do you plan on doing that "

I stood there like a wet dog and finally getherd enough courage to say " I need your help "

He laughed so hard

Him : I ain't doing shit uyezwa "\_

well that a first the talk went well he did not lay his hand on me its a good sign right so now let me try convincing him why I need him

.

.

Sbahle \*\*\*

I looked at my ringing phone and I frowned

Guys are sort of weird. This doesn't apply to all of them obviously so let's save the #notallmen for another time but many guys out there just go wild for you after you say you're not interested or put a distance between the relationship. As soon as you say that you don't really want to go out with them they suddenly decide you're the woman of their dreams and they just have to have you.

What does he think he is vele ? I'm not even close to being his type yes Zuko is a good guy but that all he will be to me Just another Good guy I have spend 5 day in my house working on my piece

Mlondi believes I'm hiding but I'm just not up to seeing the world and also avoiding on bumping into Zuko I rather stay indoors and focus on my paintings than pretend I like person when I clearly don't .

I finished my third sketch and im loving my work I had to used dark chalk for it to come alive I smiled looking at it my phone ringed again and I got really pissed

Me : Zuko !"

Him : wow !"

I sigh " sorry "

Him : did I perhaps do something wrong"

Me : no ...I'm just not feeling well "

Him : I figured that one out you not picking up my calls and I was worried i"

Me : I got flu and took some really heavy medication ..." I lied how I wish he can get the signs that he annoyed me now

Him : ooh I should come check up on you but you know your brother showed me flames last time I was there "

So the day that Zuko and we suppose to go for breakfast which was 5 days ago Mlondi welcome him in our house while he was busy polishing his

gun if that was not a warning to run I don't know what else could be since that day I have been avoiding him like a plague

Him :can I at least buy you lunch I can even come deliver it to your personally "

Me : No! I mean I don't know Zuko I don't want to piss my brother off "

Him : I know you not feeling well so it the least I could do ..."

.... I'm hungry no doubt

Me : maybe we can meet out "

Him : is that a yes I hear "

Me : we can meet in M & B in 15 min times "

Him : sure I'm already going there " the soon I cut ties with him the better this guy is way to forward I just agreed to this lunch to tell him that I'm not interested in him I hope he will not be one of those guys that don't know how to take rejection You've met one of those guys I mean we all have. A guy that genuinely believes he's a gift to women but he's so enamored with himself that there isn't exactly room for another person in the relationship. Telling him you're not interested in him makes him doubt himself his charm his appeal and the way he views himself. He just can't

have that... I hope his different because I can't deal with drama

I dropped the call minutes later and made my to my room took a quick bath I jumped into my skinny jean crop T-shirt and push in I looked at my wedding ring have not put this in my finger for three months now maybe this will show him that I'm still someone's wife. fuck now I need to drive to point God I'm dreading this

.  
.

Mvelo \*\*\*

Convincing Mlondi to help me was the most hardest thing I had to do we spend hours going back and fourth it was so tiring

Me : dude you forget that I'm talking about my wife here this is not about you ... Me talking to you right now is to show how much I respect you as her brother ... Can I just go and convince my wife that I will never hurt her she the one that need this sorry then you "

" you got an hour to talk to her you got food in this place ?" he said standing up and making his was to the kitchen

I smiled and took my car keys



Me : talk to Austin ... Thank you you won't regret this I promise "

Him : I know because you won't leave to tell your tail next time "

Me : thank you "

Him : you lucky because my sister loves your stupid ass "

That confirmed that I have chance with her

I ran out I was floating on a ball of nerves driving to Sbahle house I was not sure what I was going to say or do but I know when I see her face I will find my voice I was busy trying to change music on my phone that connected via Bluetooth to my stereo my head was buzzing with all sort of emotions when I looked up I saw a white vw polo pass by with loud music blasting Zonke - Viva I smiled thinking about Sbahle and like a dream she passed me by on the road singing along to her tunes she did not even notice me I felt time stop for second wow she more beautiful now she did not even notice me

well how can she when she does not even know that I'm even here i took the most unexpected U-turn almost causing an accident driving after her.

.

## Chapter 62

Sbahle

Have you ever felt like the person you least expect to see is just looking at you and waiting for you to turn around and say 'hi' today I saw a man that looks like my Mvelo I would say look like because I'm asking my self why would he be doing here I would have took time to look at him but the traffic light turned green and I speed off could it be him ? But how would he know where I am ? Yet again we talking about Mvelo here .

" are you ok Sbahle " he touched my arm and I smiled nodding

Lunch was really awkward he will talk and I will fake a smile and give him one word answer my mind was every where but with this man before me it kept on going back to what Diddy said :

One of this days I will find Mvelo on my door step what would I do

There is no day I have not think about that what will i say ? How will i react?...will i run to his arms? will I smack him? will I take him back ? Will I be able to walk away form the only man I ever told I love you too.

I looked at the man before me who has gave me another reason to smile I have started to miss Mvelo less let's just say some other days are better then others.

I'm simply living my life ...doing things i love and just not look forward to Mvelo's return of which I doubt that will ever happen you know life is less stressful

when you do other things then just crying and sinking into to depression this days i just got lost in the time ...i forget the time ..cos I'm in the moment ...so time flies without warring about what tomorrow will bring .

My brake up was hard and I keep asking myself what's the use of holding on to the love that is Gone but inhliziyo ayiphakelwa

I shook my head trying to brush off could have would have thought because there were not getting me any where .

Zuko : and that look?"

Me : did I ever thank you for allowing me to see what was missing in my life "

I ignored his question and changed the subject

Him : all the time princess ...all the time "

He chuckled and I hit his shoulder

Me : I keep telling you that stop calling me that "

Him : its you tittle njenake " damn no matter how hard I try to block Mvelo from my mind people will always say stuff to remind me of him I looked down and looked at my ring

Me : it was " I bit my lower lip

Zuku : wow you wearing your ring ?" He sounds disappointed

I looked at him and at my ring

Me : ya " I shrunk my shoulders as he frowned

Zuko : I don't understand "

I set back and looked at him

Me : why ?"

Him : maybe I read what we have the wrong way "

I looked at him waiting for him to go into details

Him : the months I spend with you I have

Look pass you status and I really like what I saw I know our relationship was just based in love of art but I have developed some genuine feeling for you "

Me : feelings ??"

Him : yes romantic feelings for you "

Me : I'm married Zuko !"

Him : Sbahle come on you have been leaving here for almost a year there has not been a sign of your

husband which clearly indicates that you no longer in a relationship with him "

Me : wow what will give you that idea ?"

I have never confided in no one about my fall out relationship with Mvelo besides Didy the nerve of this guy to think he has figured me out so what if Mvelo broke my heart that will not change the fact that I still love him." Yeh i know its a bit

embarrassing and confusing but it is what it is

Everyone around me is most likely telling me that loving a man who hurt you that much is foolish.

They think i should just forget about him and

move on the nerve of this guy to think he has figured me out so what if Mvelo broke my heart that will not change the fact that I still love him."

Yeh i know its a bit embarrassing and confusing but it is what it is

Everyone around me is most likely telling me that loving a man who hurt you that much is foolish.

They think i should just forget about him and

move on right? I'm sorry but i don't know how to do that. It's no wonder. Love isn't something you can just turn off like a water faucet. He's my guy and everyone makes mistakes i know deep inside my heart that he didn't mean to hurt me as much

as he did.

So people must not think they untitled to be with me I still have hope of Getting him back and getting past the issues that tore us apart if it will be possible i just have to know how to get from here to there... But only God knows my fate with him .

Me : look what ever you have concluded to about my relationship and my husband its not true ...I'm still much in love with him and I'm sorry if I lead you on or gave you the wrong idea about our friendship " \_

Him : don't tell me you don't feel what I feel for you "

Me : Zuko this conversation is becoming very inappropriate now ...maybe I should leave "

Him : Sbahle please ...." He held my hand

Him : just because you still in love with him doesn't mean you should stay in loveless relationship

It's not easy to forget someone whom you once loved I know that It takes lot of time. Weeks months or even years. All you have to do is be patient. Look I'm not rushing you to fall in love with me all I'm asking is for you to give me a

chance " \_

I shook my head no

" wow this is cozy "

I looked at the ghost of man standing by our table

I pulled my hand away from Zuko my heart was beating out of my throat

Mvelo : hello beautiful " I looked at him he was mad his hair was let loose and he looked to casual and thug like today

Mvelo : may I sit please so that you will introduce me to your friend "

I scoot over and made space for him seconds later his tongue was down my throat

Him : I missed you " \_he said pulling out and kissing my nose I was still coming back from the high of that intense kiss

Mvelo : so who are you ? "

I felt so small under his arm he smell good and my body reacted some kind of a way to his touch

Zuko chuckled and shook his head

he seat back and folded his arms

Zuko : just an ordinary guy who saw a lowly beautiful girl in need of my company "

I shoot my eyes open at Zuko how could he talk about as if I'm some sort of his damsel in distress

Mvelo : lonely you say ? So this ring on her hand was just a decoration "

Zuko : well we have been going out for months and its only today she decided to decorate her hand "

Me : Zuko !"

Mvelo: ooh is that so Mkami ?"

Me :Mvelo ..."

Him : shuuuu my love will talk home when I'm on top of you right now let the man talk " he kissed me and looked at Zuko who looked like a mad dog now

Him :now I understand that sad story in your eyes not all man are like him Sbahle you got married when you were very young its a such a pity you chose him ... "

I tried standing up but Mvelo held me down I tried to open my mouth and he gave me that look made me submissive towards him I looked down

Mvelo : wow that cliché pick up line don't you think ? so you can't get my wife and now you blaming me for your failed attempt ?"

Zuko stood up I don't know when or how but Mvelo punched him and he fell back down his seat it was in a speed of lighting I help my mouth



eyes were on us now What is Mvelo doing

Mvelo : I'm still talking ... Now let's talk about why you making moves on my wife while you know pretty well that she is married to me "

Zuko mouth was bleeding he tried to narrow his eyebrows but Mvelo said" nciiii.... Cu ....cu ... Don't start something you won't finish ... We talking now "

Me : Mvelo ...please you making a Seen can we go please "

Zuko : let him make seen let's see how perfect is this king is now ... "

Mvelo : scream all you like and tell the whole world I really do not give a shit ... As long as you will tell me why do you have guts to hold hands of royalty"

Zuko : I don't ow you any explanation "

Mvelo : in that case might as well say your peace to my wife it will be least you could do that why you have this lunch right... To tell her how you can male her bed rock "

Me : Mvelo!"

Mvelo :Don't Mvelo me you going on dates with boy that below your standard we might as well stood to there level! "

Mvelo just undermined Zuko and that alone  
pissed me off

Zuko : I'm no king no milliner not perfect at all but  
should have gotten a chance to be with her i  
would have been twice the man you are to her "

Me : what ? ..."

Mvelo grabbed on to my thigh he was mad I kep  
on rubbing his hand under the table held my hand  
squeezed it in fact

.."

Zuko : so when the going get tough and you sick  
and tired of playing the role of his Queen you  
know my number ...my shoulder is always there  
for you to cry..."

He did not allow him to finish boom another  
punch ...

Him : if I see you even smell you close to her ...  
You better run because I love to chase and when I  
find you your family will find you in pieces !"

I was not sure if he unconscious or what he was  
just laying there lifeless

Me : ooh my God his not moving "

Mvelo dragged me by my hand

" wake him up with ice cold water " he said to the  
manager as we walked out

He literally shoved me in his car no word were said until a door of his hotel room was shut closed it was so loud I thought it was going brake down he was walking up and down not even looking at me

Him : what the fuck was that Sbahle !! "

.  
.

To be continued

## Chapter 63

Sbahle \*\*\*

" what gotten in to out ?"

I placed my hands on my waist and looked up at him

Him : so you blaming me?"

Me : you punched a guy and left him there what if his unconscious or a concussion or something? "

He laughed

Him : so you worried about that guy did you hear what shit he said about me about you ??"

I huffed and walked away from him I need water

Him : you going around talking about what happening in our relationship now "

I ignored him he was spitting fire I can not speak to him when his like this

Him : Sbahle you walking around showcasing that you single by not wearing your ring ... You fuckin married women "

He banged the kitchen counter making me drop my water bottle

Him : are you forgetting that you are Mnguni ? ... That your family gave you away to me "

He was banging on his chest

Him : I give you time to cool off and I found you in the arms of another man ... Damit Sbahle ... Didn't I mean anything to you ? "

Me ; this is not about you Mvelo your behaviour was out of line .... I'm your women you talk to me no going around attacking people that have showed interest in me"

Him : out of line ... You entertaining other guys is something I just need to be ok with "

Me : you bloody left me ... You chose her over me ... So what was i suppose to do Wait for you till when ?"

Him : you my wife Sbahle !!"

Me : when it suits you I'm tired Mvelo you coming in and out of my life like you own me the shit you did there was barbaric and stupid did you think before your hands landed on his face he may press charges against you and this alone will taint not only my name your bloody name as well "

Him : I don't give a shit about that ... I will kill for you Sbahle yezwa ... That how crazy my love is for you nothing on this world matters uyezwa ?" \_

His eyes were red he was scaring me

Him : so what the bloody hell were you doing with him !!' \_

Ooh my god I have never seen Mvelo this mad

Me : we meet few months back and his been helping with my art project that I'm currently doing '

Him : are you in love with him ?"

Me : stop yelling at me !!"

Him : just answer me !!!" He roared

Me : NO!!... No I'm not ! " my voice was braking I sank down on the coach

He turned the air corn on and rested his head on the wall before turning to face me

I recognized this face now but I was just to emotional to look at him Mvelo never raised his

voice at me never and today I saw the animal in him resurfacing and I did not like it he set on the coffee table facing me I just placed my hands on my face

Me:. That guy you almost killed was there for me during the hardest time in my life ... Wena ubukuphi ?... "

I felt his eyes burning my skin i looked at him

Him : the last thing I need is to hear you talking about him right now "

I was really getting mad Mvelo is more worried about Zuko instead of talking about what is his doing here

Me : ufunani LA "

Him : I came for you ...Sbahle I miss you my life is empty without you i can not turn back the hands of time and change how I acted back then but the thought of another man holding you making you smile drove me crazy I can never live with that " \_

Me : you don't get to be crazy when you the one that did not see my worth '

Him : baby I made a mistake I was sure what I was doing was right then but looking at it now i did not consider your feeling in all of this "

Me : I told you about this I cried for you not to

leave me but you decided to leave me so you can try and fix her ... Leaving me broken " he tried holding my hand but I pulled away from his grip and

walked past him I was mad but not as how sad i was feeling. Its like

My sadness and I are now good friends. So are me and anger. And grief and joy and all of them. My emotions are all welcome at my proverbial dinner table... and I couldn't be happier about it all because its because of him i can't selectively numb my feelings when it comes to him If I try and put a lid on my sadness or grief then it will also mean I'm also putting a ceiling on my ability to feel joy I look at him and I feel like running to him and saying all is forgotten but I'm scared to be burn by him again I just got my life back on track and he makes his grand entrance disregarding on what happened between us why I'm here and why was he there ? why now ? Why is he claiming and confusing his feeling for me Him : you were hurting and seeing me would have made you hate me if I came back for you then ... Sbahle baby listen I'm an ass a big one in fact I made lot of foolish mistakes but the biggest one

was allowing your brother to take you away from me "

Me : I here you talking not once have I heard you say you sorry for being dishonest with me for weeks Mvelo you went out there and did something on the side with her you broke me and when I'm finally restore you come back to tell me that you want me back "

Him : baby I never touch Silindile I swear on my sister grave I realized that hell come may if I lost you what the point of helping a person who was not willing to be helped I move back to UK I leaked my wounds and told my self when time is right I will come back for you "

Me : I can not allow you to brake me again love is not suppose to hurt like this Mvelo if this is how you love then I don't need your love "

Him :please don't say that Hle-hle ngiyaxolisa Sithandwa sami ... Please don't leave me again my heart can't take that .. please tell me what to do to fix us I will do it "

Me ; Let me explain to you what it feels like to be told you are perfect in every way and will always be taken care of. Let me convey the emotions that rip through a young woman like myself when she



is convinced she is someone's forever. Let me express the hope and loyalty that is instilled inside of a girl who built up wall after wall only to feel as though they were peacefully torn down by a man who pulled her deeply into his love. I cannot formulate those emotions into words the same way I cannot describe the way it felt to have you rip that all to pieces."

I felt him touch my shoulders he pulled me to place my head on his chest hugging me from behind has always made me have that feeling that his hot my back but after what happens how do I trust him

Him : I love you Sbahle only you complete me "

Me : want you to know that I loved you I most probably still do . I loved you through every emotional part of the roller coaster you have brought into my life. I loved you on the days that you were pleasant and kind and also the days you were unrecognizable to me. I loved you through changing circumstance and the rapid movement of time. I even loved you when you decided that you didn't love me anymore. I think a part of me still loves you while I sit here in the darkness face hot with tears and disillusionment. But what I

want you to know most is that I still love myself  
and I don't trust you with my heart any more "

He turned me around to look at him he was crying  
not wailing but the tears were gushing out  
uncontrollable I have seen Mvelo cry twice ever  
since I meet him he cried when we found out  
about Pam's passing and the night when I told him  
I'm leaving him and this is the third time

Having been raised in a society where I have been  
taught from a young age that simply: girls cry  
Having been raised in a society where I have been  
taught from a young age that simply: girls cry and  
boys don't. At first I haven't quite known how to  
be there for him in those moments. It's heart  
breaking. I have always felt deeply and had big  
emotions which I have definitely sub-consciously  
associated with being a woman To see my partner  
break down and cry has always been a reminder  
that he feels just as deep as I do the Compassion  
Beauty Love An almost instant removal of all story  
past present future ..an instant removal of any  
barriers or blockages I had been holding over my  
heart ... an instant removal of talking or needing  
to prove or judging ... it was replaced by softening  
of my heart that beat in one with his

Him : you are my world and I don't know if I will survive without you by my side I wronged you Sbahle not once not twice but many times but still at the end I chose you no you chose me you never left my side you were a mother to my kids a wife in my house a friend a Queen and my adviser you have turned me into a man a softy and today I realized that I can even kill for you ... Baby you have turned me a husband a father a head of the family and a grate king All I'm asking is for you to give me a chance to love you without the title of my Land or me being a father to Zithelo I want to spend time to connect with you as man and women where only us exist and to show you how much you mean to me ...I love you Mabhengu and when you hurt I hurt too that how deep our love is "

My wish is to close this space between us i want to feel his arms around me im crying his crying his wiping my tears I'm doing that to him to He talking real dip shit that's allowing our souls to connect.

To show my partner it is safe for him to express the depths of his sadness when it needs to come out i pull him to a hug In no way does he appear

“less of a man” or weak to me right now its showing me that not only does he trust me with his heart but that he also trusts in himself as a man to show his emotions. Men who break free of their conditioning to not cry are the furthest thing from weak they are courageous.

Him : please say something " shit I should be angry but I feel like he has taken that from me with his teas

Him : I'm truly sorry please allow me to love you allow me to make you happy give me chance to prove to you that I'm still the mam you fell in love with ..."

I nodded I found his lips on mine and he took me to the first time he taught me how to kiss

Him : I miss you so much "

I smiled as I pulled him with his hair to deepen the kiss I don't know how but i found my self on his bed my heat was beating out of my throat now I have heard of stories about make up sex my mind wonder if we about to do this now why does my head always scream sex when his on top of me

Him: hay ...I rather stop what I'm doing if you going to continue in having a conversations in your head instead of being here with me "

His eyes were half opened he was only in his jeans so was I ok what happened to our tops

Him : relax ... Dahm I missed you so much " he flipped me over i was on top of him he Pull me to his lips while we kiss he kissed me so tenderly. I felt my blood heating up I love the way his lips mold perfectly with mine. He thread his fingers into my hair and pull me closer to him. He set up straight with me sitting on top of his beast that was making my lady parts dance to it beat

Him : i want to kiss you and I want to hold you tight and never ever let you go trough out the days of my life "

How do I even begin to express these feelings that I have in my heart for him right now he trail his lips down my jaw and over my neck.

Me : ummmm"

Him : will you mess up my bed with me tonight " he whisper in my ear i didn't know what he meat by that I was far gone with what his hands were doing to my nipples that my moans were getting louder

That will leave a mark oh God his sucking and licking and driving me crazy

Him : I want to worship how perfect you are. I'll

help you slide out jeans so i can get to kiss your inner thighs"

His too talkative today God just take them off I just want to feel his skin on mine he stopped and looked at me

Him: Hle -hle I will be damned if you thinking about another guy in my bed " ok when did we switch position

Me : babe just take my jeans off you the only man on my mind always " he smiled

.  
.

To be continued

## **Chapter 64**

Sbahle \*\*\*

Me and Mvelo never got too close like we are today i blame it on the fact that we basically lived in a family house there is just too much going on in Royal house the house is always busy the maids the kids His grandmother his uncle endless visitor's yoo its like a zoo and no privacy at all. Any way besides that he has not been mentally

emotionally stable himself a lot was going in his life the day I married him there was death in the family we all had to grieving after that there was baby mama drama where we just slept on the same bed facing opposite direction after that it was his calling work and fuck up part is that we live in the Royal house royal duties needed his attention I on the other hand just took the role of being a housewife looking out for everyone that I sometime forgot that his my husband and he needed me more .

But today we we all alone and we had no one but our self was I ready for sex ? no ... But I love him and I want my first time to be with him

Him : are you sure this is your size " he struggled getting my jeans off I'm a curvy girl and the struggle is real putting this jeans on even worse when taking them off.

Within the next few minutes I was lying on his bed with only my red sport bra matching boy leg panty he looked at me for the longest time like a long time before saying

" damn you hot and sexy " I blushed and held my face he made his way on top of me He kept the same pace from earlier slowly almost teasing like

there was no rush his fingertips tracing my skin from my neck to my breasts to my hipbones raising a winding trail of goosebumps on each newly exposed swath of flesh. I was comfortable enough to look at him strip and was left with his Ck underwear but hesitated to keep going

He murmured nonsense words to me calmed my nerves and had me lie back while he started to kiss a steady path from my ankles upwards. He lingered on my calves nuzzled my inner thighs planted open-mouthed kisses on my belly to the fabric covering my nipples

Him : I'm going to take this off ok "

Like a lost puppy I nodded he is such an expert in this because while he was still kissing me his other hand massaging my hair his one had had manage to unbuckle my bra and take it off again he looked at my small pocky Brest I'm just a size 34b he enjoy cupping them on his hands he will let out growl sound Slowly he moved down my body kissing me everywhere my neck my breasts my stomach. He was dangerously close to my lady parts when I stopped him.

Me : 'What are you doing?' I asked.

Him : 'Trust me and relax'



was all he replied careful not to spook me too quickly or suddenly. He hovered over mouthing me through the fabric yes Sbahle relax I told myself but That was so difficult to do with him down there!

Him : babe may I take them off ? "

My mind was screaming no you just got back with him today but the whore in me was saying his so hot you can't stay a virgin forever I guess I nodded because he was gently removing it i was completely naked! There was no time to feel shy about it because of all the action that was happening.

He slowly parted my legs and i held my breath He kissed my inner thighs and as soon as he did that I started giggling and squirming uncontrollably. Oh did I mention that I'm extremely ticklish?

Him : Why are you moving so much? Stay still!" ' he ordered.

Me : 'I can't it tickles! Stop baby please?' I said breathlessly. He looked at me and side smile 'him : This is going to be fun "he laughed and kissed me on the stomach. What happened next was in a word crazy! He held me down with a

hand on my stomach and the next thing I felt was his lips...right there in that place of what my underwear was hiding he looked at me for a while before his hot breath hit on my clit his hands trace my vj and I flinch as he try to enter it

Him : good girl you waited "

I set up straight to look at him I was about to give him a piss of my mind his wet lip and tongue played there it felt like he was writing the alphabet with his tongue. And it worked because I finally reached the Big O. it felt like a bunch of little bombs were going off down there..

Me : ooh my God !!!!!" he placed his lips over my clit and licked because I finally reached the Big O. it felt like a bunch of little bombs were going off down there..

Me : ooh my God !!!!!" he placed his lips over my clit and licked I jerked at that first extraordinary sensation of having someone go down on me the heat the wetness the physical rush that comes from watching someone want you this much and the utter shock that this was happening at all.

Me: Mvelo ...what are you doing to mmmmmme e. Haaaa?!"

Him : you taste so Good '

I grabbing onto his hair my eyes squeezed shut.

Me :ooooooh Mvelo... Please I need to pee "

Him : yes come for me "

His finger and lip were playing a piano on my Nana ... I felt like crying I felt this wave coming and I was screaming like crazy he was not having mercy on me

oh my God the sensation was out of the world!

His mouth was doing things that were making me feel weak in the knees. Within minutes I was over the edge! I felt like I need to pee until one big glorious one set off.

Him : come for me hle- hle ' his voice alone was just making me scream and moan didn't know what to do with my self It feels like I'm in a roller coaster and I'm finally at the top and then that feeling of stomach drop.

Him : come for me ....let it go ..."

And just like a waterfall bursting over a cliff I screamed letting go this intense pressure i eventually released it and it feels so incredible This smooth release It feels like a cleansing almost like the warm feeling I get after taking a few deep breaths

When I came back down he was looking at me

smiling. Since it was my first orgasm ever I did not know what to expect or that it would be so damn good!

Him : hi!" He kissed me and I tasted my juices in his lips he did not initiate sex but just looked at me with that smile on his face my mind came back to it seances I'm really wet down there

Me : I'm so wet "

Him : i just made you Squirt"

Me : you made me do what ? "

Him : well my love squirting is Otherwise known as female ejaculate it's the liquid that sometimes comes out of your body during and/or post-orgasm. For some women it may happen every time they experience an O—but for others it may never happen at all. So I mustered to touch you G-Spot and you my love have made me the the happiest man in the world"

Me : by wetting myself ? "

Him : trust me a handful of mam can muster this ability "

Me : what are you trying to say about your sex life "

He ran his hands on his hair

Him : aah ... I love you ... And nop im not going to

talk about that with you " i frowned  
He kissed me again and stood up " I'll run you a  
bath " while he disappeared to the bathroom I  
jumped off the bed took his gown and put it on I  
then looked at the bed it was wet I held my  
mouth I felt Mvelo hugged me from behind  
Him : its normal babe stop stressing woza so geza  
"

Me : we ?"

Him : just come we saving water " he held my  
hand and it was just a bubble bath prepared he  
took of his briefs I gasped as he laughed he  
jumped into the tub

Him : woza " I was afraid of the anaconda under  
water

Him : Sbahle I'm not going to make love to you  
tonight "

Me : you won't ?" I frowned

Him : just get in the water women " \_

We didn't do anything else I just set in between  
his legs in the bathtub as he ran his a sponge on  
my body it felt so good it was my first time with  
him naked and his penis scared the shit out of me  
when I asked him when we having sex

Him : if I have sex with you you might end up in

hospital so the right word is making love ... " ooh well he still want to treat me like an egg we catches up about our 9 months apart i told him what I was doing over the 9 months of separation he told me about work and his knee that Mloni busted

Me : why you didn't fight him back "

Him : his my brother in-law so by me taking the blows and not fighting back was a sign of respect I have for you and your family "

he kissed my cheek

Me : I'm sorry "

Him : don't stress about it I needed a wake up call any way "

We left the tub when the water was getting cold

Him : you spending the night ?"

I nodded he hugged me and we called Mloni told him that I'm with Mvelo and spending the night I also told him that I left his car at m&b he told me he will send someone to fetch it we moved to the other bedroom Mvelo said Austin was using it and left today for work we ordered food and ate over mouth full conversations

Mvelo makes me laugh so much and I love the fact that his not trying so hard to win me over you

know when you know that I'm his person and his mine we just picked up from where we left off we just locked ourself on our bubble and the things he does to my body father lord .

night came so fast we cuddle in bed talked till he fell I asleep his body heat was making me sweat on the covers so I didn't get much sleep. When the sun came up I woke up in the arms of the most hottest man I have ever seen he looked so cute that I just looked at him with his perfect beard pink lips perfect bone structure his complexion.. this right here is Gods good creation I kissed him and he pulled me close to him

Me : I need to we we "

Him; you spend and hour looking at me and its only now you realize you need to use the bathroom "

Me : what ? "

he kissed my forehead .." Mmm I see you "

I laughed untangle my self from him and made my way to the bathroom I stopped and looked at my self in the mirror and smiled reliving yesterday event a tear dropped from my eyes I just cried my first tears of Joy

.To be continued\*

## Chapter 65

Few days later

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

Me and Mvelo are going strong the love we share is magical the things he said to me the pillow talk the future we plan ooh god I love this man to be honest we never left the room ever since I got here and we never got bored with each other its like we relighting the old flame of our relationship and ooh God it feels so good he has gone down on me numerous time and every time I lose myself in it if his lips can give me such pleasure I wonder what will the real thing will do to me this morning we took a shower for the first time together I'm a ball of Nevers his tall I'm shot his buffed up big I'm just tiny he is kissing me driving me crazy as our naked body collide together he run the shower jell on my body and massaged it ooh Lord his taking his time with me and I'm loving every moment he washed my body and I washed his his hard his veins are popping his shaf this right here is the real BBC ( big black cock)  
Me : may I touch you ". I had to ask he side smile



he took my hand and instructed me to move it up and down he made me feel his balls this was my first time touching him I like what see his reaction to my touch was priceless

Him :aaaah ...." He moaned I guess I'm doing it right Oral sex is an integral part of our sexual life right now Mvelo is a sexually active persons I need to please him the best way I can I know he enjoy giving oral pleasure and to be honest i enjoy receiving it But he told me its not an obligation to give it to him but his my partner and the way he acting right now I'm enjoying it his pulling my hair his roughly kissing me his moaning very loud till he stopped

Him : I need for you to scream my name "  
he kissed my hips and asked if he could go down on me how can i say no to that he slid to his knees Never thought that he meant it literally scream fuck his good the neighbors must really know his name now I was screaming with both of my legs in the air his face buried on my Nana is he trying to kill me and I had the pleasure of watching him suck on the hood of my clit and look at him giving himself a hand job as the water drenched him he looked so sexy He watched me back we

connected in the most sensual way I have ever know I'm no expert in sex and I don't know what I need to do with his gigantic dick but looking at him go I'm saving to do that to him next time

Him : fuck baby yes ! "

Me : ooh my God Mvelo... Ooh ...." we finally climaxed the same time

I collapsed down he was breathing heavily so was I this was amazing

Him: fuck my kids " he said cleaning himself up and cleaning me too

Me : I still think you won't fit.... " my legs were open and he was still kneeling between my legs

Him : I will ask you when I'm inside of you to repeat those words " he kissed me picked me up bridal style and placed me on our bed he gave me one of his T-shirt

Him : you hungry ?" I nodded he took his phone and ordered in

He asked jumping on his sweat pants I was only on his T-shirt and underwear he climb to the bed and looked at me

Him : I miss you're cooking " I smiled

Me : you hair is wet " I took a towel and dried it

Him :i need to go back to the UK"

I dropped a smile

Him : sengenzi "

Me : you leaving me again !!"

Him : Sbahle !"

I looked down " I'm sorry "

Him : I told you you must come with me ... Course I'm not leaving you in this place with fuck boy around "

Me : can you just trust me please I got my art project that I'm already doing "

Him : Sbahle "

Me ; it not cool that I need to leave my life to follow you "

He turned around and looked at me " Sibahle Ntombikayise Bhengu ...Ngiyindoda yakho

...where I go you go and you know damn well that if the table were turned I would have done the same for you ngikhoma I will support your career your art but I can not do that while we miles apart

" I pulled me to his arms

I nodded as he placed his forehead on mine his phone ringed it was written Koko he took it kissed my lips and answers

" phofukazi " he chuckled

...

Him: I understand "

...

Him : tomorrow I promised "

...

Him : I'm sorry ...ok... " he looked at me and smiled " I will tell her ... Bye koko ..."

The day was spend lazing around he didn't want to go out I didn't want too as well we watched a movie talked about us leaving here the idea look ok and I'm too clingy on him to let him go on his own he was on his phone and I was watching TV as much as I want to focus I couldn't with his hands on my Brest It was sending a massage to my Vj and I hated the feeling of it twitching like that

Me : are you intentionally making me horny "

Him : I can't keep my hands away from you sorry ...am I making you feel uncomfortable "

I shook my head and he smiled

I have read some where that man love it when women go down on them so here we are right now I'm on his T-shirt and he seating next to me with only his sweat pants on my head on his lap i look at him and his hands brush my exposed

thighs while his other hand was on his phone "  
work " I presumed

Me : Mnguni "

Him : mmmm"

Ok how do I say this without looking immature

Me : you know that I love you right "

He dropped his eyes and looked at me and kissing  
my lips in the process

Him : I know Sthandwa sami "

I bit my lip

Me : you know how you take me to cloud night  
when you pleasure me "

He raised his left eyebrow

Him : where you going with this "

By this time his hand was already rubbing on my  
lady parts and I was loosing focus so I decided to  
sit on top of him i wrapped my hands around his  
neck and looked at him in the eye

Him : you so beautiful "

Me : I want to do the same to you "

We spoke at the same time

Him : what !!!"

Me : I want to pleasure you ..."

He laughed " how ?"

Me : well I read somewhere that guys enjoy it

when girls go down on them you know like you do to me "

He laughed and shook his head

Him : No Sbahle ... Wait who taught you to do that ?"

His face change yooo the Zuko thing is driving him crazy his jealousy is on steroids right now

Me : Mvelo you my first in everything I don't know how to do it "

He breath out loud yoo this man of mine

Me : look you will teach me I just want to make you feel something "

Him : but Sthandwa sami you made me come this morning " he kissed my nosw

Me : Mvelo come on ... You stopped me this morning when i touching you I'm not sure if was doing it right or wrong you pleased yourself and made your self come " I frowned why we evin going back forth with this why is he not jumping to the opportunity that I want him

" hay ...China is not built in one day ..let me take my time with you " he said giving me a baby kiss ... Seriously baby kiss Mvelo

Me : is it because I'm still a virgin that why you treating me like this ?"

Him : now you acting crazy ... You know that there is more to us then just sex Sbahle why rush perfection "

Me : for how long do I need to wait you my partner Mvelo and we need to do this things I'm uni experience and I need you to teach me stuff "

He grabbed on my Ass tight " what's up with you with wanting sex so bad "

Me : because I don't want you wanting it some where else "

Hallo have you seen yourself women are drooling over you

Him : baby ever since I meet you I haven't has sex with no one its been 12months already ... Have you seen how hot you are I can't even look at another women and feel something ... Let me take my time with you please ..."

Me : but I'm ready " I looked down

Him : I'm not "

Me : stop it ok ... You get a boner just by looking at me even now you hard ... Why you saving me "

Him : ooh my God i created a Freak "

He placed his face on my chest

Me : so teach me ke ... I want to taste you as well "

Him : baby please stop this topic is driving me crazy "

Me : but I want you Mnguni ...I'm horny and I'm wet "

I swallowed hard as I felt him grow so big under me

Him : I love you and I want you first time to be special you my Queen and I want to create memories with you so go get dresses we going out because you fuckin turning me on now!"\_

I pouted he tried lifting me up from him but I just placed my head on his chest clingy tendencies right there its so crazy how I never want to let him go

Him : come on babe "

don't ask me why It just seemed to happen that way I kissed him and he moaned in my mouth he was holding me to tight ...

.  
.

Mvelo \*\*\*

Im so hard like mad hard Sbahle is not backing down what have i created I wish I did not introduce her to oral because the past two day she has been a on me like a dog on heat if she



continues this way she might ruin my plans yes I'm saving her for a purpose and its damn hard because she is now comfortable with walking around me with nothing on.

trust me every man loves to have a wife that is lady in the street and a Freak in the bedroom Sbahle just completed me and I can't Waite when I finally make her a women the things I'm going to do to her she will wish that she was never this forward about having sex I understand she is horny now and its all my fault because I could not keep my hands off her

she is on top of me right now and I wanted to explode I knew if I act now I will hurt her I thank my fathers gins for making me gifted down town I stood up she tangle her legs across me I'm sure I got a million love bites on my skin now I moved to our bedroom and started tickling her she got off me like a lightning

Her : are you crazy " she was a laughing mass

Me : get dressed we need to go " I ran out and closed the door looked at my boner and cursed " damit you Sbahle "

I took my phone and called Mlondi

Me : what up ? "

Him : its taken care of "

Me : what did you do ?"

Him : stop asking me shit you told me to handle Zuko so I did "

I nodded Mlonzi is a hard core criminal and having him as my brother in law is good but yet crazy and scary "

Him : when are you leaving "

Me : tonight ..."

Him: I guess I'll see you there "

Me : ya sure " I dropped the call and dialled Zoe

Me: how is everything going? "

Her : perfect ... She going to love it ... Hay I'm still talking to him ... Langa Mani "

Langa : what makes you think she will agree to all of this ? dude when Banzi did it he knew that Mpume was a sucker for romance wena uzowenza kanjani with Sbahle ? You just got back together with the hotheaded girl that will not bow down to everything you say "

Me : I just made her find me irresistible "

Langa : ooh shit you made her climax for the first time ....nice move ... But still .."

Me : she's on my mercy "

Him : so you haven't ... Fuck you good"

Me : I learn from the best ... " honestly speaking Langa and Zoe love is goal and i want to have that with Sbahle and I couldn't have asked for a good friend like Langa to teach me on how he does it and looked like I'm in to dip because I'm madly in love with Sbahle

Langa : just focus on loving her now sex will be a bonus ... She must just be the only thing that matter in you're world and bro you can come to me and thank me later ..."

I felt Sbahle hug me from behind

Me: I plan to do just that ... By the way when are you getting married ... "\_

Him : fuck you ! " he dropped the call and i laughed

I turned around and looked at her Mlondi packed few cloths for her and asked Sunny to dropped them here she looked good on a baby pink dress

Me : I thought you hated girly colours "\_

Her : that was before i meet you " I smiled

Me : let me put on a t- shit come help me pack "

Her : uyaphi "

Me : we going to Jo'burg "

.  
.

To be continued

## Chapter 66

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

I'm still asking my self ukuthi how rich is this guy kanyi ? I still can not register that he has jet plane this plane looks like a 5star hotel its was only me him and the two pilots

After the take off he kissed my cheek

" let me catch up with work "

Me : hayi mvelo "

Him : I'm dealing with a major case sweetheart I won't be lo long besides you got music movies food go crazy'

He kissed me even longer he pulled out

Me : I miss you already "

He chuckled walked to what look like desk he opened his lap top as I admired him for a while and noticed that his focused in what his doing he looked so serious I took my phone put my headset on I decided to listen to Rehana jams I was busy humming I don't know when sleep came but I was woken up Mvelo.

Him : buckle up love we landing "

I nodded we meet with a driver outside they shook hands and he gave him car keys he bowed and walked away Mvelo opened my door after he put our bags in back .

I only been once to Jo'burg when I visited Zim and did this crazy Tattoo on my back back then I was in bad shape to even pay attention to the golden city

Him : you miles away " he kissed my hand

Me : why we here "

Him : it's a surprise "

Me : I hate surprises "

Him : I know and I like that you hate them because I plan to do them a lot till you love them " I huffed as he giggled

The drive was not that long i opened my eyes to this beautiful houses I have ever seen in some estate we stopped at the gate of what looks like mansion he rolled down the window and punched in a code the gate open and we drove in there were cars parked expensive cars parked outside

Him : shoot every one is here "

Me : who's house is this " I looked at it with my jaws on the floor it was beautiful

I felt him tap my shoulder

Him : come" he offers me his hand I held it and walk out I looked at my dress its a short baby pink body hugging shirt dress I matched it with white all stars my natural hair on a bun I'm just plain

Him : you panicking "

I looked at him like why didn't he tell me we going to such place the guy did not knock he just opened the big door and screamed

"Honey I'm home " what the fuck I was meet with lot of faces some I knew some I'm seeing for the first time I froze not knowing what to do

Me : sanibonani " they all greeted me back

" is that Trey ... Ooh my God you finally here Zoe said coming from the other room Sindy screamed following Zoe

Zoe : ooh no you don't "

Zoe and Sindy ran to Mvelo almost nocking him down ok what

Mvelo is like giant mystery puzzles. You could spend months piecing together parts of the puzzle without ever actually finding out what the end result looks like. And just when you think you're almost done and know what the picture will be a mysterious thousand more pieces suddenly get

dumped In front of you what going on here ?  
Menzi : evening my Queen " yooh this clown he  
bowed and I laughed  
" hi Menzi " he hugged me  
" oh don't mind them they were worse when they  
were still in high-schools finally we meet Mrs  
Mnguni ... please come in welcome to my home "  
I almost dropped my mouth This guy is hot ... No  
scratch that his gorgeous wait did he say this is his  
home he looks way young to have such a home  
Him : I'm Langa Dlamini Zoe husband "  
Ooh this is the Langa " ooh nice to finally meet  
you too I have heard so much about you please  
call me Sbahle " i was about to sit down when Zoe  
attacked me with a hug  
Her : I'm sorry about that "  
Me : I know his you person ... ". She chuckled  
" hay babe I'm Gugu finally we got to meet you its  
been long over due ooh and your pictures have  
nothing on you yoo umuhle "  
Me: thank you  
My husband where is he I got Zoe Sindy Gugu and  
some short girls with freckle that looks like Veli all  
looking at me with smiles on there face  
"I'm Nompumelelo Dlamini I'm sorry could not

attend your wedding I was swamped with work "  
said the Veli look alike

Sindy : just call her Mpume "

Gugu : next thing she will ask you to call her  
Madlamini "

Mpume : ask Bongani to put a ring on it you will  
know how good it is to be call by your husband's  
surname "

Sindy and Gugu where talking so loud I figured it  
because of the wine glasses on there hands

Zoe : come let's catch up... This topic will not end  
any time soon"

I followed her to the kitchen I looked for the man I  
came with but dololo

Zoe : I'm so glad that you two are back together ...  
He almost died "

Me : well I guess the time apart worked made him  
see my worth he seem to be focus on us now "

Her : his a good guy and I haven't seen him this  
happy in long time you make him happy ... What  
ever you doing you doing it right and keep it up "

I smiled looking down

Zoe gave me a glass juice yep as most girls do we  
gossip about the loud mouths on the other room  
and what going on with them Zoe is fun crazy and



such a cool person to hang around with  
Its true what they say the friends you keep  
determine who you are and your future

Me : so you and Mpume are married to brothers  
?"

Her : yep Mpume is like a sister wife to me now  
she was my best friend when we were growing up  
"

Me : why you say you were once best friends "

Her : life happened babe and interest change "

I nodded I shifted my focus on this beautiful area  
they call a kitchen

Me : I love you kitchen Zoe "

Her : pity I can't cook I only come here to get my  
wine from the fridge "

We bust out and laughed

I was only called here by her to gossip about every  
one look at her take sip of her wine but I'm not  
bored at all in fact I'm enjoying my time with her I  
guess I'm only close to Zoe because she Mvelo's  
person what ever that is but there are like sister  
and brother and the fact that she was also close  
with Pam is a bonus to me.

Me : hayboo i forgot to ask are you perhaps  
throwing a party or something ?"

Her : no sweety every year we have this couple retreat that we do you know a romantic gate away we all friends and in one circle so that when we get time to chill catch up get drunk and have fun I was not looking forward in going this year because we lost one of our own and it was just not going to be the same without her "

Me : Pam ? "

She nodded but Mvelo said that he is visiting me for a weekend I told Sindy and she was on the next plane to my house when I told her that Mvelo is bringing you along boom the house was pack '

I laughed

Me : that crazy all because of me ?"

Zoe : who wouldn't want to be in presence of royalty "

So Mvelo decided to officially introduce me to his friend but why now ? I mean they know his married to someone could it be that maybe they were driving him crazy about how i must be to classy or snobbish to hang out with them because of my title maybe that the reason why he hasn't brought me to meet them You'll know maybe he's just doing it to shut them up because it will be a

two-second meet and greet and i won't see them again for quite a while.

Sindy walked in " yoooh your friend drives me crazy "

Zoe : she always my friend when you fight with her "

Her : that ring in her finger makes her think she is better then us "

Zoe : she's been married for four years and well to me that still a honeymoon stage ... So let her be "

Sindy clicked her tongue "sidla nini kanti " she asked

Zoe : you always hungry ... Take this bowls to the patio" the other two girls walked in and we moved the food to the back yard it was an entertainment area and looked so beautiful the lighting oh my God ok I'm saying it for the last time now this house is beautiful its your MTVbase celebrity cribs kind of a look its just out of this world.

I saw Sindy Throwing himself to Menzi yoo this two something never change Mvelo called me to sit next to him he held my hand and kissed my cheek

Him : are you good ? "

I smiled he took a glass and gave me some juice " thank you " I said to him  
From the looks of it I get to see the loud him cray cocky and fun side  
He wants to hang out with everyone and have fun. It's not a big deal to him that I'm meeting his friends. It just simplifies his life if we can all hang out at the same time. I have concluded that this won't be a once off thing he will want me to go to dinner with his friends or hang out with the girls that why he left me there to get to know them i took my time studying this girls before me well you Know Zoe she more like me and we clicked from first day I saw her Sindy is tall and Slim long hair ambitious feisty I get that Menzi is intimidated by her but I see crazy love in them Gugu they call her miss Ghetto she is loud and swears a lot Zoe said she dating Bongani and there relationship is to crazy to understand Mpume is church girl also a worker holic she works in the Dlamini plantation her in-laws company she act too much of wife and bores me to death and she marrier to Banzi  
Him : well this are my friend when my life was stuck in the middle of nowhere like a car that has

low guess tank that sitting on E my family here bafaka I full tank and kick start me to move on " I nodded you know me and Mvelo hardly dated and I don't know much about rules and regulation of when a guy dates a girl but for him to introduce me to his friends means a grate deal I means that he wants me to be part of his circle his sharing everything to them about us and he want me to be in the circle as well this is so new to me but I'm just glad that every one has a partner this is a good sign i can rest assure that when he say his with his friends his not not cheating his rubbing on my thigh now his to affectionate his doing it again claiming me He wants everyone around him to know that im off limits because he's into me He's practically peeing on my leg marking his territory Mvelo is a typically jealous type all signs are just there.

Gugu ; you know we can do that as well ""

Zoe : gugu stop it "

Mpume : no qhubeka you were saying ?"

Mpume was dishing up for every one she looks quite and humble not like the rest of the girls here but I did not get her character there something about her that I can't put my finger on it. And the

way they discussed her back in the house just confirmed my suspicions

Mvelo : are you cold? " I smelled alcohol in his mouth he now tipsy he looking at me with lustful eyes

I shook my head no

Him : did I tell you how beautiful you are today ' he whisper in my ear and I giggled

Me : every morning when I wake up you do tell me buy I can never get enough '

Mvelo: everything about you is totally hot me being next to you right now im just showing off.

You just pumped up my ego to another level

I blushed and looked down

I hit his shoulder you so wrong I noticed that Mpume finished dishing up no one serves my man but me " mom rules " I stood up

Him : uyaphi ?"

Me : to get your food " the smile on his face was priceless most likely he was checking me out my body while I'm taking two plates .

I handed him wet wipes that were saculating

Him: please wipe my hand "

I did that all eyes were on us but I was not going to dwell on there looks

Me : don't tell me I must feed you as well "

Him : you read my mind "

Me : uyahlanya "

I handed him his food as we laughed

Him : thank you Mabhengu "

I smiled

Me : did you notice that Mpume looks like Veli "

Banzi and Mvelo had a conversations with their eyes

Mvelo : you haven't told her "

He asked Banzi

Banzi : its not my place ... "

I looked at Mvelo " what going on ? "

Him : I promise to tell you later "

The food looks good nothing fancy just lot of meat and salads

Gugu : so Sbahle tell us about yourself "

I looked at her like is she crazy

Bongani : she is Sbahle Treys wife full stop ."

Gugu : awkahle angikhulumi nawe "

I wasn't prepared to answer a ton of questions I didn't even know how to answer that question I don't want yo seam rude or anything so just shifted her to that direction she was going

Me : ngiyintombazane yasezilalini empangeni

ngacelwa isoka leseswatini ucu ngalinika  
wangikhokhela sashata "

Gugu : what "

Everyone bust out and laughed

Langa : Mkhaya Wami ... ( my home girl )

Owangasesigodini sangakithike wena "

Banzi whistled I shook my head and laughed Zulu  
boys

Zoe : she just said what Bongani said in dip Zulu "

Bongani fist bump me " Ndlonkulu " I laughed

Gugu : you got jokes I see " she stood up no make  
that stumble up walking away

Sindy : I think she meet her match "

Bongani : its about time yoo she so annoying  
when she is drunk " this right here did not feel  
awkward conversation was flowing after his  
happy that I'm talking and joking around with  
every one

Me : was this a test ?"

Him : for ?"

Me : to see how your friends feel about me "

Him : what ... No ! " \_

Me : Mnguni you can't lie to me I know that  
People trust their friends and listen to their advice  
eventually. This is like a test-run to see if your



friends like me or not If they nix me I won't see them again and i ll probably be breaking up a life time relationship with them with you If they do like me i'll suddenly be invited to lots of stuff that includes everyone."

Him : why you always have to over think every thing "

Me : I call that being Smart "

Him : mmmm I see wena what answer did you come up with ""

Me : we can only wait and see ... But either way I ain't holding my breath as long as I got you "

Bongani : You know I thought Zoe and Langa are the only ones joined at the hip don't tell me you two also... Come on ! " ooh my God I even forgot we have company we were in our own bubble now cuddling in a one sitter and lost in each other eyes

Mvelo : get used to it " they bust out and laughed

.

I think I'm jet leg because I was yawning now and it not helping that I'm resting my head on Mvelo chest Every one was drunk the guys were on there second bottle of Hennessy and not mention bears and sided there were drinking the girls were

drinking wine and Vodka I'm the only sober one here because even Momfundisi is drinking.

Bongani and Menzi told fart jokes and too many stories that started like "That one time when we drove drunk..." There's nothing more unattractive to me than people who do reckless dangerous things and think they're funny or something worth being proud of. Ugh. Langa Mvelo and Banzi were speaking in codes you that guys talk it's like they're spitting question marks out of their mouths mixed in with their words. Sure we hear what they're saying but what the heck do they mean by whatever it is?

Me : I need to use the bathroom " Mpume said that she tired and was going to bed I sensed a vibe between her and hubby but hay its non of my business Mvelo asked her to show me the bathroom so we walked out together

Her : so Trey does not mind you wearing shot things "

Me : no "

Her : but you're a wife and Queen "

Me : I know ... But how will the way I dress affect my ability to be a Good wife or Queen"

Her : ooh ..."

Me : so where is the bathroom "

She showed me

Me : thank you ... Good night ' I walked past her ' I did my business washed my hands and when I opened the door I bumped into Mvelo

Him : baby I can't drive to the hotel now I'm drunk Zoe has enough rooms can we please spend the night "

Me : Zoe told me we spending the weekend here "

Him : shit ... You don't mind right "

Me: naaaaah me tired now 'll go asked Zoe which rooms will use "

Him : don't worry i will show you myroom "

Me : your room ?"

Him :I have a room in this house Sbu house and Menzi ...come help me pee" he pushed me inside the bathroom and attacked me with kiss .

.  
.

## Chapter 67

Sbahle \*\*\*

The feeling of being in love and also to you are loved by someone is the best thing anybody can feel in this world Mvelo showers me with love gifts and just him being there every time when I need him oh but come night time he sleeps like his in kung -fu movie and fighting ninjas and when his drunk its even worse he will keep hogging the covers snoring way too loud he will tl grinding of teeth kick and punch me ooh God and the way he spread himself on the bed Jesus come down please !

there's many times when i woke up last night and just looked at him i finally took my covers and cuddle in a couch in our room but surprisingly i woke up in his arms in the early morning It was pretty awesome having him sleep next to me but Like every scenario there are pros and cons in having a life time partner we just need to adjust to them . It's easy to complain about all his annoying habits but sometimes we forget about all the things we love about having our partners share our beds.

I don't know about you but you most probably realized that I'm a sucker for Snuggling up in his arms and falling asleep in his chest is one of the best feelings in the world. I feel safe secure and loved. Sleep comes fast and i sleep so easy and It doesn't get much better than that.

I woke up to an empty Bed this man being an early bird is his thing there was a note on his pillow

" gone jogging with the guys don't miss me to much "

I frowned I want my morning cuddle and kiss you know its Even better than falling asleep beside him the feeling of waking up next to him too is my pick me up for the day As long as we can get over the morning breath curling up in Mvelo arms is the best way to start my day.

I dragged my body to the bathroom took a shower hot long shower we slept very late last night and I got bags under my eyed as evidence after taking a bath I made my way to the bedroom the door opened with him in shots kicks and black and white bandana he smiled when he notice me he was sweating and I was about ask him about his t-shirt and he showed me

"I took it off when I was walking up the stairs I swear " he kissed me with his salty sweaty mouth I giggled

Him : Good morning "

Me : morning go take a bath ..."

He smiled and winked at me walking to the bathroom leaving a trail of his cloths everywhere Mvelo is such a baby

" don't take that towel off just yet I want to show you something " he said from the bathroom

" ok "

I heard the shower running and took my phone Didy profile pic was a wedding picture his status read " its about to get lit attending cross continent wedding "

I texted her and asked "who's getting married "

Her : I'm at class babe will call you later "

Me : its Saturday Didy ... "

Her : I have to go mom is calling me "

Me : your mom ? You in cape town and she KZN ...

Didy what going on ?"

She logged out Didy profile pic was a wedding picture his status read " its about to get lit attending cross continent wedding "

I texted her and asked "who's getting married "

Her : I'm at class babe will call you later "

Me : its Saturday Didy ... "

Her : I have to go mom is calling me "

Me : your mom ? You in cape town and she KZN ...

Didy what going on ?"

She logged out I tried calling her phone was off

Mvelo threw himself on the bed

Him: what up with that face ? "

Me : Didy is talking about some international wedding "

Him: ooh ..." he tossed my phone aside and started kissing me and touching me "

Me : babe not here what if they hear me "

Him : " the walls are sound proof just relax and let's enjoy each other "

I like the sound of that he was really hard and his morns were so loud he ate me up like his life dependent on my pussy And it was really good I came and he licked me cleaned I was still coming back from my high when he told

Him : Babe let me teach you something before I die of green balls " he said with his eyes half opened

Me : what ? "

Him : you going to do it day don't bite me please "

What the fuck you talking about I frowned wondering

Him : you going to go down on me "

I'm not in the mood I bite my lower lip

Him : don't over think it just do it "

Me :Mvelo " he tossed me to be on top of him his shaft was going up and hard with veins popping out like anything I have never seen

Him : you over thinking it come on Sbahle take my dick and put it on your mouth is like licking a lolly pop "

so here I was on my knees i made tentative efforts at first. If i did not love him the way I do i would have said this is primarily comprised of the emotion of "Ew this is gross!" but that was simply not the case with me. After all I was already willing to put it inside my vagina so having it in my mouth didn't seem like a big deal. What really bugged me was trying to figure out how to breathe he is big and it did not help that his hand were directing me to move back and fourth on him basically i had to take a break every 30 seconds or so - which meant he went from fully aroused to not at all turned on several times. Finally I realized that this was the exact opposite



of swimming with my head underwater. I had to remember to keep both my mouth and nose open at the same time. Perform with one breathe with the other. But by then I was so tired and had such a massive crick in my neck I wanted to stop but he was in the moment and screaming what ever shit in tongues.

No matter what they tell you boys definitely have the easier task. No gag reflex to worry about no need to twist your neck in a really awkward angle for long minutes no spit-swallow dilemma to deal with. Anyway those are more evolved problems than I was facing while he was calling my name and clearly enjoying himself he instructed me to play with his balls and I followed instruction he was in another world ...after some time he tensed up his eyes were rolled back

Him : shit ... Shit ....ooh my God Fuck ... " oh good Lord did he just come on my mouth I jumped up and ran to the bathroom to spit it out I rinsed my mouth he walked behind me

Him : I'm ...really .....really sorry"

I continued to spit and ignored him

Him : hle - hle ... I'm sorry "

I looked at him the mirror

Me: you came in my mouth Mvelo ... What the  
hack " .

Him : for a first timer you did it like a pro ... Fuck  
you took me to another planet and i found my self  
speaking alien language "

I looked at him and laughed

We were both naked and we cracking up in the  
bathroom about the things he was saying I'm  
relieved to say it wasn't so bad and I promised to  
do it next time since my first experience got me  
cleaning my mouth

We took an innocent bath together

Him : you know that one day you will swallow my  
come "

Me : never "

Him : are you going against the word of your  
master now " I laughed

Him : I love you so much Mabhengu "

Me : I love you too Mnguni " \_we kissed

it was pretty spectacular even though I say so  
myself finally I got the chance to drive him crazy

.

.

To be continued

## Chapter 68

Sbahle \*\*\*

We did not eat breakfast with the other we just played around in our room till our tummy told us we have to eat took another shower while he changed when I was done I dressed up I tried to fix my hair but water has made it frizzy so I just decided to put a hat on

Him : you wearing that ?"

Me : is there anything wronging with it ? "

Him : ngisazobulala umuntu Mina mekunje "

Me : you so dramatic "

I put my white bucket hat on my hair was just to much for me to comb

Him : Sbahle I can not always be your shadow from all the vulture out there"

I looked at him he was also looking like a dish brown chino pants cream golf T-shirt with black snickers

Me : you wearing that ? "

He rolled his eyes

Me : that so gay "

We bust out and laughed he held my Hand and looked at me dip in the eyes

Him : I love you and I trust you but I don't trust them this top is reveling my assets "

Me : I can take care of my self besides my heart belongs to you ... "

We kissed

Him : you look hot ... But yoo that hair .."

Me : I hope Zoe can take me to her stylist "\_

Hin : I gave you a card that you hardly used ...

Why is that ?"

Me : I left all my belongings back at the royal house that day ... I was Mlondi charity case for the past months "\_ I said laughing his face changed

Him :you should have called "

Me : I was mad at you "

Even I'd I wasn't I will never ask him for money I got my trust fund money and saving account so I'm set for life yes his rich but I will not stoop to that level of being that women. While some women have no qualms about seeking financial help from their partners from time to time I find it a bit uncouth to ask for money from my man I do expect gifts and treats from time to time but

asking for cash is a line that I don't cross. Maybe it is because I have my own money and I can take care of my bills. I know some women who are unemployed and have to rely on their boyfriends for everything even the most basic of needs thank God I'm not like that

Him : you my beautiful wife are not your brothers responsibility either we separated or together you need to call me for such things "

Me : babe its just money why you getting worked up about this " he looked at me and I knew his pissed Mvelo has moods for day and as much as I understand him I hate that his mood can go from 100 to 0 in a split of a second

Him : because you never ask me for anything "

Ooh god are we having this topic right now I rolled my eyes

Me : I was not raised to depend on men Mvelo "

Honestly speaking that the fact I don't see a big deal about this Unlike some ladies out there I don't believe that men solely exist in this earth to support women. A man is not your ATM or safety net. Try becoming independent. You will feel a lot happier and fulfilled in a relationship if you know that you have got your own back. But my man

here does not feel like that He let go of my hand  
and took a band and tied his hair

Me : Mvelo ..." I tried calming him down

He was breathing heavily

Me : Mnguni ... " his eyes were red with anger

Him : I'm just a men ... That you need nothing  
from ... You talked about doing your hair who's  
money were you going to use ?! "

Me : mine " I said softly

Him : usebenzaphi Sbahle !!!

I hate it when he start shouting I just don't know  
how to talk to him when his like this just this  
morning we were having fun explored each other  
body's now his wild lion is just waiting to ripe me  
apart

Him : you so full of yourself ...yazi ... "

Me : angizwanga ? "

Him : this what we have is not boyfriend girlfriend  
thing we married what's mine is yours what yours  
is mine ... Stop acting like a bloody single women  
... "

I looked down he threw his bank card on the bed  
" you need to know and understand the definition  
of being in a relationship...or being a wife in this  
marriage "

He walked out banging the door I sank down on the couch and place my hands on my face what just happen right now ... I could not cry because I had no tears to cry for something so meaningless like money.

Few minute later I heard a light knock and few seconds later the door opened

Zoe : hi "

Me: hi " I faked a smile

She seat down next to me

Her : are you ok ? "

Me : did he ask you to speak to me? "

She shook her head no

Her : his not speaking to anyone I figured you two had a fight "

Me : his too controlling and wants things to be done his way I understand I'm young Zoe but Mvelo sometimes treat me like a kid than his partner "

She laughed shaking her head I could not help but to admire her beauty this blond colour on her hair makes her look white then coloured

Her : you mind telling me what happened "

Me : sibanga imali he wants me to ask him for everything Zoe is love suppose to be about money

and what he gives me ? I don't give a damn about his Richie's I love him. .. Just right now I wanted to do my hair using my own money but he almost bite my head off "

She continued laughing I stood up cause she was pissing me off as well

Me : can you stop laughing this is not funny "\_

Her : I'm so sorry its just that I have been in your situation so I can really relate on what you going trough right now "

Me : what ? "\_

He:let me tell you about me and Langa ..."

I set down next to her

Her : I meet him when I was 16 .. He was 21 he was my first in everything love kiss sex everything ..."

Me : this sounds like me and Mvelo "

She nodded

Her : I was his golden egg I still am he hated that I'm wild and free because yena his quite and keep to himself kind of guy so many times he wish I could change but as young as I was I stood my ground... I meet langa before he was this rich but he had money and boy did he wish to strangle me when I told him my brother gave my first car my



aunt bought me this and that when I went out shopping with my friend and don't ask him for money he will flip ... I didn't get it then but being a wife at an age of 17 I learned fast that I'm bruising his Igor "

Me : what ? "

Zoe : man like Langa and Mvelo believe that the money that they work so hard for day in and day out must be spend by there wife's ... Langa gives me an allowance of R25k every month bought me this house pay for my school fees i got four cars a house keeper a personal chef cloths that still have tags on and when I say I'm bord he takes me on holiday across the world ..."

Me : wow that too much ... Its like you don't even lift a finger"

Her : I don't ... I just do my wife duties in bedroom respect him support him and stay beautiful ...

Me : wow ! You sound like a trophy wife ?"

Her : he will never allow me to be that I will never allow my self either .. That why I'm at school doing my 5th year in medicine because a powerful man needs a smart educated women he can show of with he will never allow you to hide behind his shadow ... He chose you for your brains never

doubt that "

Me: I don't know what to do ... I mean he said a mouth full and his mad "

She laughed

Her :that simple baby girl just go wild with his money trust me it makes them so happy ... And that reduces fighting ... "

Me :R25k monthly allowance ?"

She laughed

Her : and I don't even use it ... He loves taking me shopping and he pampers me all the time ... So I use his most of the time "

We laughed

Me :this feels I don't know like your love is based on money I don't know if I can deal with that ?"

She shook her head

Her : we can be broke with nothing I will still put my life on the line for that men .. And I know you will too for Mvelo this lifestyle is just a bonus to the love we have ...so Stop questioning Mvelo he wears the pants in this relationship and enjoy being his wife "

I looked down

Her : hle - hle that man loves you and wish to make you happy what ever he does for you its not

because he want yo control you or buy you but  
because he want to give you the finer things in life  
that are suited for his Queen "

She stood up and pulled me up

Her : chin up ok " I smiled and nodded

and she hugged me strange enough her hug was  
not cold or forced my body just allowed her in

Her : I like your outfit ... Yoo that ass girl "

Me : not big as yours "

Her : off course you can't top this "

We laughed and she hooked her arm around mine

I was wearing white shorts white shirt that expose  
my back I topped it with my gold necklace with  
matching bracelet and watch Mvelo bought this  
set last year he said ' to show you how I  
appreciate you '

Me : I need to go to the mall maybe do my hair "

Zoe : I got you do you mind if we go with the  
others "

Me : naaah its cool "

She lead me outside there was a table set in the  
garden with all the foodies

Sindy : finally you two came down "

Me : sorry i miss breakfast. . . I over slept "

Sindy : what breakfast we all woke up now ... "

Me : afternoon every one ... " they greeted me back

I set next to Zoe and Cindy was on my other side Mvelo was sitting in front of me and his eyes fixed on his phone

I stated dishing a fruit salad for my self

Mpume : I thought you were going to help me cook this morning " she looked at me So how do say this with out being rude

Me : I'm sorry should I have ? "

Her : well I just hope you different from the lazy bunch "

Gugu : will never hear the end of this ... Yes

Mpume you cooked brunch thank you "

Mpume rolled her eyes and looked at me

Me : I'm really sorry I didn't know I would have help you just that where I come from the kitchen is the the pride and joy an escape place for the women of the house Zoe never gave me permission to utilize her space "

Mpume laughed " she can't even cook so what the point of asking her something she does not use or utilize "

Banzi : Nompumelelo "

Mpume : what she's saying does not make sense"

Me : its still her house she may not cook in it but I'm sure there other things she does in it so as her guest I'm respecting her boundaries and I will ask for nothing less from her or anyone else in fact when there in my house "

The table went silent and every one was looking at me like I said go fuck your self

Langa : Mkhaya Wami ...I really like you "

Sindy bust out and laughed I looked up and found Mvelo side smiling at me

Zoe : so let's past the fact that I can't cook that was just rudely displayed to every one ooh God ... ! "

Langa : as Sbahle said there is lot more you do on that kitchen then just cook some of those things make me very happy .. " he winked at her

Bongani : fuck man can't you just wait till we finish eating...hayi langa Mani " he pushed his plate aside and every one bust out and laugh ok did I miss the joke

Sindy : mmmm thatha friend "

Zoe : yes baby tell them how we cook up a storm together "

Mvelo phone ranged he stood up moved away to answered it

Zoe : I'm thinking spar day for us lady's till you guys figure out entertainment for later "

Mvelo: count me and Sbahle out we made other plans for later " he said sitting

Banzi : yayaya we know "

Ok am I the one lost what plans is he talking about

Sindy : ooh yes I like that Zoe "

Langa called Mvelo for a word and they moved away from us

Gugu : I also want hit the mall do shopping "

Bongani : that it I'm out " all the guys stood up leaving girls to chat

Zoe : and maybe get inked up "

Gugu : how about strip club ke Ladys " she said a loud enough for the guys to stop what they doing

"\_what !!" Langa

" INI " Bongani

" fuck no !" Banzi

" Dakiwe " menzi

Mvelo just laughed ...

Gugu : haybo I'm just joking ... " we all laughed

Sindy : Gugu kodwa ... Uzobulala abanye abatwana "

Zoe : so who's driving ... I'm already drinking she raised her glass .. " does she ever stop drinking ?

Sindy : I'm still hang over from yesterday ... " we looked at Gugu

Her : fuck no ".she said fixing her shades yoo she is such a diva

Zoe : I guess you driving Sbahle "

" why me ? I don't even know the Pretoria roads "

Mpume : fine I will drive when are we leaving "

Gugu : no offence we want to get there today not in a next decade or two "

Every one bust out and laughed

Mvelo: well if you still value your life don't put my wife behind the wheel she drives like mad max "

He took an apple and walked away

Zoe : cool ... Sbahle is driving "

Me : Zoe "

Zoe : I love you Sweetie " she kissed my cheek they just bulling me because I'm new and younger

Me : let me go get my bag and phone " I stood up and every one said "wow " I turned and looked at them what ? did I mess my self

Mpume : is that a tattoo ?"

Zoe : I told you its fuckin our of this world "

Sindy jumped from her sit

Gugu : fuck this is dope "

There were making a huge deal out of this

Mpume : its big ..." She frowned she was disgusted or something I'm starting to not like this girl now

Me : is there something wrong Mpume "

Gugu : come love before she calls you a devil worshiper " we laughed as we walked inside the house she went to her room and i walked to mine I took my bag phone and card compliment of hubby

" I'm sorry about earlier " I did not look at him

Me : ok "

Him : I'm sorry Sbahle "

Me : I said ok "

I took my stuff and was about to walk out ..

Him : look babe I know I'm difficult man to be with and I'm working on being a better man for you ... "

Me : uzama kanjani? Because all you do is shout at me when you get angry I'm not your child

Mvelo I'm your wife and sometimes you need to speak to me with respect ... Don't let my age

cloud the way you look at me I'm a women ...

Because you decided to make me grow up by putting this rock on my finger ... So before you lose control and find something wrong with my



action make me see reason first and talk to me like your women ... So let me go please "

Him : ngiyaxolisa "

He let my arm go ... " sorry is never enough ... " I walked out banging door as well two can play that game

.

To be continued.

## **Chapter 69**

Sbahle \*\*\*

Its true that the enemy of a woman is another woman We've all have encountered with that one particular women that sis judgemental and nobody can stand her ... I thought this such behavior is found in high school and girls bully other over nothing is it jealousy or is it envy? No body knows

I've heard Didy once said that 'girls are mean' and 'women are bitchy' I never knew I will meet a wolf hiding under a sheep skin like I just did and to top it up i have been in countless run-ins with her ever since I meet her that right now I feel like

jumping her .

Mpume : I just feel like having a tattoo.. Is just tainting God temple " I rolled my eyes this was getting old why is she still talking about my tattoo hallo Zoe has about 20 tattoos on her body

Me : Mpume you dwelling to much on this now and it starting to irritate me why don't you save that speech for Banzi "

Her : where does my husband feet in all of this ?\_ "

Me : you married to a man that has about 100 tattoos on his body so you telling me you rather vow to love him for life and but judge us who only have one tattoo ? "

Singh : aish !"

Mpume : Its jusy my own personal view point why you so offended "

Me : hambo shumayela ekhaya kuqala dali not LA ( go preach at home not here )

Gugu : wow ! "

Mpume : i was just trying to "

Sindy : Mpume let it go please "

She clicked her tongue and looked outside the window I decided to annoy her so I press the excelerate

and Zoe jeep just flew

Mpume : haybo !"

Zoe turned the music up and we high five that  
what I'm talking about

Zoe : its late for full body massage so I guess we  
can do hair and nails "

She said after we got off the car

Mpume : and you call that driving ... Were you  
trying to kill us "

More like kill you I wanted to say

Me : you got in car even after Mvelo warned you  
so don't blame me "

Zoe : you so crazy wena

Sindy : guy i need to do shopping I think im  
gaining weight '

We looked at her and we laughed she is still tall  
and skinny with no body fat what so ever

Me : I'm just hungry "

Zoe : you just ate now!"

Me : it was a fruit salad ... Haybo I need meat "

Gugu :mina girls i need to do facials it might take  
long so I'll call you when I'm done "

Sindy : thatha wena taxi owner "

Gugu : yes girl "

We all laughed

The day at salon was well spent I just treat and

washed my hair and styled it also did my pedi and  
meni ( nail) just for control

Mpume : I so hate you two right now ... This hair  
is so long its not legal for black girl "

She pointed at me and Cindy

Sindy : remember when you had long dreadlocks  
gone are those day now you just rocking a boy cut  
Shane "

Zoe laughed

Mpume : I blame Banzi for cutting it he kept on  
saying its getting in the way tie this thing up " he  
mimicked his voice and we laughed

Funny because I love Mvelo dreadlocks the way I  
hold it when he kiss me it my first contact when  
we get close.

Sindy : yoooh I'm going to kill this day ass where is  
she "

Zoe : she coming relax "

So here we are waiting for Gugu who said she was  
done and coming our way that was like an hour  
ago and my phone has been ringing non stop urg  
Mvelo and his endless sorries I was not in the  
mood

Gugu : bafazi sorry for keeping yo'll waiting "

Mpume : two rounds of drinks are on you uyezwa

" she pointed a finger at her

Gugu : money is not a problem my girls it how you spend it that becomes a problem "

Sindy and i laughed

Zoe : wow you look like a doll "

Gugu : dating a player girl you need to be always on top of your game "

Mpume : is Bongani still cheating ? "

Gugu : naa... I'm the bone that his sucking day in and day out and I work extra hard to always be juicy for him "

This girl is to much yooo

Gugu is the lover of things she put in 28 inch weave

nails eyelashes she did her eyebrows and make up she looked different that layer of make will sure leave the pillow cases dirty.

This girls shop like there is no tomorrow we did a lot of shopping I was so tired I wanted to die

" no I'm not getting inside there " I stood outside eyelashes she did her eyebrows and make up she looked different that layer of make will sure leave the pillow cases dirty.

This girls shop like there is no tomorrow we did a lot of shopping I was so tired I wanted to die

" no I'm not getting inside there " I stood outside  
Zoe pulled my arm ooh god I'm in a lingerie shop  
hallo bitches I'm not even having sex I wanted  
scream

Sindy : this will look good on you "

Me : Sindy no! its to revealing "

Gugu : that the whole point. ... Its takes Bongani  
less than a second to rip it apart I wish I had my  
size " she walked to the plus size ilse

Me : what the point of buying this if it does not  
last a second on your body "

Zoe : ooh my Sindy this girl need schooling "

Sindy : school in session learn and listen my child "  
I looked at her as she explained

Sindy : Often what people don't understand about  
sex is that it's in the mind. Sex is way more than  
just the man penetrating the woman. So foreplay  
is more important than people give it credit for.  
That's the general idea I had put out there.

Now coming to why I would wear lingerie for my  
boyfriend? Like other answers have said that  
lingerie is the appetizer. I wear it to seduce my  
partner get him to drool over me or sometimes to  
just tease him. There are nights when we get  
down to business straightaway but on other

nights I really want to perform for him ... You know " she said dancing I nodded

Zoe : Some of us enjoy wearing lingerie for ourselves. Not only do I enjoy wearing pretty lingerie I enjoy photographing myself in it. And sending pics to Langa while his at work and it drives him crazy when he get home I will be on my usual night wear as if I did not erode him

My collection has grown so much that I need to upgrade my storage for it yet again soon.

Beyond that lingerie is as Sindy said its part of foreplay for many people. Yes it does come off but before it does it can make the wearer feel more confident and can excite their partner. "

Me : ooh my God guys ! " I was shocked this girl know about sex as if they went to school and for qualification for it

Mpume : i only wear it when i say sorry to him and damn will he he give me a hiding"

Sindy : you took my advise "

She nodded shyly

Sindy : told you that man are weak when we got this fabric on "

Zoe and Sindy high five

Mpume : so you never worn one ?"

I shook my head no

Mpume : yoo! Sex must be very boring with you "

That hit home fuck this girl

Zoe : how will she know when Mvelo is still saving her "

Me : Zoe !"

Zoe : sorry . . " aish this girl she has no filter or what so ever

Mpume : Ini ? kanjani ? " she frowned I'm not sure about that look it was anger mixed with being surprised and a whole lot more I just walked away

Zoe pulled me

Zoe : I'm really sorry love ... I didn't mean to "

Me : its not you I'm worried about it how she will try and use this information to try and embarrass me i know her kind they find joy in other peoples misfortune just because I'm not having sex I'll be the joke of the town "

Zoe : I will not allow it to get to that please sisi I'm sorry ... I will fix this "

I nodded

Her : don't waist your breath on her so let's go shop for your man "

Me : Zoe!"

Her : ... You taking this one and this ... Not



forgetting le "

Me : I don't think I will ever wear such things "

Her : trust me you will ... You need to read cosmopolitan on reason why you should and watch porn girl .. Prepare yourself "

Me : I doubt that day will come any day soon because this man of mine prefer cuddling me ... His maybe waiting for Jesus to cone back so we can do it "

Zoe laughed

Me : and worst part I'm forever horny when I'm with him ... Is it normal ? "

I whispered in her ear and she bust out and laughed but quickly held her mouth

Her : your body is ready mogul its perfectly normal ... "

Me : I feel like I'm sex addict ... Before even having sex "

She was in tears

Sindy : ok I'm done "

Me : did you buy the whole store " judging by the intern on her arm

Zoe : now this is sex addict ... We can never keep up ?\_ " she pointed at Sindy

Sindy :lalela LA I spend four Years with out him

...while he was Busy studying in the UK so his back and we braking the bed mama ... Revenge sex " Gugu: is there a such thing ? " she said standing next to us

Zoe : with Sindy and Menzi it is a thing "

We bust out and laughed we paid and made our way to some stake and grille restaurant this ladies love there wine

Zoe : you need to start drinking love me : I don't think I can "

Mpume : I was once like you but well life happened soon or later that cherry will be popped too "

Zoe : say one more thing about Sbahle and Trey sex life and I sweat to God I will spill every little secrete about your perfect marriage right here right now !"

She looked at Zoe

Zoe : we not in highschool we do not look at other down or bully them just because there new in our circle ... Grow up for goodness sake yazi yakhinya "

Her : maybe I should leave since clearly everyone is ganging over me "

Gugu :qondisa igwegwe dali be a born again in our

friendship and uzosifica sisala "

She took her things looked at me and cliqued her tongue

Sindy : don't mind her .... You sure you don't want a drink "

We all laughed

Me : I don't know ... Maybe some other time I still need to drive you b back " I said laughing

Sindy: ' point taken"

my phone beeped I looked at the massage :

~~~~hi baby ..

Freedom of expression has its limits. I have gone beyond the boundaries to the point of being rude. It was a terrible mistake I did. I never intended to hurt your feelings or trample on your opinions. I am sorry. Please allow me to make up for my mistakes. Would you care to come for nightcap with me to tonight ? " ~~~~

I looked at my phone and placed it aside

We were eating and chatting a storm the mood was so light without Mpume around wow I could even breath

Beep .. Beep massage

Zoe : looks like the lion miss you "

Me : hayi suka ... I'll see him later " I read the

massage

~~~I realized that my words can be really foul. I ought to choose my words carefully. I realize my mistake and am sorry for my behaviour .~~~

I placed my phone aside

Beep beep ~~ Why is it that in my heart I love you so much but when it comes to speaking I need to use gallons of mouthwash? I really need to rinse my rudeness out of my mouth. Will you help me? And I'm just trying to be funny so that you can smile and forgive me. Deep down I really want you to forgive me. ~~

That got me smiling a bit

My phone ringed and it was him

Me : Mnguni' I said after answering and walking to a more quiet place outside the restaurant

Him : I miss you ..."

I rolled my eyed

Him : baby please I just need to talk to you "

Me: I can't I'm with the girl "

Him : few minutes ke "

Me : seconds its rude that you calling me while you still going to see me later "

Him : I love your hair "

I looked around when I turned i bumped to his

chest

Him : you look beautiful "

Me " why you still talking on your phone? "

Hin" why you still talking on your phone ? "

I laughed and hanged up the phone

Me : ufunani LA "

Him : I miss you "

Me : hayi Mvelo "

Him: I told you we have plans tonight and you making us run late "

Me : why you sideline me when you doing this planes "

Him : Its called surprising my wife not side lining "

Me : I ha..."

Him : I know ... I know you hate surprises ... Let me spoil you sthandwa sami please "

I smiled and remanded Zoe words this morning

Me : ok ... But I need a clue .. "

Him : this is the clue ..."

He kissed me while I tip toe wrapped my hands around his neck and kissed him back

Him : and whole lot more ... "

I blushed

.

## Chapter 70

Mvelo \*\*\*

I'm nervous as fuck things are falling apart and not going to plan or my way at all once again i allowed my anger jealousy controlling being take over me hurting my love in the process

Langa : you fucked up "

Me : its like i hurt her more then I make her happy "

Langa : you obsessed with her and afraid that she's to good for you ...your jealousy clouds you and you think every thing she does its because she knows she can settle down with someone tan times better then you ... She's young and beautiful she acts like akakuncengile "

Me : that true "

Langa : that what I felt when Zoe and I started dating ... I was stressed about her leaving me and did not see how much she loved me and that alone made me controlling we fought a lot ...i even became more crazy when she was close with you ... It took me years to finally realize that she's just like a sister to you or your person as you two put it "\_

i chuckled

him :I don't think is about us being crazy but the fear of you loosing the only true thing that matters in your life "

Me : the thing is I'm not a particularly possessive or jealous guy but that doesn't mean I'm cool with other dudes making moves on my girl but Sbahle drives me crazy I found myself walking down the street with my arm around her claiming that she's "mine". I would hope she feels the same way about me but sometimes she just gives me mixed signals and I get so mad "

Him : I just knew you got it bad when you address her not by her but her tittle ' my wife' "

Me : what's that suppose to mean ?"

Him : man who professes calling his partner by their given title like my fiance my wife my baby mama my Queen are also saying in not so many words that you claiming her--that she is yours . you put everyone on notice... And professed out loud that 'this one is mine and she's not available for anything you were plotting and planning "

Me : what ?"

Him : it is what it is ... We all been there marrying a beautiful girl makes all man possessive and crazy

"

I looked down and shook my head Sbahle got me by the balls no doubt

Him : I can't believe you were planing on an international wedding ... Paris bro really did you think about the expanses?"

Me : any think for my Queen "

Him : yaa it would have been so romantic ..."

Me : yah to bad we can not do that now "

Him : I'm with Koko on this one ... Even though I don't know her reason but dude that was way over the top and cheesy "

Me : I realise that now ..and she would have probably hated it Sbahle hates it when I do things over the top for her ... She your typical down to earth kind of a girl "

He nodded " so what did koko say "\_he asked

Me : ... Aish koko told me about the importance of isiko ...and plans changed "\_

Me : I don't know how Sbahle will feel about this "

—

Langa: come down she will love it "

Come take a walk with me "

Me : I only have one shot to do this and do it right but I fuckin blew it by having a fight with her on



the very same morning of when I plan to surprise her with a wedding "

Him : its just a fight ... It will blow over she loves you "

Me : now I'm even more scared to pop the question "

Him : technically she's already married to you I don't know why you want to go through this trouble of asking her to marry you again while she already your wife ?"

I looked at him

Him : ok I understand you want to make her day special ... Building memories and those future anniversary date I get you "

I shouldn't be asking her to marry me but since we arranged to marry each other I feel like I was robbed of that opportunity and worse part our wedding day will always be constant reminder that I lost my sister I can not celebrate my anniversary with her while my heart bleeds for the sacrifice my sister did for our family so by me giving her a white wedding its just creating new life memories I dialed her number again

Me : she is not picking up my call "

Him : I'll speak to Zoe to soften her up "

Me : thanks " fuck I love Sbahle so much that its driving me crazy .. She takes me to cloud nine with out even having sex with her she smart funny ambitious courageous she feisty and speak her mind she unapologetic and does not give a damn what people think or say about her she just perfect for me

He stopped and looked at me

Him : hay I meant to ask you this why must it happen during Luna eclipse "

I breath out lout " my people are very cultured and we believe in tradition more then anything Sbahle is my chosen Queen our union was arranged long before we were even born by our ancestors its not about uniting two families or two tribes but its dipper than that "

Him : how so ? "

I breath our loud

Me : it said that we need to consummate our first night together

on the day were the moon meet earth the blood moon represent birth of new life ... Its harvest moon ... But just like mother earth gives life its also takes life on that day a soul for a soul ... "

Him : what ?"

Me : if you remember well my wedding day last year was on the day that the blood moon was shining up in the sky that day I was suppose to plant a seed in Sbahle ...but Pam passed on and season changed and we fought to an extent that we almost broke up ... In fact we did .. But I knew that its not because I don't love her it has everything to do with our union not being blessed by our ancestors "

Me: so you telling me if you sleep with her now she won't get pregnant "

Me: she will ... Buy she will not give me an heir "

Him : wow ..."

Me : I can sleep with any girl but should they fall pregnant they will forever give me girls ... "

Him : like Sli gave birth to Zithelo a girl "

I nodded

Me : the reason why I abstained from sex and why is this is so important to me is that I'm the last leaving Mnguni ... I need Sons to carry my name and make my kingdom grow ... If I don't do it right its means my name will parish with me should I die "

Him : fuck that deep "

Me: I told you its dipper than just another

arranged marriage story "

Him : I see ... So you basically telling me that you have a season to have sex with her "

Me : I got a mark of beast the blood moon represent birth of new life ... Its harvest moon ... But just like mother earth gives life its also takes life on that day a soul for a soul ... "

Him : what ?"

Me : if you remember well my wedding day last year was on the day that the blood moon was shining up in the sky that day I was suppose to plant a seed in Sbahle ...but Pam passed on and season changed and we fought to an extent that we almost broke up ... In fact we did .. But I knew that its not because I don't love her it has everything to do with our union not being blessed by our ancestors "

Me: so you telling me if you sleep with her now she won't get pregnant "

Me: she will ... Buy she will not give me an heir "

Him : wow ..."

Me : I can sleep with any girl but should they fall pregnant they will forever give me girls ... "

Him : like Sli gave birth to Zithelo a girl "

I nodded

Me : the reason why I abstained from sex and why is this is so important to me is that I'm the last leaving Mnguni ... I need Sons to carry my name and make my kingdom grow ... If I don't do it right its means my name will parish with me should I die "

Him : fuck that deep "

Me: I told you its dipper than just another arranged marriage story "

Him : I see ... So you basically telling me that you have a season to have sex with her "

Me : I got a mark of beast blood of a beast and its heart I need to imprint Sbahle on the day of blood moon not only must she be my chosen one but she must be my mate "

Him : what ? "

Me : for me and her its more like mating season she is on heat so am I and we only got one short to restore our blood line its only happens twice in a year mid fall or late spring ... "

He thought for a second I guess his figuring which month we in its late October

Him : dude who are you? "

Me : I'm the last grate white lion of Mnguni people the last

descendent  
of the cursed fallen kings of the Ngonyama tribe "  
He looked at me with his moth wide open  
Me : your phone is ringing "  
Him : shit ! "  
He answered talk for a while and fist bump the air  
and hanged up  
Him : we good to go everything is set for tonight  
...and our guest They have arrived as well  
Me : how did you get to organise all this in such  
short notice "  
Him : I'm a millionaire dude I used my power ...  
Try that as well damn does it feel good "  
I busy out and laughed  
Him : go work your magic on her now I will take  
the crew with my jet and don't fuck this one up  
bro ... Please "  
I nodded  
Me : tanks again "  
Him : don't mention it ... I know you will do the  
sane for me " I ran back to the house took our  
bags car keys and speed off  
... I looked at the time I only got 20hrs to make  
this right  
Me : location of the girls " I called Langa and

asked him

Him : I already texted you "

Me : thanks "

.  
.

I Was finally able to convince Sbahle about going with me I could tell she was enjoying her self with the girls she looked so beautiful with her hair covering her left eye she pouted her lips and was typing on her phone

Me : Sthandwa sami "

Her : mmmm "

She did not look up

Me : I love you "

She looked up and smiled I swear I saw heaven in her eyes Sbahle got small mouth but a big smile

Her : I love you too "

She folded her legs and looked at me

" siyaphi manje "

I could not tell her that

Me : you will see soon ... "

I looked at her legs my eyes travel up to her thighs that short is not doing justice on my dick right now did I allow her to go to the mall dress like this? shit I found my self shifting on my seat she

was talking and my ear was ringing her moans  
when I go dip in her

Her : so .. " I felt her hands on my lap

Her : did you even hear what I was saying ?"

Me : sure of cause ... " I stood up what was she  
talking about? I need to stop picturing her naked I  
gulped down my drink I felt her hands on me  
damn Sbahle no ...

Her : so what was I saying " she bit her lower lip  
and looked up at me if I didn't know better I will  
say she is seducing me but how can she do that  
when I'm already her husbands.

within split second I was on top of her in the  
couch and she was panting I was  
devouring

her lips she was holding me tight we had some  
one clearing there throats I jumped up from her  
" sorry to disturb you Sir but may you buckle up  
we about to land it was one of the pilots

Me : ok thank you "

He smiled and gave me that look that say you  
lucky bastard I looked at Sbahle behind me and  
we bust out and laughed the things she do to me

.  
.



## Chapter 71

Sbahle \*\*\*

The minute the car stopped I jumped out and screamed i jumped up and down

" ooh my God Mvelo ... Ahhhhhh... "

I ran to him he picked me up and spined me around

He placed me down and I kissed him

" ooh my God "

I looked around at the view not in million years I thought I will come here I placed my hands on my mouth this man can sure make a girl have a heart attack he wrapped his hands around me hugging me from behind

Him : you like it "

Me : Mvelo we in fuckin Sun City are you kidding me I love it "

Him : come let's go inside " he pulled me by the hand and yoo this what you only see in the movies they greeted us and treated us like royalty that we are we signed in at the front desk my eyed were wondering around the Palace of the Lost City

Me : ooh my God ! "

I wanted to run around in every corner of this huge place it was so elegant and screamed expansive ...

Me : thank you I love the surprise "

He side smile " who said this was the surprise "

Me : Mvelo you going to give me heart attack "

He laughed trowing his head back the elevator looked like a room on its own Jesus Christ this place its just out of this world when we arrived in our room I screamed again our bellhop was in stitches he is the guy that suppose to carry our bag but he had just the door excess card hold up where is our bags ? Who cares we in the Palace of the Lost City I can stay naked in this place i don't mind

Mvelo : sorry about that my wife get overly excited at times "

Bellhop : I would be also if my husband booked the presidential room for me "

Mvelo laughed he tipped him and the guy left I was already in balcony and smiling to my self this view ooh my good I'm loving it I turned around and Mvelo was standing behind me smiling at me Him : there nothing that brings me joy to see that smile on your face "

Me : you make me so happy "

Him : I hate that I give you more tears of pain than joy " I walked to him and wrapped my arms around his neck tip toed and kissed him

Me : relationship are not easy ... We can not be smooth sailing trough this we human we make mistake and learn from them ... But know that I love you yes you drive me crazy and I feel like kicking your balls at time ... But there no other I rather be with then you "

He chuckled and placed his forehead on mine

Him : I just want to live the rest of my life loving you ... "

He turned me around to face the view

Him : look at the sky "

Me : wow ! "

At first it looked like fire works or light in the sky but then i noticed that it Spelling my name and was now glow-in-the-dark like stars

~~~Sbahle Bhengu will you marry me ~~~

I held my mouth what ! I turned around and found him on his knees he had another ring on the box I could not help but cry

Him : I love you so much. I just want to be with you. We will laugh together we will smile together

we will cry together we will share our sadness and happiness. There is no place beautiful for me in this world but when you are with me every place and everything looks beautiful. I just want to be with you always.... Will you make me the happiest man on the earth and be my wife "

Me : I am your wife " I said with sobs

Him : you were chosen from me they said you will make the perfect Queen ... Not once I thought that I will fall in love with you ... My family chose you for me ... But I'm now here on my knees choosing you for me .."

I cried again what is this man doing to me right now

Him : baby remember your brother broke my knees I can't stay in this position for long unless you want to be married to a handicap "

I laughed and nodded

Me : of course I will marry you you big baby .. " he took off my existing ring and put on my right ring finger and the new one he put it on my left ring finger it was bigger and heavy white gold trimmed with gold and a huge diamond rock

He tried standing up but he flinched

I helped him up and he held my face and kissed

me like his life dependent on it

Him : I love you ... Ndlovukazi yami "

I smiled at him and kissed him this foreign filling  
came rushing back his kiss always in light them  
the worst way

Him : go take a bath I have placed reservation for  
a romantic dinner "

Me : you have all this figured out and planned out  
"

Him : anything for you my Queen thank you for  
making me the happiest man alive "

Me : I love you ... '

Him : I love you more "

He ran me a bath while I took pic of my rock and  
posted it ... Minutes later he came out with towel  
wrapped around his waist the house there one he  
was drying his hair

Me : I tough you running me bath "

Him :i did that and also took a shower ... Now go  
we running late "

I looked at him his so sexy

He looked at his watch

Him : baby please go ... "

to think about it that all he has been doing today  
is looking at his watch

Me : why don't we skip dinner ... " I took of my top and short he swallowed hard

I made my way to him with my matching bra and panty

Him : baby ... Sbahle ... God damit " I was kissing him on his jawline on his neck

I made my way to him with my matching bra and panty

Him : baby ... Sbahle ... God damit " I was kissing him on his jawline on his neck my hands were going up his abs ... "

Him : baby please stop .. Let's do this ... After ...

Fuck ... " my hands were grabbing on his shaft and he was hard he pulled me to him and smashed his lips on mine we slowly moved It was Victoria falls falls down there on me and it was not helping that I'm kissing a naked man .. That I want so bad right now I felt him pushing me a bit

Me : what the fuck ?"

Him : geza ... " he was breathing so loud his eyes red his boner sticking out what wrong with Mvelo he clearly wants me but he does not want me... I was about to bite his head off but he shut the door on my face

Me : what wrong with you "

Him : I'll make love to you when we come back "

Me: Mvelo open this door and face me like a man "

Him : I can't.... Geza please "

Me : screw that !!! "

Him : I'll make it up to you after dinner I promise "

I tried pulling the door but he was holding on the other side

Me : I don't want dinner I want you damit

"

Him : I know ... God knows I want you two ... "

Me : open this door and have me then !! "

Him : I'm too horny I will hurt you ... Please baby when we get back you will have you're way with me I promise "

I clicked my tongue I was pissed I let go of the door and jumped into a bath tub I was in no mood for dinner I was just going stay here as long as I can nxa

I took my long deserving bath I have never touch my self before and right now I am tempted to do it I thought that if I jump in the water it will stop the twitching but warm water just slapped my lady part and made it worse I've been with Mvelo for almost 12 months now Ok I'm also counting

the time we were separated but what the heck that's not point all I'm trying to say is that we should have long had sex married for goodness sake .

if he is able to make a baby when he was 18 years than what will it stop him to give in to me he is asexually active all his friends are he can never be the odd one out .

I mean we We love each other and get on amazingly well. However...he doesn't initiate sex with me. he can be all over me hugging and kissing me doing oral holding my hand saying how pretty I look and how attractive he thinks I am. This is all very well but I wish he'd show it in the bedroom!

He values me so much " I don't want to hurt you " " if we do with bow you might jot even walk " " I want to make love to you not fuck you " brother please i need you dick in what ever way it my body and I committed my self to you to have me any way you want ... I'm even acting all kind of slutty and whore'sh trying to initiate sex with him but his not budging I feel this is going to be root of the problem in this marriage maybe I should have not I agreed to marry him till he lay me down.



Just speak to him Sbahle they say haybo We've spoken about this many times trying to get to the root of the problem but with no luck! The funny thing is that he has no difficulty's in getting erect but when it comes to having sex...this is another matter. He wants me as much as I want him maybe I should pray about this or we should see someone .

I clicked my tongue drained the water and I wat meet by three lady's in my room oh the other lady is gay any way they looked at me and smiled

Me : aahh hello "

They smiled " good evening Mrs Mnguni your husband sent us to you to prepare your for your date ... I'm siya your hair stylist this is Perl she will do your make up and ma Thandi will do the fitting of your dress "

Me :where is this husband of mine ?"

Ma Thandi : baby please take a seat we running out of time you took long in that bathroom " she giggled I was still like what the fuck is going on but Siya was already on my hair

.  
.

## Chapter 72

Sbahle \*\*\*

" we done "

Siya turned me around I looked at my self in the mirror and I almost touched my face but Perl stopped me before I can I looked at my dress my hair I was looking like a new person

Ma Thand: you look like an angel "

For a moment I I thought this dress was hideous but when I got it on it was so beautiful it was a long rose gold metallic dress with roses embroidery

patens and lacy details the dress alone was beautiful but wen you add it long with a lacy embroidery tutu it looks like a wedding dress something I will wear in my wedding day since I hate the traditional white

Ma/T : just put it on you look beautiful on it "

Me: it looks like a wedding dress and difficult to walk on "

Perl : I'll help you with it ... Beside you have an exclusive dinner for two at roof top so who will see you ... Just make you husband happy he

bought this dress for you to wear for him tonight "

Me : I don't know about .. This "

Siya walked in ... " time is up ... Come on girls ... "

They took there this ignoring to move this tutu that had a tail on it was not your typical umbrella or princess dress but it was long with tail augh for once let me just make Mvelo happy and do as per his his instruction

So here we are on the elevator going up and when we got there the door opened I was meet by my mother

Me : maka Sbahle ? "

Her : hallo baby ... "

" What are you doing here " I asked her as we hugged she started crying and just like that I saw a huge tent behind her

Me : what going on ? "

Perl gave her something she moved being me and placed it on my head

Her : its your wedding day "

Ooh my God no ... What ?

She stood in front of me and I noticed that her dress was the same colour as mine but just different make and shape

Her : he loves you ... He has proven that to me

and to your brothers that to him its not just an  
arranged marriage he truly loves you and I will be  
honed to walk you down the Ilse

Me : mom ! "

Her: ungakulinge ukhale save those tears for  
Mnguni ... I love you Sthandwa sami I'm so proud  
of the women you are ... "

She kissed my mouth

Siya : its time ma "

I looked at mom and she nodded

Mom pulled the veil over my face she gave me a  
my bouquet

it was white and cream roses she held my hand  
tight the curtain

was raised and just on queue our song played I  
just started to crying

John legend - All of you

~~~

Cause all of me

Loves all of you

Love your curves and all your edges

All your perfect imperfections

Give your all to me

I'll give my all to you

You're my end and my beginning

Even when I lose I'm winning  
'Cause I give you all all of me  
And you give me all all of you

~~~

as I walking down the red Capet I notice that this was secluded even I'm counting maybe 25 people here my family his family and our friends my eyes meet with Mvelo he was wearing Designer Gold Wedding Suits he looked so deliciously Handsome in his Slim Fit Suits rose gold Jacket and Pants crispy white shirt he was wearing matching Vest with no Tie or bowtie on he was

casual but smart as always you yababa umuntu Wami

My mom gave him my hand he cried oh God his such a baby now his going to make me cry

Mom : take care of my baby Mnguni "

Me: with all my life ma "

He sniffed he looked at me and smiled with tears in his eyes " you so beautiful " he mouth and I looked down

" we are gathered here today ..." I looked up at the person I know that voice Nkonzo so he was telling the truth that his a pastor his so young

He continued doing his thing all along I was looking in Mvelo eyes we did not write our vows we declare our love everyday to each other no need to do it in front of the crowd so we went with the Basic Protestant Vows

Nkonzo : will start with you Sbahle you will say after me ok .." I nodded

Langa gave me his ring

Nkonzo : I Sibahle Ntombikayise Bhengu ...

Me :I Sibahle Ntombikayise Bhengu take thee Mvelo Trevor Mnguni\_ to be my wedded husband to have and to hold from this day forward for better for worse for richer for poorer in sickness and in health to love and to cherish till death do us part according to God's holy ordinance; and thereto I pledge thee my faith and myself to you."

I slide his ring on his finger I looked up and saw a tear coming down so o decided to wipe it and every one said

" ncooooh " Mvelo said his vows same as mine and he slide a small wedding band on my finger I guess it the missing piece of my engagement ring he gave to me earlier

Nkonzo : by the power invested in me .. I now

pronounce you husband and wife ... Hayke Mvelo  
you may kiss your bride "

He lifted my Vail up and kissed me every one was  
clapping guy whistling and girls screaming every  
one was on there feet and this man of mine was  
going on and on till I pinched him and bite his lip

Me : hallo my mom is here "

Him : my grandmother is here "

I laughed and music started playing and mom  
came and hug us so was his grandmother my  
Aunts and friends

After a lot of congratulations the event  
coordinator escorted then yo reception area  
After the ceremony

After a lot of congratulations the event  
coordinator escorted then yo reception area

After the ceremony the bride and groom often go  
out for photographs with the bridal party

But we had no bridal party it was me and him

This place was elegantly decorated and it looked  
like a garden wedding the lighting the flowers it  
was just perfect

Me : a surprise wedding Mvelo a whole surprise  
wedding and

you never gave me a clue about my wedding day "

I smiled for the camera

Him : you over think things you would never agreed to this "

We change position instructed to sit like this stand like this Mvelo lips was on mine the whole time

Him : you look beautiful in this dress "

I blushed and thanked him

Mvelo : can we sit down now man I believe my wife is tired"

He did not wait for him to answer but called perl with his hands ... Yo this man can command you for days Perl came to me

Her : I'm just going to powder you nose and take you Vail off "

I nodded

Her : you husband got a good taste in clouding this dress fits you like a glove "

Me : he was not even wearing a tie on his wedding day "

Mvelo : hay I can hear you " he was with the photographer looking at our pics

I chuckled

Perl : that about it enjoy your night "

I smiled at her Mvelo held my hand

Him : we not going to stay long in here ok "



Me : why because its our reception and this people came to support us "

Me : tough luck ... They got an open bar and weekend in sun city all expenses paid what other support do they need " he kissed me and grab on my ass pulling close to him

Him : can you feel why we must leave early tonight "

I swallowed hard feeling his boner

Him : I never brake a promise " I was hot instantly

.

I like how everything was in one place we move to the other side where there was reception Mvelo hired a D.J. and he was playing our jams that just create an ambience in the venue we enter the reception venue

Menzi : every one welcome Mr and Mrs Mnguni " every one turned and clapped hands we were greeted by Congratulations

Me: who made him the MC "

Mvelo : probably himself " we laughed

. once were on our seats Mvelo nodded to the event coordinator the bar was opened and starters were served.

Mvelo call Menzi

mvelo : how may I terms are in you list ? "

Menzi : 7 "

Mvelo : that Two much Mr MC ... Cut that list short how many people are saying speeches "

Menzi : its a surprise wedding so its a open mic "

mvelo : INI .... No make the list now ... I don't have time ..."

Menzi chuckled and shook his head Once the starters have been cleared Menzi welcome everyone and propose a toast to us he told them its going to be an open mic but no long speeches Wedding speeches are meant to be fun and short but in most cases they tend to go on for a bit. Speakers often embark on trips down memory lane or spend time thanking particular guests for coming from far and wide to be with the happy couple on their big day. Babo Ncane was too much Jesus talking about when i was growing up who want to listen yo that finally the speeches are finished I breath out loud the main course is served. Mvelo was busy looking at his watch all along he is sure in a hurry

Me: you look tense are you ok ..'

He smiled and kissed me and glanced at his watch again

Me : another surprise for me in store ?"

Him : yep and it will blow your mind " I smiled and his hands rubbed my thighs sending butterflies to my tummy so

After dessert is eaten we were called to open the stage with fist dance as Mr and Mrs so here we are dancing in slow motion to "A Thousand Years"—Christina Perri

Mvelo busy saying he wish this dress was off he wish to lick Me all over I was panting and he knew very well his effect on me he called Menzi and told him that the next song must be " helo by Beyonce " so that I can sing for him as requested the song played and I sang along he was on cloud nine we

enjoy the first dance to a song of our choice.

"May I have this dance " it was Mloni Mvelo nodded and I danced with him

Him : you look happy "

Me : I am "

Him : is he treating you oright ?"

Me : yes Mloni he is treating me good "

Him : I'm just a phone call away you know ..."

Me : I know Bhuti Wami I know ..." I placed my head on his chest his the closest thing to my

father and no doubt I will miss him

The floor was packed now and every one was dancing and my shoes were killing me so i moved back to my seat

Him : are you still good "

Me : yes I am ...\_"

He called Menzi ...

Menzi : hayi Mfethu you making my job difficult "

Mvelo: we need to cut the cake now ... "

Menzi : Dude people are still dancing "

Mvelo : make it happened or we leaving here without cutting the cake "

Menzi huffed and walked away

Me : what the rush babe "

Him : you will see " he kissed my cheek minutes later we were called to cut the cake and it was served to our guest Mvelo was speaking to his Koko and he nodded more like he was listening to her Didy is to close with Bright and she has not once talked to me yooo young love my brother Nsika could not come he was attending some business meetings being a king is pretty demanding

Mvelo : babe it time for us to go "

I looked at him like really

He offered me his hand to hold what can I say it written in black and white now that I'm officially his I held his hand The MC announced our departure and Typically we the newlywed couple are the first to leave the reception. Guests join together to form a tunnel with their hands through which may may exit the room. As an exit song we file through the living tunnel thanking our guests along the way.

" I put that sexy number in you bag don't forget to wear it tonight " Zoe whispered in my ear. I

laughed and rolled my eyes

Stepping outside I noticed clouds changing shades looks like going to be full moon by midnight

.  
.

## **Chapter 73**

Sbahle \*\*\*

We took a helicopter ride from sun city to The Timbavati Game Reserve is located at the border line between Hoedspruit in and Acornhoek I just believe its located in Mpumalanga Province.

the ride was quite Mvelo was miles away he will do the rubbing of his hands together he only does that when his nervous or hiding something from me

I kept brushing his arm and he will smile and kiss my forehead.

We finally landed and this place it was majestic so peaceful it a safari lodge and it's reminded me of the Ngonyama royal house the room looked so earthly with Laps roofing and wooden finish my man carried me inside bridal style and kissed me passionately before placing me down

Me : baby this place it's so beautiful "

I said walking around he was already having a drink and his face right now I could not read

Me : Mnguni is there something wrong ? '

He looked at his watch and held my hand

We set in couch outside over viewing the lake and the night Sky

Him : there something I need to tell you "

Me : not bad news on my wedding night Mvelo I can't deal "

He swallowed and looked into my eyes

Him : do you know why my Village is called the Ngonyama village " ( the land of the lions) I shook

my head no

Him : this is where it all began ... This is where I became a Mnguni "

Me : i don't understand here in Timbavati? "

He nodded

all I know is that The Timbavati land is famous for the white lions that inhabit the area. First discovered centuries ago they have become the subject of much interest and debate over the years... But what does that have to do with him ? And his family?

He looked at his watch one more time and at the sky as if he in a hurry or running out of time to think about it that all he has been doing today .

Him : I need to tell you this before we consummate our wedding night ... Because i for one I don't know what going to happened once our body collide "

Me : Mvelo kwenzakalani ? "

Him : my land is called the Ngonyama tribe because of the curse in our blood we have the mark of the white lion ... "

Me : what ?... Curse ?"

Him : this was done to protect my people and the Mnguni blood line centuries ago we had a lot of

reveries and enemy's wars and fight was our daily  
mean my grate grate grate grand father's meet up  
with a powerful oath-breaker some call them  
wizard or a witch

who marked him with the mark of the beast but  
little did he know that having mark it means that  
every Mnguni child that is born a boy will have it "  
Me : I don't understand "

Him : you know the story of a wolf that bite a man  
during full moon and man will be curse and shift  
to werewolf every full moon "

I nodded " that only a myth "

He side smile " its not ... I have a blood of great  
white lion the heart of the beast  
and during this day of the blood moon it comes  
alive "

Me : what ! Are you telling me that you are a  
shifter ? "

He looked down and nodded I held my mouth he  
was scared very scared that he even started  
shaking this was hard for him to tell me he kept  
on rubbing his hands together and was not  
looking at me in the eyes

I held his hand and looked at him

Me : its ok ... I understand you were born with this



blood its not your fault Mvelo I love the man in  
you you my life curse on not I'm stuck with you ...  
Through sickness and in health I said those vows  
few hours ago and I meant it

Him : thank you ... He looked at his watch again  
and the sky "

Me : what wrong ... You keep looking at your  
watch every second and at the sky what's going  
on Mvelo ... " I knelled in front of him and held his  
face allowing him to look at me

Him : I'm scared this is my first time with a women  
on this very sane day ... I'm scared I will hurt you  
... "

He told me about the importance of us

Making love today but he called it mating because  
of the animal in him he told me that's the reason  
why I'm always horny this day its because I'm in  
season he seem to know more a lot about my  
ancestral history then I do we were going to do  
the deed or

mating when the moon becomes visible to tell  
you I'm scared this is now planned there is time  
and precision that we need to follow.. Its so  
calculated and we not going with a flow its an  
understatement than was terrified ...he spoke

about not being in control of the monster in him that might devour me

Me : its ok I know you will not hurt me intentionally " I pulled his face and kissed him he pulled me up and moaned in my mouth every time we in contact my hormone level rise up this may be my advantage if I feel pleasure i won't feel pain

Him : go take a bath I will join you shortly "

I nodded and made my way to the bathroom I took of my dress and underwear getting under the hot shower my mind was playing what he just disclosed to me I was on panic mode

I'm terrified it was all ok when I wanted sex without getting any I'm having anxiety attacks now I'm having pre-sex jitters I'm not ready for this ... I breathing out loud as I let the water run on my body trying to block all this voices .

I felt his hand on me for the first time in my life I froze at his touch he kiss my neck I keep telling my self to relax his my man he turned me around held me

tight I remember the man I fell in love with he was hard and my body betrayed me I wanted him He pinned me on the cold tiles and he roughly

kissing me his hands grab on my breast and he  
Squeeze giving me pain and pleasure at the same  
time

I let out moan his leaving trails of wet kisses on  
my neck his softly handling my body and just like  
that I relaxed

Him: I want you so bad "

Me : I want you too"

He scooped me up I felt his shaft too close on my  
Nana I almost got a panic attack that his about to  
enter me but minutes later we on the bed .

And as always he took me places with his tongue I  
was screaming his name and holding to his hair I  
found my self pushing him to go dip in my vj I felt  
multiple pleasure I felt something sliding inside  
me it was a bit painful but it made the twitching  
stop and damn it felt Good

I realise he was using his figure he never did this  
before but tonight we going all the way this was  
Woaw ... I held on to the bed sheets his fingers  
was deep inside me going in and out and his  
thump was rubbing my clit this here is mad skills  
he was smashing my lips and his other Hand was  
playing with my nipple I was a ball of mess I have  
climaxed so many times and I knew that he

enjoyed what he was going to me  
Me : Mvelo .. Ooh mmmmy God ..." My juices  
splashed out  
Me : ooh baby yes " I screamed out  
loud I was shaking uncontrollable my knees so  
weak I could not even feel my legs he did not wait  
for me to come down from my high  
He started rubbing up and down my wet pussy his  
finger gliding over my clit as I moaned from the  
pleasure. I opened my legs slightly more giving  
him more freedom he went lower and soon  
entered his middle finger into my pussy and I was  
so wet and it felt so good He took his figure and  
licked it he  
turned my head to kiss him making sure I taste my  
juices in him .  
he rubbed my G spot I knew he wanted me to  
squirt again this right here felt like  
torture in a most beautiful way  
soon I started moaning as he gave me my orgasm  
and boom my ball of pleasure hit me hard that I  
screamed his name My legs went weak again I  
almost collapsed maybe I did I don't know  
He removed his hand and I turned around to kiss  
him telling him that it felt amazing he did not

respond and smashed his lips on mine biting my lip

I know that all good things must come to an end and I've had an incredible ride. I just wish we ended it on the right note but table turned because what came next I wish I never wanted sex the way I did before his big he can't feet I was running away from him on the bed he He pulled me by my legs and got in between my legs

Me:Mvelo ... " my voice was braking my heat was beating outside my throat with fear

Him : relax Sbahle ... " I tried to push him off he pined both of my hands above my head he was a beast his eyes changed he was groaning I saw the blood moon so big on the window as if its a painting on the wall it looked so close

Me : Mvelo you hurting me "

He was kissing me his tip was just in my entrance but it was so painful

Me : baby please be gentle .. " he was in his own wor or battle with the beast inside him

I closed my eyes as he tried to push in

Him : look at me Sbahle " he commanded i have a high Pain tolerance but this was the worst pain I

have ever felt

I felt a tear drop from my eyes I never picture my first time having sex to be like this

He pushed again moaning so loud and pulling my hair

Him : fuck .. Looks at me" he said grinding his teeth

Me : kubuhlungu Mvelo "

Him : shuuuuu I'm sorry " there was nothing sincere in his voice I did not know this man I wanted him off me i

I couldn't look at him

" I'm sorry ... " he pushed I was screaming he was breathing heavily in my ear he was half way he was breathing heavily

Him : look at me sweetheart please "

I shook my head I wanted to close my legs it was burning it felt like thousand knives were slicing me there he held my head in position our eyes locked and he did the last push I felt something pop or braked I cried I screamed I wanted to get him of me I was biting and punching hi my tears were blinding me

Him : I'm sorry... Its going to get better ...

Phephisa Sthandwa sami "

Me : stop Mvelo .. Get off me ... Please you hurting me ... " he was dip inside of me not moving but I felt his big cock on my uterus

Me : I'm in pain Mvelo ... Please "

Him :hle - hle ... Babe ... Stop and look at me "

He held my head and i looked at him he was also crying ...

Him : focus on me my face ... I love you ... "

Me : its hurt ... "

Him : I know but let me make it feel better ...

Allow me to do this ... "

I was not buying it

Him : look at me ... Don't over think it look at me "

he kissed me sending mixed emotions to my body he started to move and that pain came rushing back again he was moving slow but I could still feel it like he was slicing me with blades splash me with hot water mixed acid on my Nana He had a monster cock Imagine a can of soda except longer and curved This was my first time having sex and this man had no mercy I was not prepared He gave me no warning I soldiered on trying not to cry to much but this missionary position he was killing me because he had power to move my legs up he will kneel and pull Me to him he will pin my

legs on my chest he will spread them wide open  
I had no way to escape I was his meal  
and I swear that was the worst pain I've ever been  
in. Imagine someone shoving a curved can of  
Monster energy drink into a small knife wound.  
That would've felt nicer. I had to stop him from  
moving fast because it felt like being torn in half. I  
made the biggest mistake you can make by trying  
to hold him with my legs but I was wide open for  
him and he dive in  
"Mmmmm ... " he groaned loader  
My walls were stretching and tearing  
The pain was not bearable..  
Him : I'm sorry Sthandwa sami .." He said picking  
up his pace  
He was moaning clearly he was enjoying himself I  
on the other hand i was crying  
I was waiting for pleasure to kick in but no luck  
his groans becamelouder and louder he was  
moving fast I looked at him I could not recognise  
him I took it all in the pain the bit of pleasure that  
comes and go  
he owned my body he was ramping on my poor  
pussy my legs in the air he was going dip he was  
cursing and started tossing me around like a pan



cake in the pan my voice was gone I only had silent cries now taking in the pain praying that he finish.

he had put a pillow under my tummy and was having me from the back I felt my pussy tear up this the most painful position

Me : Mvelo please..." I cried pleading with him it fell of deaf ears he was going fast his grip on my waist made it hard for me to escape

I buried my face on the other pillow and cried if you have seen the episode of game of thrones Khaleesi daenerys and Drogo wedding night when she had sex for the first time That how i feel right now . he will bite me pull my hair strangled me roughly squeeze my breast I'm sure my body has bruises by now I don't know when he came but I know we never took a brake to cuddle he was on top of me till the sun came up ... My first night with my husband was a nightmare.

- .
- .
- .

## Chapter 74

Sbahle \*\*\*

I was woken up by loud lion roar it was as if it was inside this room my head was so heavy my body dead tired the sound got louder and louder I slowly opens my eyes and I was meet by a pride of white lions seating outside patio I wanted to lift my head and look at what happening I was not sure if I was dreaming or if it was happening for real my eyes were to heavy that I closed them again and allowed the loud road to be my lalabye Later on I felt someone lifting me up I slowly opened my eyes I was meet by Mvelo face he looked worried sad he placed me on bath tub the minute the water touch my lady parts I wanted to cry ... Me :ishuuuuuu" he slowly help me seat down. The pain was written all over my face as I frown. Last night event came rushing back I felt his hands wiping my tears he was avoiding eye contact with me he stood up and walked away I was so emotional that I just broke down and cried the bathtub had herbs roots and twigs I'm guessing it suppose to cure me down there or something .

I looked into space trying to understand why Mvelo lost control last night disregard my plea my cries overlooking the pain he was inflicting on me Zoe told me that There are two main tales that get spun around having sex for the first time. One that as long as you have sex with the right person it'll be magical and beautiful. And two no matter who you have sex with for the first time it's bound to be awkward and painful as hell ... I never thought it will be like that with me and Mvelo I wanted the magic the sparks and stars but Mvelo took me to hell instead.

... Why is there so much hype in intimacy when it hurt like this ... he took my pride in the most brutal way imaginable ... I cried thinking about how I told him to stop I told him its hurts "I'm sorry ... " that what he kept saying in the middle of consensual sex. His hands firm on my hips his breathing ragged in my ear. I turn my head to the side twist my mouth into a frown. He's having trouble getting off trouble in stopping he tells me He'll finish soon he promises One quick thrust that lasted hour's.

"It hurts" I tell him.

"shuuuui baby?" He says without pausing. There's

a slight annoyance in his voice as he continues  
“just relax hle -hle ” he kissed me trying to  
convince Me

Although I have a pretty high pain tolerance I did  
expect some pain. I mean that’s what i was told:  
'There will be pain when you lose your virginity ' .  
But what I felt it was more than pain it was worse  
The pressure didn’t feel good it just felt Painful  
very painful I had been aroused enough even  
climaxed multiple times but still pain  
overpowered pleasure.

I don’t remember the feel of his hands I don’t  
remember his caresses I don’t remember the  
words he said to me after we started having sex. I  
do remember his heaviness pressed against me  
the way he pinned me down by the very act of  
what we we're doing; his erratic persistent  
insistent movements his loud pleasure and my  
pain. I remember speaking this quiet muffled  
sentences " Mvelo please " But it’s unclear — I  
will remind myself later for days for weeks for  
years — why did I exactly have to say that " mvelo  
please " . It’s too noncommittal it does not give  
him a warning that he must stop its more likely  
saying I'm enjoying the deed as he was ?

“Just let me finish” he says. “It won’t be much longer ... Let me give you pleasure ” he takes his time with no hurry in the world . He's slumping on top of me and though I'm not sure why but the pain was too much i could not help it I’m starting to cry again When he sees me he's angry hurt sad I can't read him Why didn't I tell him I was crying and why didn't I say I wanted him to stop? Put my feet down maybe convince him even more maybe he would have ... He feels weird now now he feels guilty. He can't look me in the eyes

I have ruined this for him for us he told me this will happen I trusted him as my husband I gave him my body my pride its my duties as his wife to give him an heir but will sex always be like this with him ?

I didn't here him come in but I felt him rubbing a sponge so gentle all over my body he bath me dried me curried me to the bedroom it looked clean with new linen he than took body oil and massage and buttered my body

" mmm ouch " I flinched when he ran his hands on my back and my neck I felt his hands running and tracing on my back he was breathing out so loud he took a gown and helped me wear it he took a

tray of food it was Oat meal fruit salad and English breakfast with tall glass of juice I looked at the Trey and looked at him no words were spoken and he was looking down the whole time it killed me to see him like that

Me : M....Mv ...Mvelo " i finally said I tried to hold him

He stood up placed the food on the side table and he stood by the sliding door looking outside I tried to stand up but I felt my legs getting weak and my lady parts still sore and burning

Me : ouch ... " I said falling back on the bed ... He moved fast as a lightning and helped me get under the covers he set next to me and feed me the fruit salad i pushed the spoon away as a sign that I'm full

Me : I need pain killers please ... "

He gave me a glass of juice and i shook my head I know realize that I'm in pain my head my body my lady parts .. I'm exhausted to a point where I can't keep my eyes open there was a lot I wanted to say but I words could not come out I felt him place his hand on my abdominal areas and rubbed it he was hugging me from behind

Him : I'm sorry Mabhengu "

His words alone just ignited Tears on my eyes he  
cuddle me as I cried in his arms

.  
.

Mvelo \*\*\*

When the sun came I noticed that Sbahle was out  
of it I felt like something was moved from my eyes  
I was back to my seances memory from last night  
events came flashing back and giving me a  
splitting headache

" ooh my God what have done !! " I held my  
mouth

I jumped up of from the bed and notice blood ...  
Lot of blood on the sheet I rushed to Sbahle I felt  
her pulse she was still alive but the bruises the  
marks oh her body made my heart stop for a  
second.

I notice a lion imprint on her forearm sh's finally  
my mate ...I should be happy but how can I when I  
left her in this state . The imprint looks like dust  
paw print but not like dust the imprint can not be  
removed its like a birth mark

I ran my hands on her face " I'm Sorry I didn't  
mean to ... If i only knew it will hurt you like this I  
would have not agreed to this " \_ I wiped my eyes

and I decided to remove the bloody sheets making sure I don't wake her up it scared me that her body was lifeless when I moved her after placed her on the clean linen I went to my bag took out herbs koko gave me that Sbahle will need to bath on

I was disturbed by lion roaring on my door step I open the sliding door and found a pride of white lion two males and four lionesses when my eyes meet with the male lion it bowed it head and set down and just on queue the other followed and set down my phone started ringing and I rushed out to answer it the lions started to roar and I knew that might wake up Sbahle no doubt damn it

Me: hello " answered in the bathroom busy preparing Sbahle's bath water koko started calling out my clan name

~~~Mnguni mpangazitha lwandle a liwelwa li  
welwa yizi nkonjane ze zulu wena o wezi nyawana  
e zi shlosa e zi hamba e shlabathini so lwandle  
~~~

She was chanting and going on and on

Her: oooh walivusa ikhaya mntanami siyabonga " ( you have rebuilt your father house )



I had no idea what she was talking about I was more worried about Sbahle's state I probably never going to make love to her if her first experience turned out to be such a nightmare yet again my ancestor have fucked me over what if she wakes up and leaves me or worse cry rape she got bruises and and most probably sore on her vj I could go down for a long time she told me time and time again that I was hurting her but the beast inside of me devoured her the sex was raw and disgusting for a first timer how am I going to say sorry to her how am i going to fix this fuck I hate being Mnguni !!

Me : koko Sbahle she .. She's hurt I hurt her "

Her : she will be fine use the herbs I gave you "

Me : koko you don't understand I hurt her emotionally she's scared for life ... I hurt her ... It was not suppose to be like that .. She was pure koko ... I deflowered her in the most brutal way ever "

Her : she was chosen for a reason have faith in her "

Me : what if she leaves me " or arrest me no one will believe that I'm cursed and have a beast that comes out during eclipse

She laughed she clearly is in happy mood today the laughing praising and thanking me hallo I just fucked my wife .. brutally fucked her and she bleed she got bruises. She probably can't walk ooh God she will need to pee .. Jesus that shit will burn her

Her : uyangizwa kodwa "

Me : koko I need to go "

Her : Mvelo Awukhule phela I'm talking to you and your head is miles away ... I hear lion roaring in the background ... "

Me : I'm sorry I'm just worried about Ndlonkulu ... Yes there are lions here there have been roaring for a while now On my door step "

Her : do you know what that mean ? "

Me : I don't know koko ... There is a lot going trough my head right now "

Her : your wife is carrying a Mnguni heir.. That's why the lions are there "

I felt my head spinning my body started to feel heavy I found myself crouching down

Me : what ?"

Her : remember the story I told you about the reason why your father was summoned to come back home after spending years in the UK "

Me: because my grandfather woke up one morning with a pride of lion on his door step "  
Her : and that was the day you were conceived ...  
"

I felt tears of joy burning my eyes ... I fell down on the floor and sank down

Her : looked like we expecting an heir ...

Siyabonga Mnguni ... Umphathe kahle

umaBhengu she our only hope for surviving "

She praised me again and hang up I placed my hands on face ooh my God I created a human again after sometimes the noise died down the lions were gone called room service for food I made my way to her and lifted up gently not to wake her she opened her small eyes but I was to ashamed to look at her.

When she flinched the minute I placed her on a bath tub I felt pain in my heart her lone tear rolled down her cheek that alone made me want to take away the pain from her or better yet erase her memory she kept on searching for my eyes but I avoided eye contact

I walked out and cried outside it pains me that I put her in such traumatic experience yet I claim I love her I wiped my tears as soon as room service

walked in I decided to give my wife a bath maybe try talking to her i found her in the very same position I left her in looking into space.

Where do I start ? what to I say ? I gently gave her a sponge bath she just looked at me I dried her and carried her to our bedroom when I was Applying body lotion on her body I saw scratch marks on her back I did this to her she flinched and asked me for pain killers I just looked down I I can't give her that she expecting so all I can do is try to heal her with herbs at least

She wanted to talk but shame guilt and regret was overpowering me I hate telling her I'm sorry I just want to spend my day loving her with minimum hiccups after feeding her I knew that she was weak and exhausted I decided to spoon her and ran my hands on tummy

Me " I'm sorry MaBhengu" when she hurt I hurt and when she cry Icry too we cuddle up and I allowed her to cry .

.

## Chapter 75

Sbahle

I woke up with a feeling of some one looking at me I slowly opened my eyes and I was meet by his gaze the minute our eyes meet he looked down how long will he keep doing this ? I hate it when he has Emotional detachment towards me it does not just happen out of the blue; there is always something behind it or triggering it And the issue here is what happened last night . Its like we both have this inability or fear of talking through the issues he did something that he will not forgive him self for I on the other hand I can not stop how much he hurt me and took my pride as if I was some random fuck of his.

This kind of disconnect I know may last for weeks if we do not address it we both know there is something wrong but we too hesitant to bring it up because of the fear once reaction.

I suddenly had this urge to pee and now the problem is getting up my body is so tired it like I was hit by a train I started moving around slowly on the bed trying to sit up straight there is still no

much feeling on my legs Mvelo was by my side in an instance and help me to seat up he smelled good as always but still avoided eye contact even when I touched his hand

Me : I need to use the bathroom "

He did not think twice but scope me up and curried me to the bathroom he placed me on pan and looked at me

Me : may I have privacy please " he debated it for a while in his

head and stepped out I looked at my thighs I had black and green bruises which makes me think if my thighs look like this what does the rest of my body look like

" ahhhh....". Oh father God my pee burnes so much I wanted to jump but was to weak

Mvelo : are you ok..." He asked walking in I was biting on my lips so much that it might start to bleed this man was standing over me and looking at me with panic

Me: just go Mvelo I'm fine "

Him : you not ... And I'm not going any where "

I could tell that this burning feeling down town is caused by rough penetration I went trough last night when I was done I tried to rolled a tissue but

Mvelo got to it first ooh my God is he about to do what I think his going to do yes he just did he wiped me I feel like his making me a baby right now

He tried lifting me up but I stopped him

Me : just stop ... Stop please ... I can walk on my own "

He did not listen to me he does that a lot this days have his way with me he curried me and placed me on the bed he went back to the bathroom and flushed the toilet he came back with warm towel and spread my legs

Me : wenzini ? "

He did not answer me but gently wiped my nana ... He pulled the covers over me I huffed and pushed the covers away from me

He opened the sliding door stepping out and called room service ordering food I wanted to go outside I wanted to feel the sun and breeze on my skin this is my honeymoon I can not be stuck in bad all day

so I decide to try and stand down I slowly tried standing up I knew that I need to walk like a frog legs spread open because fuck my pussy is still sore ...

Every step I took I bite my lip and prayed I don't fall or hurt my self even more

Him : Sbahle what are you doing up !!" his voice was too commanding

almost making me lose balance

Him : what are you doing ? Sbahle you going to hurt yourself "

Me : I want to go outside and if you didn't notice I'm already hurt !"

He breath out loud he tried to lift me up and I stopped him

Me : just help me walk please "

Him : Sbahle ... You going to hurt ... "

Me : please i need to move using my legs "

He huffed held my waist and i held on to him walking was a mission but I need to push past the pain he finally placed me on my seat after what felt like hours walking outside he was about to dash off but I stopped him

Me : Mnguni ... "

He stopped

Me : please sit down .. "

He set on the other seat

Me : please come sit next to me ..." I was seating on two sitter one of those grass outdoor couches



Me: we need to talk .. " he looked down and rub his hands together he can't keep avoiding me like this and this thing of him not talking I can't deal with it

Me : talk to me please ... "

He just looked into space and thought for a while

Him : I'm tired of apologizing to you ... I'm tired of hurting you ... I hate that I make you cry more

than I make you laugh I'm angry at my self

I feel ashamed for what I had done. I don't have any excuses or what so ever

I should have not agreed to this whole blood moon bull shit I hurt you so much that I hate my self for for being a man your husband ...I should be protecting you for goodness sake !!

I regret getting in between your legs and taking your pride the way I did I wish I had control over my actions I wish I could turn back the hands of time and show you what my heart and soul had prepared for you for this night my goal is to give you the stars as the moon not the monster that ripped you apart and left you with traumatizing experience.

I take full responsibility for myself and my actions. I wouldn't pawn this to you again I did right by my

family and my ancestors and put you in harms  
ways yet again

I'm sorry it your first night with me turned out to  
be ... Oh my God ...the thought of it alone its in  
human ... "

He held his face I'm sure his crying ... I was a  
crying mess as well here I was thinking that I was  
the only one hurting but this man here is going  
through the worst he was never in control of his  
action his worst fears came to life he hurt me yet  
again

Me ; The first to apologize is the bravest. The first  
to forgive is the strongest. The first to forget is the  
happiest ... Can we move past on this it destroying  
you ... "

He shook his head

Me : Mvelo ... Baby please look at me "

He shook his head

Me : Mvelo please ! " I started to cry out loud

He held his ears

Him : please please ... Sbahle don't cry like no...no  
! " he stood up trying to walk away

Ooh my God its triggered events from last night I  
held his arm I hurting my self in the process but  
fuck that Mvelo is emotionally hurting my pain

can be on pause.

How we going to move past this my pain can be on pause.

How we going to move past this his sinking dip to a dark whole i can't allow that no I just can't

Me : Mvelo Trevor Mnguni look at me now "

He wiped his face with his hands

Me: ngiyakucela "

He slowly lifted his head up and looked at me his eyes red his nose red he looked pale he looked worry like the weight of the world is in his shoulders if I didn't know better I would say his been crying for sometime now I hate seeing him like this

Me : Mnyeni wami You're my backbone. You're my blessing. You're a piece of my heart. You're the air I breathe. And you're the strongest person I know and I'm so sorry for having to put you through this "

Him : Sbahle its not your fault "

I shook my head

Me : its not yours either ... You told me that you not sure what was going to happened you had no control of the astral projection that took place you're a good man because everything you do you

do it to put our family first this had to be done and yes its hurt but I'm willing to put it past me because I will be damn to loose you in this emotional battle you in right now you're slipping into the unknown and I hate that I'm going to be your nightmare for sometime now but let me be strong for you please Mnyeni Wami we are Team when you hurt I hurt too can we move past this please

Him : I'm really sorry ..."

Me : I know baby you do so now can I have my husband back "

He gave me a weak smile and he took my hand and kissed it ... His not ok I can see it I can feel it and I have no clue on how to help him I change position and shifted to place my head on his chest his to tense his brushing my hair and we get lost in our own thoughts.

Food came and he forced me to eat it was too healthy and I wanted meet oily and spicy food but all I ate was green stuff and with less meat

Him :i have prepared your bath water " he said sitting next to me

At least we talking now that Good his still not himself but I'm not giving up on him

Me: herbal bath ?"

He side smile and nodded

Him : it will make you feel better ... Help you with the bru... "

He swallowed and looked down I place my hand on his face

Me : Mnguni I'm fine ... Stop stressing about what happened last night "

Him : have you seen how your body looks ... What will people say if they see this marks on you Sbahle i inflicted pain in you "

Me : it was not intentionally ... I know that and you know that "

Him : its feels like I forced my self in to you I broke you Sbahle damn it you can't even walk "

Me :Mvelo !"

Him : just say it I'm a monster ! "

Me : stop putting words in my mouth "

Him : sbahle "

Me : just stop beating yourself about this will get trough this together it means I must hide here till I feel and look ok so be it ... But I'm not going to tolerate you crying and feeling like this its our honeymoon for goodness sake can you stop acting like we at a funeral !! "

Him : Sbahle dont raise your voice at me "

Me : than stop having this pity party and let's create memories "

He opened his mount and closed it

I was in his arms again and we were going to the bath room

He placed me into a bath tub and it still sore but not as it was before I looked at my arm there was a dark paw print

Me ; Mvelo "

He was giving me a sponge bath

" yini le " I asked him

Him : an imprint ... "

Me : a what ? "

Him : an imprinting is an involuntary lifetime attachment that binds the beast to a human mate according to our history .The werelion is then bound to protect and please this person for the remainder of his life."

Me : in other words I'm bound to you for life "

Him : you not only my chosen wife you also my mate now

He kissed my forehead

Me : wow ... So I'm not going to have any desires for any other man "

I was trying to light in up the mood but this man was not bugging he hasn't laughed today no kiss me in the mouth or touch me his just here but not here

Him : Mabhengu "

His commanding voiced warned

Me: I'm just joking ... But seriously not even a little "

Him : if you have a death wish continue speaking like this "

He was getting worked up this man of mine is so jealous

Me: ooh come on I'm bound to be the beast mate for the rest of my life yeey!"

I said rolling my eyes

Him : I'm different ... I do it different... "

I turned and looked at him I didn't understand what he was talking about

Him: Sex is bio-mechanical and instinctive we all know how to do it. Love making is slow sensual not goal oriented which allows us to experience the metaphysical being of oneness this type of love making is truly an art in itself... I was hoping to show you that on our wedding night but ... let get you out of this water its getting cold now "

I wanted him to go on but I still believe that sex intimacy subject is no go zone for now we just need to focus on getting better I guess .

.

## Chapter 76

Mvelo \*\*\*

" stop Mvelo you hurting me "

I pinned her down her loud screamed and wailing sirens

cries did not faze me or made Me stop I was sweating breathing heavily on top of her adrenaline was sky high I was moving fast humping fast and furiously the only sound that made me go faster was our skin smacking and slapping to each other she was screaming in pain I looked at her face that was smudge in tears and mucus she turned her head refusing to look at me I pulled her hair tight positioning her to look at me " please .... Stop ... Please "

Me : look at me "

Her : uyangilima "... She cried even more

I found my self strangling her she was making to



much noise the crying was getting to me now my grip so tight on throat  
her eyes turned back and she was gasping for air I looked at my hands they had blood on I look at bed it was red with a her pool of blood I looked at Sbahle she was unconscious her lifeless body just looking at me I tried yo shake her up she was gone

Me : Nono .... No ! Sbahle wake up wake up please ... No ! "

I rose up from the bed sweating and breathing heavily I looked beside me Sbahle was slipping peacefully this dreams are tormenting me now I can't sleep close my eyes with out reliving what happened last night I'm even afraid to touch my wife she tells me she is ok and we must move pass this but how can I when I'm still relieving in that nightmare every time when I look at her .

I jumped off the bed I was angry I was mad but mostly I'm sad and I wish I can forget but how because the men that slept with my wife I did not recognize him

I hate this curse in me I hate that I'm Mnguni I hate that this ancestors have way of fucking my life up for the sake of culture belief and putting

family first what about me my happiness ! ...  
Sbahle Is my happiness never wanted her first sex  
experience to turn out like this .

I felt my body heating up I felt him coming shit ...  
This always happened when I get angry fuck not  
this animal which destroyed my first night with  
my wife

I stepped out side trying to stop the shift the  
moon shined so bright that it triggered the curse  
to resurface ... I felt my bones cracking I kneeled  
down and screamed and just like that the beast  
took over the paws made the earth shake when I  
stepped on it ... I started to run this will be good I  
need to let it out of my system ....

.  
.

Sbahle \*\*\*

I don't know when sleep came but I woke up with  
a cold breeze hitting my face

Mvelo must have left the air con on or windows  
open I also wanted to go pee now aish Mvelo  
mani i was in deep sleep and was not planning on  
waking up

I decided to just sleep it through I turned around  
hoping to land on my men's chest but was meet

by an empty bed i frowned

Me : mvelo .. " I mumble but there was no answer

I ran my hands on the cold bed covers

Me: Mvelo ' I said a little bit louder I was  
expecting " yes baby ... I'm Here my love "

Buy the sound I heard was scary I sounded like a  
dip growling sound ok I'm in a bed alone with light  
turned off and there is something in this room I  
could feel it I could feel it breathing my only fear  
now was to turn around

Me : Mvelo?... I said now trying to confirm my  
fears " the sound filled the room again no... No...  
No ! Mvelo you can't do this to me I'm not ready  
not now I felt a drop of pee wetting my  
underwear

I slowly turned with foggy eyes from sleep and  
weak eyesight I doubt I will see any thing in the  
dark but I saw something moving from the  
shadows i tried seating up straight but my back  
was still painful

Me : ouch I cried ... "

What a emerged

from the shadows was enough to make me want  
to wet my bed I held my breath

Me : please ... Don't come close ! "

It stopped it was white big with thick big mane it brown gold'ish eyes looked at me and I looked at it I got a grate White frickin big lion in my room should I be scared ? hell yes must I be running for the hills ?yes if I was fit to do do I I would have my mind was panicking but my heart was telling me relax Sbahle this is great Ngonyama you fuckin lucky to be in the same room with him

Lions are large animals but he was very big it was about 11 feet long and 5 feet tall I'm looking at hybrid because I see Mvelo on this beast

Its white mane covered the shoulders chest and part of the back of this beast ooh my God his so beautiful am o crazy no ... He is part of my husband anyway so ya let me admire him

Me : Mv....mvee...lo? "

It took a step to me it stood tall next to my bed right now I felt like an ant ... " ooohmmmm" its to close I held my breath and

It did the breathing with its nose I'm not sure it it saying hello or you look good to eat ...

" Mvelo I'm going to kill you if you try and bite me ... "

It moved and tilted it head to the left I started sneezing it like it was realising dust or something

aish i forgot I'm allergic to cat that the reason I started laughing so hard that I even forgot that there is a beast in front of me our eyes looked at each other and i found my hand moving towards it it slowly bowed it head it closed it eyes the minute I touched it head this was a good feeling to me It looked at me one more time and turn around and dash off I had this huge smile on my face

" wow "

.  
.

I was dressed in long PJ and fluffy sleepers I was in bathroom doing my hygiene process surprisingly I woke up with Mvelo sleeping in next to me I did not want to wake him up so I took baby steps to the bathroom I looked my self in the mirror his hand prints were still clearly visible on my neck and the bite marks I lifted my top up and what I saw was disturbing I swallowed hard I heard him mumbling something

I made my way to the bedroom he was sweating talking on his sleep he was calling my name and saying NO .. His having a nightmare I walked to his side gentle shaking him

Me: baby ... Mvelo "

He was panicking and moving his head vigorously

his trying to wake up but the dream his having is consuming him I roughly shook him

He rose up " Noooo!" He screamed breathing out heavily

Me : its ok its just a dream "

Him : Sbahle ... There was so much blood '

Me : its ok ...its just a dream "

I pulled him to hug he squeezed me so tight as if he doesn't want to let me go

Him : I'm sorry my love ... I'm sorry "

Me : its ok ... I'm here its ok "

## **Chapter 77**

2 Weeks later

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

Its been almost two week at the lodge and I must say the honeymoon was not what I expected firstly my first experience with Sbahle meets dick became the worst night of my life not only did that leave me bedridden for days but it left me bruised and emotionally scared for life .

I wanted to forget about that it is what it is

because I love my husband more than anything in this world I just wanted to sweep every thing under the carpet like all good wife do .

Only one problem was that Mvelo was still stuck in that night his reliving that night every day he has problems with sleeping due to nightmares he tells me his ok but that just a front he is in some dark whole and I can't seem to get him out and his sinking even deep now since he has found a new coping mechanism which is alcohol.

I called koko and told her about this well if you married problems in your marriage are not only yours but your families too especially my in-laws she said we must take a next flight back we need to consult with abaphansi i told Mvelo four days ago and its always been tomorrow tomorrow ... But fuck now I'm putting my feet down we going tomorrow !

We all have dreams. Sometimes they give us joy while we're sleeping and other times they ruin our rest. Though many people do not pay much attention to their dreams and often don't even remember them i believe there is always a deeper meaning behind each dream

Psychologists suggest that our dreams may be the

mind's way of alerting us to unresolved issues while psychics argue that our dreams hold important clues about the future.

African traditional healers may say that dreams are a platform for communication with our ancestors. But Mvelo does not want to hear anything to do with his ancestors and calling ever since that day he brush it aside he says his done with pleasing the dead and they turn around and shit on him his angry too angry and his sinking to the unknown and this dreams his having are making me believe that they is a certain universal meaning behind it and his actions now .

I ran my hands on his face he only sleep peacefully when his laying on my lap I look at him and smile kissing his forehead I love him and seeing him like this hurts me so much

Me : Thank you for being you for sharing your love with me..for inspiring me to accept myself..for helping me see the unique beauty in imperfection...for showing me that love is something you do; something not just to be said but also to be shown I kissed him again and brush his hair humming a song

I smiled thinking about where it all began We had



an arranged marriage which means we had a couple of dates over a couple of days which he insisted we do and I decided that it would be fine since will be spending our lives together. A decision most people spend most of their lifetimes mulling over. In our very first meeting he rocked up wearing no shoes but looked cute we found that we had mostly nothing in common. Never a good sign when you're shortlisting potential life partners. However we went for a second date which was kinda a coincidence Mvelo was persistent never took No for an answer and surprisingly it turned out good well optimism played it part .

Im glad that day we did because we discovered the only thing we both had in common is our love he had fallen for me and I have fallen for him too. and the rest they say is history

Him : Ngibulala bani ?"

He asked in his deep husky voice making me laugh Mvelo believes that he must be the only person that puts a smile on my face when he finds Me smiling he will ask me " who am I killing "

Me : hi "

Him : MaBhengu "

He warned making me laugh even more

Me : do you remember how we meet ? "

He smiled a bit its all I have been doing for the past week reminding him how much I love him and that I'm not going any where and that will face all life challenges together no matter what some day I win him over but night comes and my men vanishes

his fears of him hurting Me is slowly making him paranoid and I hate what its doing to him .

Him : how can I forget you looked so beautiful in royal outfit you were so beautiful and quite and yoo ... Wajika umabhengu wahlanya wathetha wangishaya ... "

I was in tears with laughter this man right here is my forever

Me : stop it ...I'm not that bad "

Him : I married crazy and every body knows "\_

I laughed and I fund him looking at me

" you so beautiful "

Those words still make me blush

Him : I love you "\_

Me : I love you more "\_

I wanted to kiss him so bad right now but he got

off my lap cleared his throat

Him : you sure you don't want to go on game drive ?"

That what we have been doing ever since I got better all outdoor activities yes I love the wild but I just needed my me time and hubby but there still that pink elephant in the room that " intimacy "

He told me that sex will never be like that ever again but when I get close to him he pushes Me away memories from that day still flash back on him when we try to get close

Me : why game drive ? You miss your family already "

Him : yaphapha wena " I bust out and laughed

Me : we can go but ... I can't get enough looking at your sexy cousin with blue eyes ... Mmm muhle and you know that I got a thing for big cats "

He laughed so loud

Him : I can't believe you married a cat but you allergic to it "

" half cat " I shoot back and he laughed

Him : still can't believe that you allergic to

Ngonyama " \_he laughed at me and I hit him with a pillow

The night was spend watching Netflix and talking and his drinking that what he does every night is drink almost the whole bottle of whisky he says it help him sleep which is lie because he still wakes up screaming and kicking

Me : Mvelo that enough " I took him glass we on our bed now and his fully dressed and drinking

Him : I just need sleep Sbahle ... "

Me : but drinking is not helping ?"

Him : i can't sleep on your lap every time when I want to sleep "

Me : you have a calling Mvelo maybe you should try to channel your dreams "

Him : I don't want yo hear it Mabhengu "

Me : we need to talk about this Sthandwa "

Him : we talk about it all the time and I'm done talking about it "

Me : its fine don't talk to me but talk to koko "

Him : I'll call her tomorrow "

Me : no need we going home tomorrow " I turned and face the other side pulling the bed covers

Him : we not going there ... I got work to do we going home our house in the UK "

Me : you the CEO you can freeze work for a day or two I'm not going to sit back and look at you

washing your sorrows with alcohol and avoiding the real matter I love you to much not to see we need help "

I faked crying by sniffing

Him : please baby ... Ngcela ungakhali ... Fine will go home but it just one day ... "

Me : two "

Him : MaBhengu "

Sniff he huffed " ok ... Ok ... Two days "

I turned around and kissed him he froze you see why I need helpe he just don't know what to do when I kiss him touch him and just as I thought he step down from the bed

Me: Mvelo "

Him : I just need air sweetheart ... "

I breath out loud as he walked out

.  
.

Morning came and I noticed that he was passed out on the couch with a half empty whisky bottle I took it and flushed it in the drain I started packing our things I can not help him while we still in this place I need my husband back

Him: morning " he said and I made him hot coffee from the room service tray

Me: morning " I gave him his cup of coffee

Him : thank you "

I want to ask where he was but I know he was at the bar that where he hangs out I

Feel like he drinks too much and that alone had create a lot of tension and upset in our relationship. No we not yet biting our heads off he respect me enough to walk away when I try to raise the issue but its Also not helping because we not addressing it.

I feel like my partner is being taken away from me – both literally and figuratively. Perhaps i resent the amount of time he spend out drinking and feel like his a completely different person when his been drinking.

Him : what up with that face ? Did I do something wrong ? "

Yes you struggling with reality and you're tormented by your dreams because of reality and now you sinking into alcohol running away from reality ... So ya there is something wrong !!!

Me : no .. Jeans or chinos "

I ask him about what his going to wear I'm so done with this place ... I just can't deal

Him : jeans ...Sbahle you avoiding ... "

Does it help when I talk will it ever? so thula  
mtaKa Bhengu

His phone ringed and he looked at it

Him : I need to take this its the office "

I nodded

He walked out and answered his phone Mvelo is young his a 23 year old CEO for an international law firm his good at what he does his the most intelligent man I know he find it easy in helping others but when it comes to him he makes the worse decision ever perhaps i don't know how to broach the topic with him – but I know i have tried and it's did go the way I like. Maybe I'm afraid that he may resort in accusing me of nagging him since he already disagree that there's a problem at all and his done talking about it ... I just don't don't know

After taking a shower he was still on call and this time around his laptop was open and he was talking about some case yoo this men can work shame I looked at my body and I must give it to koko his herbs work miracles no marks no bruises I jumped into my short Danim skirt blue shirt and sandals I comb my hair and messy bun it is  
Him : wow you all dressed up ... And showing legs

" he looked at my legs going up to my face his thinking about it and soon his face change damn it !

Me: phangisa Mvelo we need to go "

He kissed my cheek and walked to the bathroom I need my husband back !

## Chapter 77

2 Weeks later

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

Its been almost two week at the lodge and I must say the honeymoon was not what I expected firstly my first experience with Sbahle meets dick became the worst night of my life not only did that leave me bedridden for days but it left me bruised and emotionally scared for life .

I wanted to forget about that it is what it is because I love my husband more then anything in this world I just wanted to sweep every thing under the carpet like all good wife do .

Only one problem was that Mvelo was still stuck in that night his reliving that night every day he



has problems with sleeping due to nightmares he tells me his ok but that just a front he is in some dark whole and I can't seem to get him out and his sinking even deep now since he has found a new coping mechanism which is alcohol.

I called koko and told her about this well if you married problems in your marriage are not only yours but your families too especially my in-laws she said we must take a next flight back we need to consult with abaphansi i told Mvelo four days ago and its always been tomorrow tomorrow ... But fuck now I'm putting my feet down we going tomorrow !

We all have dreams. Sometimes they give us joy while we're sleeping and other times they ruin our rest. Though many people do not pay much attention to their dreams and often don't even remember them i believe there is always a deeper meaning behind each dream

Psychologists suggest that our dreams may be the mind's way of alerting us to unresolved issues while psychics argue that our dreams hold important clues about the future.

African traditional healers may say that dreams are a platform for communication with our

ancestors. But Mvelo does not want to hear anything to do with his ancestors and calling ever since that day he brush it aside he says his done with pleasing the dead and they turn around and shit on him his angry too angry and his sinking to the unknown and this dreams his having are making me believe that they is a certain universal meaning behind it and his actions now .

I ran my hands on his face he only sleep peacefully when his laying on my lap I look at him and smile kissing his forehead I love him and seeing him like this hurts me so much

Me : Thank you for being you for sharing your love with me..for inspiring me to accept myself..for helping me see the unique beauty in imperfection...for showing me that love is something you do; something not just to be said but also to be shown I kissed him again and brush his hair humming a song

I smiled thinking about where it all began We had an arranged marriage which means we had a couple of dates over a couple of days which he insisted we do and I

decided that it would be fine since will be spending our lives together. A decision most

people spend most of their lifetimes mulling over. In our very first meeting he rocked up wearing no shoes but looked cute

we found that we had mostly nothing in common. Never a good sign when you're shortlisting potential life partners. However we went for a second date which was kinda a coincidence Mvelo was persistent never took No for an answer and surprisingly it turned out good well optimism played it part .

Im glad that day we did because we discovered the only thing we both had in common is our love he had fallen for me and I have fallen for him too. and the rest they say is history

Him : Ngibulala bani ?"

He asked in his deep husky voice making me laugh Mvelo believes that he must be the only person that puts a smile on my face when he finds Me smiling he will ask me " who am I killing "

Me : hi "

Him : MaBhengu "

He warned making me laugh even more

Me : do you remember how we meet ? "

He smiled a bit its all I have been doing for the past week reminding him how much I love him

and that I'm not going any where and that will face all life challenges together no matter what some day I win him over but night comes and my men vanishes

his fears of him hurting Me is slowly making him paranoid and I hate what its doing to him .

Him : how can I forget you looked so beautiful in royal outfit you were so beautiful and quite and yoo ... Wajika umabhengu wahlanya wathetha wangishaya ... "

I was in tears with laughter this man right here is my forever

Me : stop it ...I'm not that bad "

Him : I married crazy and every body knows "\_

I laughed and I fund him looking at me

" you so beautiful "

Those words still make me blush

Him : I love you "\_

Me : I love you more "\_

I wanted to kiss him so bad right now but he got off my lap cleared his throat

Him : you sure you don't want to go on game drive ?"

That what we have been doing ever since I got better all outdoor activities yes I love the wild but

I just needed my me time and hubby but there still that pink elephant in the room that " intimacy "

He told me that sex will never be like that ever again but when I get close to him he pushes Me away memories from that day still flash back on him when we try to get close

Me : why game drive ? You miss your family already "

Him : yaphapha wena " I bust out and laughed

Me : we can go but ... I can't get enough looking at your sexy cousin with blue eyes ... Mmm muhle and you know that I got a thing for big cats "

He laughed so loud

Him : I can't believe you married a cat but you allergic to it "

" half cat " I shoot back and he laughed

Him : still can't believe that you allergic to Ngonyama " \_he laughed at me and I hit him with a pillow

The night was spend watching Netflix and talking and his drinking that what he does every night is drink almost the whole bottle of whisky he says it help him sleep which is lie because he still wakes up screaming and kicking

Me : Mvelo that enough " I took him glass we on our bed now and his fully dressed and drinking

Him : I just need sleep Sbahle ... "

Me : but drinking is not helping ?"

Him : i can't sleep on your lap every time when I want to sleep "

Me : you have a calling Mvelo maybe you should try to channel your dreams "

Him : I don't want yo hear it Mabhengu "

Me : we need to talk about this Sthandwa "

Him : we talk about it all the time and I'm done talking about it "

Me : its fine don't talk to me but talk to koko "

Him : I'll call her tomorrow "

Me : no need we going home tomorrow " I turned and face the other side pulling the bed covers

Him : we not going there ... I got work to do we going home our house in the UK "

Me : you the CEO you can freeze work for a day or two I'm not going to sit back and look at you washing your sorrows with alcohol and avoiding the real matter I love you to much not to see we need help "

I faked crying by sniffing

Him : please baby ... Ngcela ungakhali ... Fine will

go home but it just one day ... "

Me : two "

Him : MaBhengu "

Sniff he huffed " ok ... Ok ... Two days "

I turned around and kissed him he froze you see why I need help he just don't know what to do when I kiss him touch him and just as I thought he step down from the bed

Me: Mvelo "

Him : I just need air sweetheart ... "

I breath out loud as he walked out

.

.

Morning came and I noticed that he was passed out on the couch with a half empty whisky bottle I took it and flushed it in the drain I started packing our things I can not help him while we still in this place I need my husband back

Him: morning " he said and I made him hot coffee from the room service tray

Me: morning " I gave him his cup of coffee

Him : thank you "

I want to ask where he was but I know he was at the bar that where he hangs out I

Feel like he drinks too much and that alone had

create a lot of tension and upset in our relationship. No we not yet biting our heads off he respect me enough to walk away when I try to raise the issue but its Also not helping because we not addressing it.

I feel like my partner is being taken away from me – both literally and figuratively. Perhaps i resent the amount of time he spend out drinking and feel like his a completely different person when his been drinking.

Him : what up with that face ? Did I do something wrong ? "

Yes you struggling with reality and you're tormented by your dreams because of reality and now you sinking into alcohol running away from reality ... So ya there is something wrong !!!

Me : no .. Jeans or chinos "

I ask him about what his going to wear I'm so done with this place ... I just can't deal

Him : jeans ...Sbahle you avoiding ... "

Does it help when I talk will it ever? so thula mtaKa Bhengu

His phone ringed and he looked at it

Him : I need to take this its the office "

I nodded



He walked out and answered his phone Mvelo is young his a 23 year old CEO for an international law firm his good at what he does his the most intelligent man I know he find it easy in helping others but when it comes to him he makes the worse decision ever perhaps i don't know how to broach the topic with him – but I know i have tried and it's did go the way I like. Maybe I'm afraid that he may resort in accusing me of nagging him since he already disagree that there's a problem at all and his done talking about it ... I just don't don't know

After taking a shower he was still on call and this time around his laptop was open and he was talking about some case yoo this men can work shame I looked at my body and I must give it to koko his herbs work miracles no marks no bruises I jumped into my short Danim skirt blue shirt and sandals I comb my hair and messy bun it is Him : wow you all dressed up ... And showing legs " he looked at my legs going up to my face his thinking about it and soon his face change damn it !

Me: phangisa Mvelo we need to go "

He kissed my cheek and walked to the bathroom I

need my husband back !

## Chapter 78

Sbahle \*\*\*

Sometimes I really do not understand African culture and this rituals and all this ceremony that are done for every occasion.

As you all know that 10 months ago me and Mvelo separated and got back together a month back

due to the way I left my marital house

I am forced to do a cleansing ceremony and seek apology to the Mnguni ancestors for leaving the house in that manner

They say it was not pleasant and I also spilt blood not me but Mloni so we Bhengu are at fault for beating the Mnguni King and for that I need to apologize to the ancestors and elders of the land and my in-laws and ask to be taken back \_hello I'm married to this man we have resolved our issued ... Now I'm not allowed to walk in proudly inside my royal house!

Mvelo : this is bullshit ! " he said standing up

Me : Mvelo "

Him : I told you this was a bad idea coming here ...

Why you never listen to me "

I pulled him aside because now his causing unnecessary seen

mom and koko are just amazed on the way his speaking right now .

We were summoned to the penthouse the minute we landed and not once I thought is was about this ...will there ever be peace in my house.

Me : Mnguni please come down "

Him : INI ?"

Me: Yeyeye omuhle ... Please " saying his clan name always calms him down

Me : we need to do this ... Its tradition "

Him : where has tradition gotten us to Sbahle ? I can't even touch you because of tradition and you going to allow that women to feed your head with shit ?? " his voice was loud

Me : Shandwa sami that women is your grandmother ... Please don't speak like this " I said softly

Him : why don't you listen to me ?"

I looked down if we do not do this shit his behaviors might get worse good lord Mvelo is so

stubborn

Him : we leaving I miss my child ... And i need to get back to work ... You my wife and you don't owe no one any apology uyezwa "

Zee is in the UK with her nanny Trey found her the best school that side he believes that there is no life for us here funny because I married him to be his Queen for his kingdom but he just walking away from it all I just don't know what gotten into him

Him : we leaving ... Uyangizwa "

Me : we can't Mvelo we have come this far let's just do it "

He pulled my hand I twisted it and untangling my self from him but he grabbed me again roughly this time so I had one way to do this I smashed my lips in his and for a second he enjoyed the kiss he responded ran his hands on my ass shortly after he pushed me away from him slowly as he avoided eyes contact with me

Me :if this does not prove that there is something wrong I don't know what ? "

Him : Sbahle ... I'm working on this "

I shook my head

Me: it not about intimacy... but I want this fear of

you hurting me out of your system ... I miss you ...

" I ran my hands on his face

Me : please do this for me that all I asked "

He looked at me and walked away I followed behind him he just banged the door and walked out mom koko and my Aunt looked at me for answers

Me : his stressed ... Its just work staff ... I'm sorry about that "

Koko nodded

Me : may we kindly proceed with the ceremony please "

Koko : thank you Ndlonkulu ... Every thing is ready for you ekhaya ( royal house ) you mom will tell you what expected from you she stood up and mom walked her out

Didy mom : is that how a Queen dress this days "

I felt like rolling my eyes at her

Mom walked back in and told me to change I was wearing a long African print dress ( isishweshwe ) a matching headscarf and they put this small blanket over my shoulders really ma in this heat ?

Mom: asambe ..."

I nodded

Me : why we doing this ma Mvelo is the one that

wrong me not the other way around why am I apologizing to his family "

Her : remember all the ceremony that were done before your official traditional wedding ? "

I nodded

Her : it means that you are now part of there family you just can't walk away when you two are having a fight a wife stays rather the husband moves out then you"

Me : but mom ... "

Her : I know baby kunzima but if you love him stop going back and fourth and running away ... Stick with him "

Me : mom it only happened once "

Her : ... Uthelwe ngenyongo Sbahle and you're recognized as a daughter a wife and a Queen in that house you are protected by amanguni so when you leave idlozi liyadinwa ( ancestors are angry ) never forget that you were chosen "

I huffed and folded my arms

Me :you may forgive him and get back to with your husband even trow surprise wedding but all that glitz does not make it right with abaphansi "

Me : ayi ma this is unfair"

Her : the ancestors feel betrayed that you the

chosen wife left the house without their consent so you need to apologize to the Mnguni ancestors and ask them ukuthi bakwamukele back " ( to take you back )

Me : I see "

Her : Mlondi has caused us to pay more money with his reckless behavior why you never told me that he attacked the king "

Me : I ... "

Aunt : now they going to fine us and ask us for a cow to cleanse the house "

Me : a cow ? ! " that over the top

Mom : akubhediwe LA Sbahle ... Inkosi phela le " ( his the king and this people don't play games )

Me ; a whole cow really that's extortion "

Aunt : well fancy words won't help now " ... She continued to look ahead and drove us to the palace

So ya sishwelezile nabaphansi ( asking for forgiveness) and cleansing ceremony was done and I was welcome back in the house and yes they did charge us Inhlawulo a fine of two cows but mom said its too much she said if it was not for Mvelo mistreating me I would have never left she said she will pay the fine of one cow for Mlondi

actions

The elders were not happy but my Aunt got mad convincing skills and my family got away with paying a fine of one cow .

Well after all was said and done I made my way to the kitchen to cook it looks like every thing is still in place just the way I left it after hours behind the stove finally dinner was ready to be served and there was no sign of my so called husband In fact since I got here he was not around

Mom : is everything OK between you and your husband ?\_ " she asked walking in the kitchen

Me : ya sure " I lied she had that look that said I know you

Her : let me tell you something my baby when me and your father got married we already had problems my family disowned me and if that was not worse I married to a big family that did not like me at all I was only 16years when I married him and I was stuck with him because I had no home or family any more to get back to life was tough I was young and pregnant I was Queen and to young to have a voice I was bullied and mistreated



How I thought I couldn't take it anymore I wanted to run away ... So I did that when Thandi was born I ran away and he found me but he changed he was angry and hated that I humiliated him by leaving behind his baby that still needed breast feeding

. How afraid I was when we couldn't talk we had to write letters I to one another because we couldn't do a face-to-face

I was terrified of the future. But your father stood by me and made me the woman I am today

The reason I'm sharing this with you is because We all have challenges no matter how long we have been married but difficulties can be especially overwhelming in the early years and months of married but whatever you are facing today remember that these insurmountable challenges these newlywed problems which threaten to take you out can become the things that make you stronger. The dilemmas that cut to your very core when you finally work through them can become a testimony and foundation on which your marriage can stand

Me: Thanks mom "

Him : talk to him ... Be persistence even when he

shut you out talk to him amadoda ane pride  
Sbahle especially the one in power .. "

Koko : ooh mntanami you have been slaving in  
this kitchen for hours now please come seat down  
"

Me : its OK koko ... I'm just going to dish up for  
Baba and take his food to him "

Koko : ukuphi ?"

Me: I'll come back with him koko don't worry  
yourself "

They walked out of the kitchen i dished up for  
Mvelo and put his food in basket I took my car  
Keyes ooh my car how I missed it  
" Ndlonkulu welcome back home "

I turned around after placing the food on the  
passenger seat

Me : mama "

I hugged her I love this women she got that "  
thing " about her that I just admire

Makhumalo : when did you arrive? "

Me : today ... This afternoon "

She touched my face " thank you for rebuilding  
the Mnguni house .. "

I smiled and looked down koko said that as well  
and uncle Mzamo so I guess its thing around here

Her ; sorry I couldn't come to your wedding "

Me : it was a surprise mama nami I didn't know I was getting married till that night "

Her : mmmm you have nice life problems "

We laughed

Me : mama when last you spoke to Mvelo "

Her: his ignoring my calls I'm glad you forced him to come home "

Me : it was not easy"

Her : we need to talk me and you after all this how long are you going to be here "

Me : maybe a day or two ... He really does not want to be here "

She squinted her eyes and gave me that look that she is picking up something

Her : go get your husband Now!; ... I need to see him now !!... "

Her voice was big bold like males voice ooh shoot it Somdala Mvelo's grate gran father he is now taking over Makhumalo body ... I kneeled down and clapped twice ... " Ndlondlo ngizowenza njalo " he growled and spoke in tongues and walked away I stood up and dusted my knees yoo this family got drama for days now how am I going to convince Mvelo.

I drove to his man cave he was on a couch with music playing so loud and cans of beer on the table I switched the radio off he looked up and was meet by my eyes

Me : I brought you food "

Him : I'm not hungry "

I did not care but gave him his plate after unwrapping it

Him : you cooked "

I nodded he set up straight and smiled took his food and dug in I looked at him watching him eat within minute he has cleaned up his plate

Him : is there some more"

Me ; its in the house we can go and I will dish up for you "

He set back and looked at me I swallowed hard

Me : Makhumalo asked to see you "

I looked down because his eyes were burning my soul now

Him : what are you up to Mabhengu "

Me: can we go please ... "

Him: Why ? "

Me : Mvelo ... Ngiyakucela "

He shook his head and turned the music back up now what ?

## Chapter 79

Mvelo \*\*\*

I looked at her as her eyes started to form tears ... She know this is my weakness and right now I'm falling into her trap I made her cry once and felt like the lowest life form in the universe I promised my self that never want to see her cry again because of something that I've done.

" Sthandwa sami what's wrong " I crouching in front her rubbing her back

Her : I'm trying Mvelo God knows im trying so hard but you not letting me in .."

Me : I'm sorry Sbahle I can not keep doing this with my family you just don't understand "

Her : make me understand because right now I just see you sinking in to the unknown ... "

You know when Sbahle start Crying during an argument or misunderstanding its just feels so fucking unfair She knows that I can't keep being angry with her when she cries without looking like a monster. It's how she wins every single time

Me : ngiyaxolisa ... Please stop crying and let's talk about this "

Her : you don't want to listen to me Mvelo you never do !"

OK can somebody tell me what have I done now ? for goodness sake I'm trying my level best to fix this problem of me unable to hold her and she see fit to drag me to the very same place I don't want to be in I'm cursed because of my family I hurt Sbahle because of this blood inside of me so shoot me I'm pissed mad that and I'm angry that I'm stuck in this trauma reliving it everyday should I be speaking to some one of cause yes but as a men i need to be strong for my family there is no me on this equation to take care off its my family my children ooh God my unborn baby my beautiful wife my calling my company my kingdom .... And I ask for one thing one thing to consummate my love with my wife in the most romantic ways ever but that was taken from me as well I take care off every one and I'm disregarded .

Her: you promised you will do this for me ... You promised " I breath out loud lord knows I can't say no to her never

Me : anything for you my love ... Just name it "  
I still think she is over reacting and thinking that I

need fixing I just think maybe I need a destruction work and a lot of work out to just exhaust my body to have peaceful sleep ...coming here is the last thing I need since I feel I have lost so much because of this family and my ancestors.

Her : i know you are Assuming there's nothing wrong but I know you and I can tell there is " she holding my face she can read me she can feel my deepest emotions

I'm exhausted and going back and fourth with her will make her cry even more so I'm debating now on 'How can I fix this and make things better for her sake and I'm wondering on why Makhumalo wants to see me 'Oh God what is it this time ?

Me : Sbahle I agree to everything you say to me most times not because you right but because I hate seeing you cry what I'm about to do I'm doing it against my will because of you "

She wiped her tears and looked at me

I look at this beautiful soul in front of me I can fuck up for days but she will never give up on me she always see the Men in me that I sometimes can not recognize .

She hugged me and that alone felt so good it felt like home I love her so much

I made a promise to this woman i swore to love and cherish her. Right now i disagree with what she plan to do but Arguments and fights can very easily be one of the most beneficial parts of a strong relationship especially if one or both of us had been refraining from saying something that needed to be said. A fight or a disagreement can bring out the truth even though it may sting a bit but that will hurt her so I nod and tell her

" OK baby we may go see Makhumalo "

I let go of her and looked at her sparkling little eyes

Her : thank you "

" we still need to talk about this you making decision without running it pass me " i tell her I'm driving and Sbahle is seating with her back on the dash bord of the car her legs on her seat and she looking at me its an awkward position to sit in but Sbahle never does anything normal

Her : you said you done talking to me '

Me : I was tired last night "

Her : I hate feeling like I'm nagging you "

I shoot my eyes at her

Me : do I make you feel like that ? "

This was new to me have I ever gave her a reason



not to be open with me she plays with her nails  
and shrunk her shoulders

Me : we still talking"

I say shouting a bit she has her moments of being  
the strong wise women smart and witty but  
sometimes she just act like a teen you know her  
age like right now .

Her : I feel like you don't listen to me "

I parked the car and look at her she looked hot in  
her makoti dress and matching headscarf

Me : you my partner Sbahle and there days when I  
will seek answers from the world but get none

God gave me you you will be my advisor ...my  
eyes when I can't see ears when I can't hear ...

Baby you my voice when I can't speak ...

Everything you say to Me never falls on deaf ears  
... Please don't give up on me Mabhengu I need  
you more than you know "

Her : I'm sorry "

Me : don't be we talking and I like what we  
achieved right now "

She smiled and kissed me its funny how I'm able  
to hug and kiss her today and feel connected to  
her with out bad memories triggered and spoiling  
the moment.

.  
.

Sbahle\*\*\*

After the heart to heart we had and the  
Kiss we shared I can say that coming here was not  
a bad idea After all its still early days to celebrate  
and say I have win him over but I have hope I let  
go of his hand the minute we walk in the house

Me : I'll be upstairs "

He held my hand again

Him : we doing this together "

Wow that a first I never set in any of this meeting  
he has with his family I don't know what to  
expected so I'm nervous as fuck

Koko : thank you Ndlonkulu ... "

I nodded as Mvelo pulled me to seat next to him

Mvelo : sawbona koko "

Koko : Ngonyama "

She looked at me and cleared her throat

Makhumalo walked in and greeted Mvelo

Makhumalo : I have been calling "

Mvelo : was spending time with my wife "

Makhumalo : it was important "

Mvelo : so is spending time with my wife "

This was awkward now I hate his tone it sounded

a bit disrespectful

Makhumalo : I see ... Its good to know so what this I hear that you no longer want to have a spiritual connection with your ancestors ?"

Him : a lot happened "

Koko : I told you it will ..." She looks at me and Mvelo they have a conversations with there eyes she cleared her throat again OK what was that? what did I miss ?

Koko : Mvelo Life throws challenges and every challenge comes with rainbows ...but if you going to be stark on the challenge you had you will never see the rainbow"

Mvelo : challenge you say ?" he laughed

makhumalo : I believe its a figure of speech and you know what we talking about "

Yoo mama is pissed and she is ready to kill

Mvelo : did you go trough it ? ... Did you ever came face to face with a beast ... Oh what you call it a challenge ? "

Koko looked down

Me : Mvelo ... " I whispered in his ear I hate how his addressing his elders

Mvelo : no baby let me finish "

I sigh and tried to let go of his hand but he hold

mine even tighter

Mvelo : koko let me tell you this she has ." he was referring to me

Mvelo : and I have and everyday of my life I'm relive that day which suppose to be the best night in our marriage turning out to be the nightmare"

Me: Mvelo " he held my hand tighter telling me to zip it I did just that and looked down

Mvelo : she could not walk for four day ... Four day she was bruised up and all because we following instruction of our ancestors disregarding how we feel "

Makhumalo : you got a mark of the grate white lion what makes you think your life will be normal ?"

Mvelo : that ?"

Makhumalo : hayi wena I'm talking now and you will listen angikhathaleli that you now look at your self and think you are a men just because you are married or you running a multi milliner company when I talk you will listen yangizwa "

Him : yes mam "

He looked down wow table turn very fast in this house The level of respect Mvelo has for mama is mind blowing

Makhumalo : you not normal you never was and never will be Sbahle is chosen for you and you have no right to think for her she has her own head to make her decision for her self you know why you stuck in that pit whole you call nightmares because you hate it when things do not go your way you looking for someone to blame right now but you know very well that you had no control of this situation "

Mvelo :.....

Makhumalo : Mabhengu is your wife and I know as women that I wouldn't want my first time to be like that either but she a mother of the lion never underestimate how strong she is your love for her is clouding you to see what and who she really is and power she has ... "

The room was quite ooh God I want to grow up and be just like her I think I found my role model

Makhumalo: The most precious light is the one that visits you in your darkest haven't I taught you that over the years ?"

Mvelo : .....

Makhumalo: You the prince of light Mvelo or have you forgotten about that also ? you letting your guard down because of feelings ? so now we

questioning the way of our four father's ? And  
throw in the towel because what ? sex ! that did  
not go your way ?"

Me : wow ... " I said softly

Makhumalo : are you forgetting what that night  
was meant for that you suddenly have nightmare  
about ? what it has done in this family .?... Why  
you so selfish Mvelo ... Why you acting like a  
spoiled brat ... You have the rest of your life with  
Sbahle to give her the best bedroom prayer of her  
life ... You crying over spilled milk that is yet to  
benefit the future of this kingdom !!"

She breath out loud and set down I did not even  
see that she was standing up

Makhumalo : Mvelo mtanami you don't have the  
luxury of fallin' apart for someone else to pick you  
up you are crowned king and this behavior is not  
acceptable .. "

He started breathing up heavily i aran my thumbs  
on his hand Makhumalo was Also mad tensions  
were high koko was looking down and I was just  
lost I feel sorry for my man now he is receiving the  
thunder now the hard way ...

Makhumalo : I get you upset you angry but We all  
have thorns in our flesh. All of us. Love is when we

stay and help someone pluck out their thorns one-by-one and they do the same for us. Love is also when we pluck the thorns out of our own flesh one-by-one. But today the world teaches us that we shouldn't even see those thorns that we should only see the petals. As a result we don't know how to love ourselves and we don't know how to love others. Stay with the darkness and bring that darkness into the light. It's there look at it. Stop running away from it ... And blocking it but face it "

Mvelo looked at her

Makhumalo: they showed me your dreams and I'm sorry you go through that every night Mvelo I have told you so many times that the scenarios we experience in our sleep have a particular meaning and if we understand what our dreams mean we have the power to respond to the messages we receive in them. And if we don't we see them as nightmares and darkness fomenting us in the night ... "

Mvelo : so what does it really mean "

Makhumalo : I did not train you to be a powerful seer to relay on me for answers connect with izidalwa zakho and you will see and find the

answers "

Mvelo : that will be impossible "

Koko ; ngobani ? ... You have a calling mvelo you don't just say I quite when you're feed up you push trough it ... When last did you pray ? lite impepho ? Or izibani ? And when last did you have vision ? "

He looked down

Koko : abadala banesikhwele Mvelo you need to find balance in everything you do love life work and your calling ... "

Mvelo nodded

Makhumalo : Dreams play a pivotal role when you're working on enhancing and heightening your spirituality. You should have been able to decipher your own dream by now Understanding your dreams will always without fail give guidance as to what is happening in your life and what to watch out for. "

Mvelo nodded

Koko : thank you again Ndlonkulu for bringing Mvelo home she said that after Mvelo and mama stepped out

Me : I just want him to get better "

Koko : he will he needed to step in this ground to



realise and find himself ...

thank you again ... " she walked out of the room leaving me with million thoughts It was my first seat down in a Mnguni meeting and wow I feel like I still have a long way to understand this family And there ancestors and there way .

.

.

## Chapter 80

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

I woke up in the middle of the night with Mvelo not by my side ever since that meeting he has been quite I saw him standing by the balcony and looking outside he was wearing his long PJ pants with no top I made my way to him and hugged him from behind resting my head on his back

Him : what are you doing up ? "

Me : why you not sleeping ? Is it the dreams ?"

Him : no ... I just could not sleep "

Me : are you OK ?"

Him : I don't know "

Me: do you want to talk about it ? "

Him : the only thing that make sense to my life right now is you ..." He turned around and hugged me and kissed my fourhead

Me : I'm sorry I went behind your back and talked to your family about our problems "

Him : I was not making it any easy for you so its cool "

Me : there is lot I don't understand about you're life you culture and your calling "

Him : I'm no expect also that why I have elders to help me "

Me : I'm married to you Mvelo but I feel like a stranger when it comes to the Mnguni ancestral beliefs "

He sigh

Him : what do you want to know ?"

I looked up at him and I was meet by his worm eyes

Me : everything "

Him : I'll speak to koko "

I popped my eyes ... No

Him : what ? "

Me : I don't think she will agree ... "

" why do you say that ?" He asked with a frowb

Me : I don't know Mvelo koko is a good women I know and mom speaks praise about her but we not that close ... We leave in the same room but we hadly say more then 10 words to each other "

Him : that new to me "

Me : don't get me wrong I'm not saying this as in a wrong or bad way ... And please don't talk to her about this "

Him : Sbahle "

Me : Ngiyakucela Mvelo ... "

The last thing I need is to have bed blood with his grandmother she tolerates me as Mvelo wife and I'm Good with that "

Me : we going t UK soon and I was hoping you will educate me about your family history "

Him : I don't know if i will I just feel emotional detached to my spiritual calling and being a Mnguni is not something I feel proud to be "

he let go off me and ran his hands on his face

Me : when did this start "

He looked at me with raised eyebrow Mvelo is nothing without his calling its him its who Mvelo is

Me : talk to me babe "

Him : it happened after the Sli thing "

I dropped my mouth open

Me: Mvelo that's like a year ago "

Him : I know... "

Me: what caused it ? "

he shook his head as if his saying he doesn't know

Me : Your spiritual disconnect begins at the core of yourself its just does happened over night it something that has been going on but you were not paying attention to it then it started to grow up through the mind and then branches out through the soul. If you cannot feel in a body built for feeling then that is a clear sign that something is wrong... "

Him : I just don't know sbahle "

Me: I think you allowed it to be like that ... "

He did not answer or looked at me

Me : Pam's last words to me really change Me or made me see things in another prospective "

He turned around and looked at me

Me : she told me that I need to teach his family about power of prayer and believing in God I shook my head and told her that I don't believe in God I don't have much faith in him she laughed at me and told me that " you do you just need to take that step to go close to him and he will meet you half way "

I laughed shaking my head " so what you going through right now I know it and I've been there I've heard these same words come out of my mouth: "I want to feel more connected ...you know ...on a spiritual level ' Maybe you've said them too as you express your desire to feel a strong connection with your ancestors isithunywa sakho and your spiritual side but you know Religious traditions often teach that we need to strive to find that connection because as mere mortals we don't naturally have it. We have to work at it... cleave pray meditate uphahle perform commandments and more.

I'm here to tell you that it's not true. You aren't disconnected and neither am I. We never have been and never will be. We are always connected to any spiritual being even if we don't feel connected just take that step forward and they will meet you half way "

He sigh and looked ahead

Him : "I don't feel that maybe I want to feel it...maybe don't "

I held his hand

Me : "But you know that you are connected right?" I held his hand

Him : "Yes I know it intellectually but I just don't feel it. "

Me: you blocking it You do have access to it but you blocking it "

He looked at me and nodded

Me: why ? " \_It came out as a whisper

Him: I just want to be normal Hle-hle I want to take my company to grater heights I want to love you and give you the best things in life I want to see my children grow and be there for them ... I want to be a man a husband a father without having a responsibility to save every one else ... " \_

Me : Mvelo ?"

Him : we leaving tomorrow let's get some sleep "

Me: it does not work like that Sthandwa sami .."

Him : I love you and my life start and ends with you is that hard to ask for ... To be with a women I love to creates memories and to be successful business men and great father to my kids "

I was about to answer him and he pulled me to him and attacked me with a kiss it was full of emotions and he left me breathless

Him : let's go to sleep .."I'm more worried now about him but what to do ? I can't keep defying him on the chooses he has made for his life he

cuddle me and placed his hands on my tummy rubbing slowly he does that this day I find it easy to sleep when he does that .

Morning came and he was still holding me so tight he cuddle me and placed his hands on my tummy rubbing slowly he does that this day I find it easy to sleep when he does that .

Morning came and he was still holding me so tight I felt him poking me and that a feeling haven't had in a long time

Him : hle -hle " I smiled to my self I love it when he called me that

Me: mmmm morning "

I turned and looked at him he was dressed and looked fresh really Mvelo urg! I frowned

Me : when did you wake up and why are you dressed up? " he laughed and kissed me and I pushed him off me I had to brush my teeth and rinse my face

Him : I'm ready to talk " he stood by the bathroom door with his arms folded

I looked up at him and frowned

Me :talk ?"

He breath out loud " our first night together "

I opened my mouth and closed it again

Me : we not doing this now Mvelo "

Him : is there a time frame for talks like this ?"

Me : don't be cocky with me Mnguni "

Him : you said we don't talk and I don't listen ...

Kanti Sbahle ufunani "

I pushed him to make way out of the bathroom

I'm not having this talk with him right now ... I'm

not ready and its to early manje yena he just

wakes up and say he want to talk no warning in

advance and his dressed up and he fuckeb arose

me with his dick poking me and now this ...

He pulled my hand he set on our bed and made

me sit on his lap

Him : I know you know the struggle I went trough

after that night I'm not saying it will stop now

since I have spoken to Mama but in hoping to take

it one day at time till I get there "

Me : you will I believe in you "

He kissed my shoulder

Him : wena unjani ? "

Me: I don't understand ... What do you mean ?"

Him : Sbahle you were on the receiving end of all

of this being the women you are I know you

rather put everything under carpet and move past

from it"



Me : I'm fine I really am ... Its water under the bridge and why we having this talk right now ?

He shook his head

Him : I love you but I must not forget the fact that you are young and traumatic experience has ways of resurfacing when you least expect it so talk to me ... How do you feel or how did you feel about our first night together "

Me : I can't ... Not now please ... "

Him : I hate that you carry both my weight and yours let me off loud some please "

Mvelo doesn't understand that sometimes our pain comes from a place so scary that we don't want to say it out loud talk about it or even admit it's true to ourselves. We feel safer avoiding our feelings because it shields us from pain all I'm able to do was to carry Mvelo pain I ignored mine it does not matter anyway wat felt what I went trough it happened and I don't want to think about it I had to be done and I don't know why must we go back to that place that night that day no ! I can't I don't want to see Mvelo that way no! I refuse I'll be OK I'll be fine

Me : Mvelo please can we move past this "

He shook his head

Him : there will be time when I will be comfortable enough to want to touch you to make love to you and I know Sbahle that won't be easy for you you will put on a brave face to please me hurting yourself even more "

Me : will cross that bridge when we get to it " I tried standing up but he held me close

Him: I want to be here for you ... Before I lose you to buried emotional pain "

I looked down and didn't know what to say this right here I don't know what to say or do he breath out loud he placed his head on my shoulders when he noticed that I'm not talking

Him : I don't know what you've been through and I don't know who you have to turn to but if you've been holding your pain inside I would encourage you to take the first step and say it out loud.

Regardless of where your pain comes from your experiences and feelings matter. So say it...when you're ready...wait till no one is around and tell it to the sky if you have to but say it. Acknowledging the magnitude of your pain is an important first step in fumbling your way towards healing."

He kissed my cheek

I was quite I did not know what to say so I made

my way to the bathroom and took few dip breath  
before stepping to a shower

I found him pacing around the room he was  
speaking business language that I did not hear the  
bed was made and my clothes laid out on the bad  
" hold on a bit " he said to the caller

Him : hay " he called me while I was applying  
lotion on my body

Him : what with that face ? "

I frowned and looked at him he made his way to  
me

Him : are you OK ? " he kissed my lips

Me : I'm fine .." I said dismissing him

I'm kinda down I don't know why but I'm just in  
no mood to talk after that mouthful exchange of  
words that just happen i just need space from him  
and evey one else

he continue with his call with a worry look being a  
Mnguni wife means I need to wear this modern  
African print dresses with matching doek urg!

I made my way downstairs and stop on my tracks  
when I heard my mothers voice

" she my daughter I taught her well why you  
doubting her ability you be Ndlovukazi "

Koko : she young she still need to learn "

Mom : I married young younger than her and I spend my days in royal house with Queen mother who taught me everything about being a Bhengu Queen "

Koko : Nontombi we do things differently in this house "

Mom : you do things differently my son is arranged to take a wife and I already have a schedule on how I'm going to teach her the ropes of our kingdom ... We going to die Nomacawe and leave this children with this legacy how they going to lead if we as as elders are depriving them of that "

Koko ' I'll speak to her "

Mom : don't speak to her Show her how to lead in this house she is the Queen ... Before she wife or mother of lions and lioness she need to know her powers and how to rule she has come to age now "

The room went silent I made my way downstairs and found the two Queens looking at each other mom smiled when she saw me

Mom: ulala till this time now Sbahle "

Me : I had a late night ... Sawbona maka sbahle " I went to her and hugged her kissing her cheek I

turned and looked at Koko and greeted her  
bowing my knees and head a bit  
She hardly talks to me so I knew she was just  
going to nod  
Mom ; I came to say Good-bye we heading back  
home now "  
Me : ooh " I felt a bit sad  
Her : please walk me out "  
She said Goodbye to koko and I walked her out  
we stood by her car  
Mom : how was your night back home ? "  
Me : it was OK mom "  
Her : Mnguni Treating you well ?"  
I nodded  
Her: I head you going to the UK tonight "  
I nodded " Mvelo's life and work is that side "  
Her : and your life ? "  
Me : I go where my husband go mom "  
I looked down  
Her: you Queen before you wife or a mother to  
his children uyezwa ... You need to rule and know  
your rank in this kingdom ... Speak out Sbahle I  
never raised you to be this silent "  
I looked down  
Her : don't repeat the mistake I made listening to

your in-laws even when you don't see fit or agree with what they say don't let them Rob you of who you are and how powerful you will be you hold great power Sbahle and one day you will be tested so start seeking answers within you "

I nodded as she hug me " you are Goddess my child and more powerful than that women that sitting proudly on your seat ... Claim and take what your uyezwa " she whispered in my ear

Me: yebo maka sbahle "

She kissed my cheek and got in her car and waved goodbye as her driver drove off.

.

.

## **Chapter 81**

Mvelo \*\*\*

Leaving home was bitter sweat but I had to go Makhumalo gave me holly water to use to drink and bath with she said that I need to at least pray and meditate I was not planning on doing that but having a wife like Sbahle yoh ... I end up doing thing I never thought I will ever do she hates UK

but at least she loves her house I bought her a new house away from the city and close to country side close to the lake ... She wants mansion that she hate the city life its too noisy and chaotic she loves the country side she spend most of her time with Zee and in her art gallery yes there is room in the house that I made it her escape place

I have seen the drawings that Mlondi shipped this side and I must say there are beautiful and I'm thinking of investing on her art so she may showcase her work .

Work is hectic on my and I hardly get time to spend holding my wife well its good to say that the nightmares are gone after I drank Makhumalo holly water I'm slowly starting to restore that feeling of having an intimate moment with my wife but I'm too busy and forever tired to even get it up .

Since she refused to speak to me about her ordeal I decided that she need see some one and damn did we fight about that but I wasn't backing down I need her to be OK because I really want to tap that now and I can't relay on " I'm fine " that she keeps shoving down my throat damn married life

is just too much.

I stepped in the office every one started clapping  
there hands

" what going on?" I asked clearly shocked

" you did it again ... " that one of the junior  
attorneys my uncle made my way to me

Me : what going on ? "

Him : you win them too much you just don't keep  
track now "

Me : ooh shoot the case ... Yah "

I turned and looked at every one

Me : settle down and let's get back to work .. "

Mzamo chuckled " you got this under control why  
you still stringing me along for "

Me : ooh come on I wouldn't have done this  
without you "

I took a can of soda in the bar fridge we in my  
office now

Him : you have anything stronger "

Me: nop but you can find it down the road ... "

Him : Sbahle ?"

I breath out loud " she got me by the balls "

Him : I'm glad I ain't married " we bust out and  
laughed

Him : so how did she take the news "



I ran my hands on my hair

" you haven't told her?"

Me: I'm trying ... "

Him : you said that few weeks back were you not planning on telling her on her birthday "

Me: she was so happy and excited of her surprise birthday that I did for her she loved everything I was not going come and say to her ooh happy birthday my love and by the way we pregnant "

Him : she going to kill you when she finds out "

Me : I know and worse part she is getting this morning sickness and pukes a lot I had to change my shower get because is ' smells funny ' to her now "

He was laughing his lungs out while I was panicking it so hard keeping this from her not that I don't want to tell her but what will she feel about it .. Pregnancy is a profound event As she carries a child in her womb her body drastically changes she had breast now and getting a bit wider on hips fuck she is so sexy she is now 6 weeks pregnant yes FAM I keep a calendar that how I'm secretly involved in this pregnancy she is slowly gain wait she at the stage where she is experiencing morning sickness a bit of mood

swings and weird cravings Certain smells might make her a wretch. It is a beautiful time for me and I'm enjoying everyday of it

But it is also a time that comes with a lot of self-consciousness and frustration. There is a lot of things I have not figured out and its scare me to a core i know

It's essential for soon-to-be fathers to provide support. But what kind of support is best? What's the right thing to say? Even the most well-meaning of husbands struggle Banzi was no help when I asked him he said

"just take it one day at time and don't call her fat "

Bongani said " fuck your boys can swim you had sex with her once and she is pregnant " \_you see the friends I keep are useless sometimes my uncle left few hours back

" if she finds out on her own she will kill you tell her tonight !" Driving back home I got her flowers I'm trying to come my nerves but fuck I'm Nevers I found Zee watching cartoons

Me :princess"

She jumped up and hugged me I plug a rose on her hair

" this is for you princess "

Her : thank you my king your so kind "

I kissed her cheek " where is your Queen ?"

Her : in her room she is not feeling well daddy "

Me : let me go check up on her OK "

She nodded when I got in our bedroom I heard sound of her vomiting in the bathroom

Me : Hle-hle "

Her: go away ! "

I started rubbing my hands together Im fucked like really fucked

.

.

Sbahle \*\*\*

I hate this place its cold it rains all the time and people around here speak funny English I love my house though it wow big and so elegant Mvelo said that I was not going to leave with him in the bachelor pad so he bought a new house and I love it . Mvelo went back to work when we arrived in the UK

And fuck does he work to much he spend 10hrs in the office and another 3hrs in his study when he gets back Mvelo said that I was not going to leave with him in the bachelor pad so he bought a new

house and I love it . Mvelo went back to work when we arrived in the UK

And fuck does he work to much he spend 10hrs in the office and another 3hrs in his study when he gets back I miss him so much and I wish we could try to be intimate but yoo there is a little that going on when it time to go to bed.

Since I refused to speak to him about our first night this crazy man signed me up to see a shrink bloody hell I still think its a waist of money but at least I have a person that I could off loud to but I must did not agree to it laying down I told him that I will see his Dr friend if he start using Mama water to connect with his ancestors he was not happy but looks fair that I'm doing what he wants and his doing what I want so we went on with it .

The first two weeks when we got here he was busy with fasting and connecting with his ancestors we slept in different room he has a secrete room in the house where he does his thing and when that was over he was just too busy with work and work and more work ... Its so frustrating that I leave in the same house with this man but hardly spend time with him

On a flip side that gave me time to connect with

Zee and God I love that baby she sweet and adorable and she keeps me so busy that I even forget that my bedroom is cold Zee is the best stepdaughter any women could ask for she looked too much like her father now and talks way too much her IQ level is on steroids her 6th birthday is coming up and I'm organizing a birthday party yap that will just keep my mind of things.

Speaking about birthday parties mine was few weeks back and my man went all out candle lit dinner he was kissing and touching me ooh it was lit till I pass out out on the rug in our bedroom We did not even reach second base or make love that I was so looking forward to fuck I hate this fatigue. I really don't know what happening to me I'm always sick and tired i sleep a lot and eat too much and I get sick after its just draining as hell " its change of environment " Mvelo said but it has been going on for a while now that I'm even thinking of seeing a Dr " you sure you OK " he asked me as i lifted my head from the toilet that all I have been doing this day I could not stomach any thing and everything Smell so funny Him ; drink this " he gave me a glass of water

Me : thank you " I rinsed my mouth and looked at my self in the mirror "

Him : you don't look to good "

Me : I went to the chemist this morning and ask for pills that can help me with stomach bug "

His eyes widen and he took off his coat and rolled up his shirt

Him : where are the pills ? When did you take them ? ... How many did you take ? Dam it !! " i looked at him and frowned

I looked at him and set down on the toilet seat " what wrong baby " I asked him with low voice I was drained now

Him : where are the pills "

Me : I took them this morning and this afternoon and I just started feeling dizzy and started bleeding and now I'm vomiting like crazy ... What happening to me Mvelo "

Him : what did you say ! Yooo bleeding ???...non.... No ... No !!!! ... Sbahle we need to go to the hospital right now "

Me : in tired Mvelo I just need yo lay down "

I slowly moved to the bed

Him : Sbahle we need to go to the Dr ... You are pregnant !!!! Ooh my God my baby what have I

done "

He lifted me up " put me down ! ... Utheni !! "

Him : I sorry I should have told you .. But there is no time for that now ! Im scare what does pills might have done to you "

I held my chest " I'm what... How did you know ... When did you find out "

I listen to him telling me his story he was fast and going on and on telling me we need to see a Dr I was mad very mad for 6 weeks he has known about this but has not told me

Me : every time when I mention seeing Dr you refused while all along you knew !"

Him :I'm sorry baby but we need to go we running out if time think about our baby and kill me later !!!

I saw the flowers he bought for me I took them and started hitting him with them

Him : damn it Sbahle fuck "

Me : you lied to me you bloody lied to me ... "

He held my hands and pulled me to his chest

Him : you will get the chance to kill me I promise but for now can we check if our baby is OK ... "

I pushed him away from me made my way yo the vanity took an envelop there and threw it at him

Me : baby is fine its Healthy baby I went to see the Dr today there is even scans there "

Him : and this pills ... The chemist ?"

Me : Just giving you sip of your own medicine " I walked out banging the door i made my way to the kitchen to worm his food he walked in looking like a wet dog

Him : I'm sorry I was going to tell you ... Tonight " I did not answer him because I did not know if he is telling the truth or what I placed his food on the table and he pulled me to him lifted me up and placed me on the counter he got in between my thighs

Him : I'm going to be honest with you so don't judge me and hate me Pregnancy is such a beautiful journey that two people go on together. Yes it includes me my dear wife. But it's also going to get very stressful crazy whirlwind and sometimes rough in our lives you will experienced feelings and symptoms that I've never most probably will never feel I just want you too know that Not everything is going to about you but I'll be with you every step of the way what I want or need during this time is for us to be in this together . It's also about us our marriage our love



and the little miracle growing inside of you that we created together! "

Me : I'm still angry and you " I said crying in his arms

Him : I know ... And I'm sorry "

Me ; I'm still going to kill you ..."

Him : I wouldn't have it any other way "

I chuckled as he pulled my face to his " I love you and yet again you made me the happiest man alive "

Me : shut up I'm only 19 Mvelo and I'm already pregnant ... I'm suppose to be starting school next year "

Him : you pregnant baby not sick you can still do school " I hit his shoulder

" don't be cocky Mnguni " he kissed me

Him : we got this babe you the strongest women I know and I know you can do this gracefully "

Me : I need your support your affection and for you to communicate with me every step of the way. WE are a team and WE are in this together. . . stop this habit of keeping thing from me trying to protect me "

Him ; I promise now can we kiss please " I laughed as our lip did the dance

## Chapter 82

Sbahle \*\*\*\*

Him: who knew that love will make me kiss the mouth that was taking our stomach content few minutes ago "

I laughed and placed my head on his chest

Me : it's your baby not me "

Him : is that so now ?"

Me : yep ... This baby was made by you and Ngonyama ... Its your responsibility not mine "

We bust out and laughed we come to far me and Mvelo never tough one day will joke about that night with out getting emotional .

He started eating his food and somehow it started smelling real bad so i jumped off the counter

Me: let me take Zee to bed you praying with her tonight "

Him : sure ... I'll be there in a sec is there left over for this food " I looked at his plate it was cleaned out haybo so fast I rolled my eyes Mvelo eat two plates of food every night and debating about it has not gotten me anywhere so I just let him be

Me : your second plate is in the fridge worm it up "

Him : tank you Mkami ... "

Me : wash the plates when you don't "

Him : God so many orders "

Me : I heard that ... " I found Zee slowly dozing off on the couch

Me : hay baby ... Time for bed "

Her : piggy back ride "

Ooh brother I should have told Mvelo to get her

Me : sure jump up "

The stairs felt like I was walking on sand Zee is heavy now so verry heavy we finely reached her bedroom and I just wanted to die

Me : go brush you teeth baby "

Her : but hle -hle I did "

I shook my head and told her I smell chips in her mouth

Her : ooh men ... " I laughed as she dragged her self to the bathroom she came back and snuggle next to her

Me : Im going to read you bed time story and daddy will come prey with you OK "she smiled and nodded she placed her head on my chest and I rubbed her hair

Her : my Queen "

Me ; yes my princess "

Her : will mom come to my birthday party "

Me : I will ask dad to call her "

Her: why doesn't she call me ?"

Me : I don't know princess maybe she busy but why don't will call her tomorrow morning "

Her : she never pics up ... "

She sounded down I don't get what Sli problem is she fought with Mvelo why is she avoiding her own daughter now ... I really do not get absent mother's period ke ! you carry a child for nine months and when shit hit the fan between you and the baby daddy you resent the child or abandoned her .

and sli calls herself God fearing women nxa Sli actions are slowly killing Zee i can see that now and I'll be damn if I allow that to happen I know for a fact that a Children who have an absent mother develop certain typical behaviors towards their mothers protesting desperation and distancing. Her being gone doesn't make them feel more affection; it makes their emotions go wild.

In the end their only choice is to block their

feelings of love. Some kids even end up with a dull hate towards their mothers because of this vicious cycle of loving and losing over and over again. Sli has done this far too long and its end now

"Looks like she is asleep " Mvelo said walking in I slowly placed her head on her bed and tucked her in

Mvelo hugged me from behind while we look at Zee

Him : you natural at this "

He kissed my neck

Him : just imagine when we have dozen more running in here "

I looked up at him " a dozen ! "

He had that smug on his face that annoyed me

Him: am I asking too much"

Me : way to much "

I untangle my self from his arms and he followed me

Him: OK ... Half a dozen "

Me : take a second wife I ain't popping a dozen kids out of my punana"

Him : yahlanya ! "

I already took a bath and was only on my sleep

wear I decided to brush my teeth

Me : well one kid it is that "

Him : will see about that .." I was looking at him on the mirror while he was taking his cloths off Mvelo got a torso to die for and looking at him always turns me on

Him : like what you see ?" he kissed my neck and he made me feel his hard Monster cock on my ass

Him : let me take a shower this conversation is not over " he kissed my cheek and jumped into a shower I let out a huge sigh that I did not realise I was holding I touched my panty under my short silky night dress fuck I'm wet by look I took it off and threw it on the laundry busker wet my towel and wiped my self I made my way to the bedroom i applied hand lotions on my hands brushed my hair back and took a doek and put it on

I took my phone I was about to check how's mom doing but Mvelo got in bed and kissed my neck pulling me to him

Me : when last did you speak to Sli ? " he stopped kissing me and looked at me

Him :there is nothing to talk about with that

women "

Me : Mvelo what about Zithelo ?"

Him : come on Sbahle ... We doing this right now  
?! we just found out that we pregnant instead of  
celebrating this name of that women is bounced  
around in my bedroom hayi Mani you killing my  
hype " I looked at him

Him : woza LA "

Me : Mvelo ... " he did not allow me to finish his  
lips were on me

Him : I missed you "

Me : I miss you too "

He kissed me hungrily and I found my self  
dropping my phone in the process he was kissing  
me so passionately that I found my body  
betraying again I pressed my legs together when I  
felt his wet warm kiss on my neck his hands  
traveled to my breast the silk material made him  
nourish and his touch felt so good as I joined on his  
mouth he stopped and looked at me We'd look  
into each other's eyes with hunger and love than  
it hit me his on top of me I could feel his big thing  
on my legs his moving closer his elbow resting on  
my pillow The warm feeling rush all over my body  
My body tightened. I wasn't ready. I was lost in

thought unpleasant thought and my body still felt those emotions. I smiled not wanting to reject him not wanting to make him feel bad not wanting this reality and wishing I could just flip gears suddenly like all those women in every show we've ever seen.

I sighed lightly as he nestled his mouth into my neck ... his breath hot breath hit my ear

Him : hle - hle may I make love to you please ?

' his lips soft. I could feel him press hard against me as he pulled me close and tight to him

I love this man but now wasn't right for me or was it I wouldn't know ... I can't deny him was

his Shame and fear rose in me like a brushfire. I

wanted to run be someone else so I pushed it all away pretended it wasn't there and lifted his

head to look at me

Me : don't hurt Hlelo "

He smiled in my mouth " I promised ... "

His hand slid under my night dress ooh god I'm

not even wearing any underwear he cupped my

left breast. I wanted him but the want was distant — like an echo — because now I was distant.

That's the thing about denying your reality about forcing yourself to be and think and feel in ways



that aren't fully grounded in your truth. You can't choose which feelings to wall off; They all float off into the distance like an infinitely long string of balloons still tied to your throat.

Somewhere in my head I knew this but the pain of dealing with that and dealing with his disappointment at the same time felt far too heavy. ... *You're fine... Just go with the flow...* I told myself.

Me : baby make me forget please ... "

Me : baby make me forget please ... "

he hands trace my body so gently so softly I turned and pressed my lips to his Already my night dress was stripped of he was really getting me wormed up by kissing my whole body I will ark my back when he kiss the most sensitive part like my breast or sucking on my clit already my mind was filled with pressure and anticipating on feeling him inside me he spend hours down there making come with his hands and mouth and tongue I was screaming pulling on the sheets and calling out his name he finally came to contact with my face and I tasted my juices on him his leg's slowly parted my legs apart I felt his monster nocking on my entrance

Him : are you sure about this ? " I could not talk I was sex funk'd up that I just nodded at First i feel pressure i flinched

Him : baby relax ... Its me ... Its me babe "" he said that looking me dip in the eyes while he slowly enters me my walls stretch I could feel slight pain as they accommodated him it then felt warmer and warmer the more his penis went inside It might sound obvious but it's like being filled up.

Him : did it hurt ? " he said softly after he was moaning

All along he looked at me I shook my head " no "

Him : I'm going to move now stop me when you feel pain .."

I nodded his stroke were not rushed there were slow I would say there's definitely a sense of euphoria once his penis started to move it felt soooooo good. There's an initial rush through my body. Definitely not as intense as an orgasm but still gets my blood pumping and my heart racing sending shivers through my body. It's tingly and good sensitive around the outer vagina but inside he was entering places I had no idea were there

Me : mmmmm Mvelo ooh my God "

Him : you good " he said with no rush in the

would It's like I finally discovering the correct key for the door- unlocking the doorway to pleasure " ooh my Good this feels so good "

He kissed me with hunger pulling my body to his making us one his dip inside me but I felt no pain but I felt like screaming his name and so I did he was kissing and biting on my neck on my jaw line his hands Squeezed my breast this is one of my favourite feelings in the entire world. I was moaning he was moaning I was holding his back and running my nails grabbing his flesh the sensation of his monster entering me coupled with his weight on top of me is just felt so amazing

Him : I'm going to go faster baby "

I was a mess he has gave me multiple orgasm and I don't know how much I could take as promised his going fast not too fast to hurt me but to make me scream in pleasure 'It feels like a really good stretch. Like when your muscles are tense and you just reach out and feel things open up and release tension. It's weird to describe I know because without sex my vagina definitely doesn't feel *empty* but during sex fullness is the main sensation. That I don't want to come down from

his calling my name his growling very loud him going in and out back and fourth Its like his penis sliding in was always meant to be there and I don't want him to stop.

" fuck ... Fuck I love you ... Yes Sbahle " his cursing and screaming his hitting my G spot I'm loosing my mind I'm building up

Him : wait for me baby please "

Me : I can't ... "

Him : I'm close I'm ...close " I felt him tense up while my body went on frenzy too i screamed as he moaned louder and he collapse on too of me There's nothing more magical than being so super connected to your partner that you happen to [orgasm at the same time](#) he stayed on that position for a while and finally gently pulled out kissed my lip he rested next me while we both catch our breath

Him : wow "

Me : what just happened "

Him : I made love to you ... " I looked at him and screamed waving my legs on the air

Him : Sbahle Mani !"

Me : ooh my God it felt so good mvelo ... It was an out of this world experience

... "

He shut me up with his lips on mine

Him : you haven't seen nothing this was just a  
starter main cause is coming " he kissed my lips

.